

RED SURPRISE

**Russian-Chinese
Military Blackmail:**

**ACCEPT
COMMUNISM
OR FACE WW III**

Gottfrid Johansson's

САМИЗДАТ

Gottfrid Johansson's

САМИЗДАТ

(Spread far and wide!)

Red Surprise

*Russian-Chinese Military Blackmail:
Accept Communism or Face World War III*

i.e. "Red or Dead"

*An Extensive Compilation on the Current Finalisation
towards the Sino-Soviet Long-Range Strategy's Objective
of World Communist Victory*

(So help us God!)

A non-profit publication by
Gottfrid Johansson

© 2011/12 – Latest improved edition of May 3, 2012

Quotes, excerpts, and photographic material presented on a fair-use basis

www.thecontemplativeobserver.wordpress.com

www.youtube.com/user/Contemplatix

The settings of this document are meant for double-sided printing
and binding, ideally with plastic binding-combs (binding margin: 6 mm)

CONTENTS

Preface	11
Mikhail Gorbachev's Sinistre Dec. 10, 2011 Speech at Munich, Germany; translated audio transcript of the second half of the speech	13
Mikhail Gorbachev's same speech in full, according to a massively streamlined 'official' print-version; second half compared to what was actually said	23
Dmitri Medvedev's TV-address of Nov. 23, 2011	30
Further Soviet-Chinese Intimidations and War Preparations	34
Quotes & Excerpts	
I. Anatoliy Golitsyn: New Lies for Old: The Communist Strategy of Deception and Disinformation; Dodd, Mead & Co., New York 1984 (excerpts)	47
II. Anatoliy Golitsyn: The Perestroika Deception: The World's Slide Towards the Second October Revolution; Edward Harle Ltd., London, New York 1995 (excerpts)	54
III. Yuri Bezmenov (interview, 1984; transcript by this author; excerpts)	71
IV. "Rendezvous with Death: Why John F. Kennedy Had to Die"; German high-profile film documentary of 2006 investigating the widely ignored 'Cuban connection': In lieu of a summary.	78
V. Father Hans Milch: The Imminent Fall of Europe – The Church: Sole Authority for Possible Rescue (sermon, 1979; transcript & translation from German audio by this author; excerpt)	86
VI. Father Hans Milch: Key Sentences of the So-Called Council: The Supreme Shepherd's Antichristian Machinations (speech, 1987; transcript & translation from German audio by this author; excerpt)	87
VII. Father Malachi Martin: Global Conflict of Life & Anti-Life Forces (speech, 1991; complete transcript from audio by this author)	88
VIII. Mikhail Gorbachev: Perestroika: New Thinking for Our Country and the World (German edition, translated into English: " <u>Perestroika: The Second</u>	

<u>Russian Revolution: New Thinking for Europe and the World”!!!); 1987/88</u>	111
IX. Insightful Quotes by Prominent Marxist-Leninists	114
X. November 9, 2009: 20 th Anniversary of The Fall of The Berlin Wall: A Celebration for the Communists	137
XI. Sergey Petrovich Melgounov: The Red Terror In Russia [orig. 1924]; Edward Harle Ltd., London, New York 2008	152
XII. Eduard V. Limonov: The Other Russia: Outlines for the Future; 2003	154
XIII. (Soviet-)Latvian conductor Mariss Jansons' peculiar symbolic hints at his two New Year's Concerts with the Vienna Philharmonic Orchestra in 2006 and 2012, respectively	163
XIV. Abbé Augustin Barruel: Preliminary Discourse to “Memoirs Illustrating the History of Jacobinism”, 1797	172
XV. Pope Pius VI’s Encyclical “Quare Lacrymae”, On the Death of King Louis XVI of France; June 17 th , 1793	178
XVI. Pope Leo XIII’s Encyclicals “Quod Apostolici Muneris”, on Socialism, and “Humanum Genus”, on Freemasonry (1878; 1884)	186
XVII. Pope Pius XI’s Encyclical “Divini Redemptoris”, on Atheistic Communism (1937)	206
XVIII. Father Malachi Martin speaking on Fátima, Vatican II, and World Communism; interview of early 1990 (conversation almost in full)	227
XIX. Barack Obama: The -unchanged- Soviet Union’s Chosen One – Computer expert Tom Fife remembers a 1992 dinner party in Moscow where was revealed that the Soviets were grooming a future black Communist U.S. President by name of “Barack”	242
XX. The European Union: According to Mikhail Gorbachev, “The New European Soviet”	261
The Ever Same Puzzling Paradox: Is Communism the Chief Evil, or Is It Monopoly Capitalism? A Resumé	269
Reference Literature	273
Interviews & Talks online	275
About the Author	277



“What we wish, that we readily believe.”

Demosthenes

“The *image* of the enemy that is being eroded
has been... absolutely vital for the foreign and military policy
of the United States and its allies.
The destruction of this stereotype... is Gorbachev’s weapon...”

Georgi Arbatov, 1988

“The point is that the Communist goal is fixed and changeless –

it never varies one iota from their objective of world domination,
but if we judge them only by the direction in which they **seem** to be going,
we shall be deceived.”

Yelena Bonner

“Capitalism’s short-term view can never envisage the lengths
across which we can plan.”

Lavrentii Beria, early 1950s

“Those who hope that we shall move away from the socialist path
will be greatly disappointed.”

Mikhail Gorbachev, 1987

PREFACE

Those not that attentively following global developments, may remember Mikhail Gorbachev as the polished, charismatic Soviet leader of 1985 to 1991, who was then celebrated as the man “who brought down communism”. Some even believe he retired after what was perceived in the West as “the dissolution of the Soviet Union” and erroneously hailed as “the West’s winning of the Cold War”.

In reality, however, all of this was the swindle of the millennium, a long-prepared-for deception of gargantuan proportions thoroughly implemented with military precision as well as that typical Leninist boldness that doesn’t give the adversary time for reflection and proper analysis; with Gorbachev acting basically as the spearhead of this overall ‘diplomatic’ offensive; and with his 1992-founded Gorbachev Foundation (beside a whole set of other platforms and organisations) serving, according to a number of high-profile analysts, as nothing less than the disguised International Department of the ‘once’ CPSU, and thus in fact as the Comintern (!).

The central goal was to take away from the Western mind any *image* of the enemy, any *sense* of danger from Soviet communism whatsoever, and replace it with the illusory wishful thinking of a genuinely reformed, liberalised, and democratised “Russia”. Without giving so much of a second thought to the suspiciously smooth “changes”, the West not only embarked on a politically, economically and militarily suicidal road, but moreover entrapped itself in the position of, first, liars and, over the time as one can assume, of actual co-liars. The result today, a quarter of a century after the proclamation of ‘perestroika’, couldn’t be more disastrous: The unchanged and perfectly united, Sino-Soviet-led pan-communist bloc has indeed not only reached overwhelming military superiority, but has even gained enough *economic* strength so to effectively blackmail the once Free World into accepting, nolens volens, a communist world federation, far from a corporate-monetaryistic ‘New World Order’, but rather a once-more infinitely cruel and merciless Marxist-Leninist ‘New World Social(ist) Order’, in other words: the completion of the Communist World Revolution, that will undoubtedly turn *this time the entire planet* – with or without war – into an ocean of blood and subsequently establish an ‘everlasting’ peace of the grave ...

As the communist bloc is now gradually dropping the friendly mask by which it had mesmerised the West for so long, interestingly also Mikhail Gorbachev himself – far from having merely aged like anyone else, it appears – has somewhat lost all of his former ‘handsomeness’ (not his charisma and energy, though), as if having dropped *his mask* as well, and now looks more like a dangerous beast right from hell than a human being properly so called (the late Pastor Richard Wurmbrand, author of ‘Marx and Satan’, who had thoroughly studied the pitch-black roots of the communist movement, defined communism indeed and very seriously as ‘collective demonic possession’!).

This compilation is about that currently ongoing collective dropping of its mask on the part of world communism and about the West’s slow awakening to a reality *long before warned of* by top Soviet defector Anatoliy Golitsyn but never imagined possible: the communists, having raised (dialectical) deceit to the level of a literal science, have outwitted the West and are now about to most Satanically triumph and laugh their heads off, along with streams of Vodka probably, over the success of their deadly nihilist project of world revolution – in which the so-far non-communist world *will be torn into pieces* ...

MIKHAIL GORBACHEV'S SINISTRE DEC. 10, 2011 ACCEPTANCE SPEECH AT MUNICH, GERMANY, WHERE HE HAD RECEIVED AN HONORARY AWARD

May 9th Victory Day Military Parade on Red Square, gradually revived since 2005. Take note of the Red Flags and the Hammer & Sickle within the communist Red Star on the facade of the State Historical Museum! There has been no discontinuity after 1991 at all: the Soviet Union is perfectly intact and, thanks to Western support, stronger than ever! The "Russian" propaganda outlet RT (Russia Today) uses to broadcast these annual intimidation orgies, deliberately sending mixed signals: the pictures speak the clear language of preparation for war; yet, the commentary holds that "Russia is no threat to anyone" ...

On Saturday, December 10, 2011, "former" General Secretary of the "once" CPSU, unchanged Marxist-Leninist Comrade Mikhail Sergeyevich Gorbachyov – who in reality had been since the fake "collapse of communism" in 1989/91 (which was the hoax of the millennium) both the strong man in the Kremlin and the untiring spearhead & director of the world revolution that now is about to come to its brutal fruition – visited the Bavarian capital Munich, Germany, to receive an honorary award "for his life's work", interestingly from the staunchly conservative, CSU-connected Hanns Seidel Foundation: their Franz-Josef-Strauß Award.

However, what Gorbachev had to say in his acceptance speech had little to do with ceremonial gestures of thanks for having been given this prestigious award. Rather, he chose, especially in the second half of the speech, to talk about today's world situation, and he did it, of course, not as an "outside observer" or "elder statesman", but, very visibly, as the man who really is in charge!

His essential message: "Cooperate – or face World War III!"

Exactly such outcome – where the Sino-Soviet-led pan-communist bloc, by means of its longterm and highly complex deception-, disinformation-, and subversion-strategy developed under Khrushchev and Mao Zedong more than 50

years ago, would have turned around the military, political, and even economic balance of power, suddenly would drop its “democratic” mask and dictate its same old objective of a communist world federation upon a politically and militarily tremendously weakened as well as societally catastrophically demoralised, unprepared and asleep Western world –, exactly such grave outcome had been desperately warned of, ever since his defection in 1961, by once-KGB-officer Anatoliy Golitsyn (born 1926), who according to the editor & publisher of his second book (*The Perestroika Deception*, 1995), the late British political analyst Christopher Story (1938-2010), was, quote: “the most important defector ever to have reached the West”, being “in a separate category from everybody” and putting “all other Soviet analysts – not to mention whole intelligence communities – to shame”.

Golitsyn warned already in the 1960s: Unless the West understood in time that it would have to deal with a highly complex and extremely long-term strategy of the pan-communist bloc so to achieve final communist victory – by all means, the Free World would one day end up trapped, as Golitsyn termed it, in an irreversible state of “cooperation-blackmail”, where the communists would be able to say: Surrender and accept communist rule, or face World War III! However, due to systemic arrogance and/or communist infiltration, the Western services hardly looked at what Golitsyn had to say. As a truly apocalyptic consequence, we have now reached indeed at precisely that stage: red or dead (unless there's a third alternative).

And, true, the stage is meanwhile perfectly set: NATO has indeed been turned into a “paper tiger”, as Mao Zedong had predicted, with Western Europe in the process of being swallowed by the communist East, Britain & Dominions neutralised, the United States more and more isolated, post-Fukushima Japan doomed (see: www.fukushima-diary.com and www.enenews.com), most of Latin America deep-red, India too in the socialist camp, and the Middle East and Africa either still in communist grip or in turmoil and unrest like never before. Not to speak of the whole Western economies being on the brink of complete collapse! What's more, the U.S. as well as Germany and the European Commission are now headed by well-concealed communists.

All “prophecies” of a global merger under the guiding principle of free trade dictated by international banks and corporations now turn out to have been as short-sighted as these elites’ optimism that the communist world would give in to their intended new system of one global market (unless they're all hand in glove, as e.g. Sir Anthony Sutton says in his books). Either way, the communists never shed their Marxist-Leninist ideology. They've merely put on, from 1989/91, a liberalised and democratic mask, exploiting the new openings for advancing their economies and vastly improving and expanding their military. Communism has simply been in the business of defeating capitalism by capitalist means. The result we can see today: they've achieved overall and irreversible superiority and are now going to dictate their communist system upon the whole world, whether by ‘peaceful consent’ or by unleashing WW III.

This utterly sinistre speech by Gorbachev, that is given here below, was broadcasted only once on Bavarian television, late at night instead of live during the day, and not printed or at least discussed or summed up anywhere in the German (or international) media. You will soon see why ...

The reason why we have at least the second half of the speech verbatim, albeit via the German simultaneous interpretation, is owed to a communist Youtube

Channel named “doyourhomework2011” (linked to a German communist website deceptively entitled: “Bürgerrechtsbewegung Solidarität”, i.e. “Civil Rights Movement Solidarity”: <http://www.bueso.de>). It has the direct TV-recording of the second part (albeit, for some strange reason, flipped left to right and with crazy maximum contrast), starting from about 45% into the speech. We know it’s 45% into the speech because the complete speech was published months later in a widely refurbished and streamlined print version on the official website of the Hanns Seidel Foundation (the weblink is: http://www.hss.de/fileadmin/media/downloads/Berichte/111210_RM_Gorbatschow.pdf). It seems, though, the communist camp would have *loved* to have the brutal original spread far and wide!!!

Read below the thorough English translation by this author, first of the audio transcript of the very professional Russian-German simultaneous interpretation of the second half of Gorbachev’s speech, and accompanied by comments or explanations in small type size, orange colour and within square brackets by this author; do read those as well, as they give a whole lot of additional background information. Capital letters according to Gorbachev’s emphases; boldprint added by this author. After that, there is the full text of the considerably falsified print version, complete with a comparison with what was actually said according to the simultaneous translation of the second half of the speech. That print version was very obviously done not by Germans but presumably by Gorbachev’s staff and shows very poor and technocratic “KGB-German” rather than an improvement of Gorbachev’s brutish speaking style.

Saturday, Dec. 10, 2011, Imperial Hall of the “Munich Residenz” (suitably, just hours ahead of a total lunar eclipse, i.e. a “blood moon”, visible over Eurasia)



Read this very thoroughly and mind the typical upside-down Leninist boldness, thuggishness, and duplicity, as well as this seemingly constant stream of energy, this absolutely sinistre attack in one piece, which is why setting paragraphs turns out as almost impossible; plus, mind also the miserable as well as dangerous role of Germany in all of this! They too - just as if the downfall of the Nazi Party by the end of WW II had never happened - have an agenda, partly in line with the Soviets, but finally opposed to the larger all-communist design. See: Christopher Story's book, *The European Union Collective: Enemy of its Member States: A Study In Russian and German Strategy to Complete Lenin's World Revolution*; Edward Harle Ltd., London, New York 2002.

GORBACHEV SPEAKS (second half of the speech: verbatim)

[...] And it is good that there are no more walls; but, dividing lines are again emerging. And if one should be worried about something, and what today's politicians should think about, in Central Europe, also in Eastern Europe etc., what they should think about is: under no circumstances to allow a war, under no circumstances to allow a new confrontation. I know why the politicians in Russia react so sharply to the missile defence in Europe, to its intended stationing.

But now I'm also slowly asking myself: what's this all about? For, what we can see is that the missile defence is meant as a defence against Russia. Everything else is just talk, or a wall of fog to cover the truth. Yes, and as a result, the Russian government said: We're going to station means of defence, here and there, **and we are ready to use weapons** that guarantee our security. **What does this mean? WORLD WAR III!**

And if Russia and the USA should again be at loggerheads, this IS World War III! This won't be restricted to a local war! And we need to again clearly remember the lesson, you know: the Cold War was over; our partners were triumphing, **and they wouldn't see the forest for the trees any more [!!!!]**, in the West, and especially in the USA. They wanted to build a new empire, with a super-super-super-power [**they have won, and now they LAUGH at the West**] – to which I say: **the Germans are a serious and reflecting nation**, and they know well what is being said in the USA; and when they don't react to it and sometimes nod, it means all this can't be taken for serious: It's the attempt to threaten Russia **a bit; and there is still in Europe a bit of fear left towards Russia**. Yet, we only wish to build and develop: No one has led more wars in the 20th century than us. So much we had to suffer, and, just as a sidenote: We had *no* plans after WW II to start military action against the USA. I know it. I MUST know it.

And, suddenly, all this starts all over again. This reminds me of those 200 or 300 US bases, spread all over the world, from the Cold War era; **and have they been of any use to anybody?** I have the impression that the **evildoer** of the system in which the West lives, and so with the consent of Washington, **this radical market philosophy, all this hasn't turned out positively.**



London, G-20 protests, April 2, 2009: Take note of the hardcore-communist maxims of the alleged anti-globalists: "Stop WW III over Iraq" – "Democracy is an illusion" – "Capitalism isn't working" – "No borders anywhere" - "One Currency, One Country" (Why not: "Ein Volk , Ein Reich, Ein Führer"??? – Lenin called these all-too-willing 'idealists' solely: "useful idiots"!!! But it is also quite possible that among these demonstrators were direct communist agents!!!) – Note the scythe to the right: a clear and sinistre threat!!!

What have we got? Bubbles! One bubble after the other, and they all burst. And, one should understand at last that the solution can't be an arms race, **the militarisation of the world and the economy**, because we'd keep on throwing money out the window. [Since when have the communists bothered about the money of their hated "class enemy"? Except for finding ways how to extract it?] And former Finance Minister Waigel [Theo Waigel is sitting in the first row] spoke of 10 billion DM or Dollar, of course it was Mark, Deutschmark, that he didn't give Gorbachev at that time. How much money are we simply throwing out the window! [Rather odd that he speaks of himself in the third person!]

Eisenhower is again quoted these days, General and President Eisenhower. Yesterday I had again the idea to watch that movie: "FFF" [sic: FFF = 666!]. No. "JFK". On the assassination of John Fitzgerald Kennedy. I like such films, and one should watch them from time to time **just so to remain awake; if possible: wide-awake!** [sounds like indeed the Soviets/Cubans killed JFK!!! – See for this section IV of the "Quotes and Excerpts" part of this compilation] And, Eisenhower, to come back to that, said that the military-industrial complex is a dangerous thing; **and one should never lose control over it!** [is he alluding to Soviet infiltration of U.S. structures???] He said that in a way as had never been said before. And I want to say: the man was right! [Applause. Yet, we do not know how many Russians sat in the auditorium; there must have been quite a number of them.] The military-industrial complex in our grand countries, that's those who set the tone, who exert pressure on politics. I know how our military-industrial complex is doing this, and it is still very critical of Gorbachev because of Perestroika [he is permanently taking us for a ride!] and the freeing of the country from these military expenditures [well, they did receive huge sums from the West!].

But, **these people** [and now Gorbachev is again speaking of the United States] have been accustomed to always ‘play the first fiddle’, **and I think that if an economy cannot provide for its people, it is an ill economy; AND SUCH AN ECONOMY MUST BE CURED, AND SO BY RADICAL MEANS!** [Can a central planning bureaucrat, who has no understanding of free market economics other than through his upside-down Marxist ideology and hearsay, get any bolder than that? This is a key passage in the speech as it clearly shows they have even, combined with the Chinese, achieved economic superiority and are now laughing at us. The ‘radical means’ is of course brutal revolutionary takeover and introduction of central planning communism, complete with abolition of private property as well as of the family unit, no question.] **This was my idea, this was my approach.** [Read Gorbachev’s 1987 propaganda book “*Perestroika*”, that has, by the way, in its German edition the subtitle, translated into English: ‘*The Second Russian Revolution. New Thinking for Europe and the World!!!*’] And I’m still repeating it today. But, no, what are they telling the people? They are telling them things that make them afraid. Well, and now they’re arming up [if that indeed is the case, given Comrade Obama’s promise to disarm even further].

But when one looks at the situation thoroughly, one can easily see that our government is acting correctly and appropriately, because – I just say: the devil [his boss] take it – **there is no system for executing global decisions in a world that is already global** [their constant theme anyway, across the board from East to West]. We simply still lack such mechanisms, and I have heard with great interest that [Gorbachev now starts addressing the Germans], as has been said by your Prime Minister [Bavaria’s Prime Minister, Horst Seehofer, CSU], “we are ready to help, but not to throw money into a bottomless pit.” [alluding to the Euro crisis and Greece as the country with the greatest problems of the lot] [And now, coldly:] After all, IT WAS THE GERMANS who initiated the Euro, the European single currency, **and therefore Germany carries also great responsibility**, and Germany is big and strong, and thus carries an especially great responsibility, **from which it cannot just steal away**. [The Soviets are now leaving the Germans in their own mess, as the megalomaniac currency union, driven solely by ideology anyway, is about to fall apart; the Germans, in their unrootable tendency to want it all, have overdone it. And Moscow is awaiting its triumph in the face of the failure of the initially German-thought-out EU project, that was, however, hijacked in the mid 1980s by the political left and is now the vehicle for Eurasian and ultimately global ‘convergence’, on communist terms.]

But, this is also about the processes within the countries. Many have entered the EU in an expectation of having things for free [well, financed by the Western European countries ...], I think you know exactly what I mean. Yes, so quickly did they rush to the West and left the Warsaw Pact and COMECON, all up and away towards the West, and the West immediately welcomed them and quickly incorporated these new countries [Fairy tale! – And again bolder than bold, as the seeming dissolution of the Warsaw Pact and of COMECON was in reality a controlled deception operation orchestrated by Moscow. Thus, the Soviets have even freed themselves from the economic burden deriving from these countries and instead let the West Europeans pay for their recovery, which, to a great extent, has taken place – however, without loosening their grip on these “former” satellite states, from behind the scenes, via the unchanged communist nomenklatura: whether ‘nationalist’, ‘conservative’, ‘social democrat’, or ‘liberal democrat’: in reality, it’s nothing more than a bold spectacle known as “democratism”, and with every one of them playing his particular role; same as in the unchanged Soviet Union: Gennadi Syuganov: the “Stalinist”; Vladimir Shirinovskiy: the “nationalist madman”; Boris Nemzov, Vladimir Bukovsky, Garri Kasparov, Grigory Yavlinsky etc.: the “democratic opposition”; and so forth. – NO GENUINE OPPOSITION whatsoever in the unchanged Soviet Union, 94 long years after the October Revolution of 1917! – Also, by having their “former satellites” now in the EU and in NATO – by which fact they have entered, along the lines of ancient Chinese strategist Sun Tzu, who wrote the famous strategic treatise “The Art of War”, as well as of Ulysses’ Troyan Horse, the enemy’s camp -, they can use this for hostile Anti-Western propaganda: poor betrayed Russia versus evil expansionist West; and this propaganda is already in full swing; check out the English Pravda online, or Novosti, or International Affairs, and you’ll see how much they’ve geared up, very clearly, a pre-World-War-III propaganda machine.], which all entered suit the **United Nations** [well, as for the “former” Soviet Republics, three of which are now in the EU and the other twelve are constituting the same old Soviet Union under the new label of “Commonwealth of Independent States”, one must recognise that the world is now faced not by 1 Soviet Union, but by 15 “Soviet Unions”, who all hold individual seats in the various international organisations, such as the UN, the World Bank, and so forth. Likewise, former Czechoslovakia was doubled, and former socialist Yugoslavia, that had been officially outside the bloc but in fact had always been part of it, split into five!]; and you yourselves [the Germans] have greatly furthered this development; thus: Look who is talking! [This

shows the internal war going on among the rivals Germany and the unchanged Soviet Union.] [And now again extremely cynical:] And, shouldn't one be grateful to the Greeks for having established the fundaments of our civilisation? [Laughter and applause. – Germany is now trapped in its self-inflicted straightjacket of the Euro, but cannot let go of it, because "this would send the wrong signal". Thus, the EU member states are now on a gravy train of "Together we stand. *Together* we fall!". – As for the 'fundaments of our civilisation': Never mind that this European civilisation, until the Renaissance and, later, the so-called Age of Enlightenment, was based not so much on the legacy of ancient Greece but, of course, first and foremost: on Christendom! On the other hand, Gorbachev frequently plays with the false impression he might be a concealed Christian, but by attending interfaith gatherings at Assisi or elsewhere he again is only furthering the Masonic-communist agenda, massively supported by the false post-Conciliar Catholic Church, of watering down the individual religions and moulding them into one futurist hybrid, as is so comprehensively shown by Mr. Lee Penn in his reference work, *False Dawn: The United Religions Initiative, Globalism, and the Quest for a One-World-Religion; Sophia Perennis, 2001.*]

But, well [talking still, it seems, to the Germans], **I think we know exactly what we need to think of each other** [what an expression of mutual distrust among these two allies and, at the same time, rivals!!!], and we must build a system for executing global decisions in a global world. **And for this, NEW systems, NEW models are needed!** [i.e. the o-so-successful central-planning-slave-labour "model" of Marxism-Leninism: All-encompassing 'Friendship' to the world!]. [And now again attacking the free market system:] Betting on super-profits, super-consumption, and the like, leads nowhere. That's of no use! [The following is highly duplicitous and certainly is directed against the United States, both in economic and military respect:] Now, we have a billionaire who owns a submarine. And now he wants to commission a second one. Is this going to give the man happiness? No! **One should find a small submarine, torpedo his first one so to prevent the second one from being built** [the exact same logic would apply to a surprise preliminary strike to knock out all infrastructure or maybe power grid needed for effective defence]; because no one needs this. Who needs this? [Of course, the Soviets would *love* to see a Western world that has completely abandoned its 'unnecessary' military capabilities.]

And I ask you, **my dear Germans [!!!]: stand you also by your responsibility!** [i.e. we won't bail you out ...] You have initiated the Euro-zone, and as soon as the control mechanisms become effective [i.e. as soon as all remaining national sovereignty of the individual member state is fully done away with, as is happening right now], this system will be precisely what Europe and the world need [i.e. a super-imposed, unaccountable communist big-brother world authority!] [Applause]

I think we should all really think about, together, how we can prevent a violent solution of the problems at hand, because when someone chooses force, this is the most dangerous thing that there is; and I repeat: **we're again in an arms race!** [This is the "cooperation-blackmail" Golitsyn had warned of: "let's peacefully come together, on our communist terms – or else ..." – as for the arms race: it was the Soviets, as well as the Chinese, who armed up after 1991 like crazy!!!] **It's obviously about re-militarisation, not only militarisation of the economy** [sic!], but also of consciousness. [How true, Señor, how true!] **WE ARE ILL; WE ALL NEED TO BE TREATED AND CURED!** [In the political psychiatry of the upcoming global Soviet State: thank you very much!]

[Now follows a bold, in-your-face inversion of reality: he blames the very militaristic euphoria of the Russian armed forces on the American forces!] And generals again become heroes; generals who believe they had disarmed too much, one missile of many thousands [which is outright ridiculous], that's too much. And here I ask myself: How do the generals think? If one bets on solving problems militarily, then one commits a mistake [a warning!], and I'd like to say this again, I've heard this, we just had in France an annual meeting, the annual conference of the World Political Forum, that I brought into being several years ago, really a serious organisation; there it was said: to bet on force and strength isn't efficient. [True: Western defence capability, to them, is certainly "not efficient". - As Christopher Story said in a 1995 recorded conversation with American host William McIlhany: "We should leave them to stew in their own juice. We should withdraw. Now that we're so deeply involved, we've got to do it subtly, but we should withdraw from cooperation. We needn't announce it;

we should just do it. And stop aiding them; stop cooperating; withdraw whenever we see an opportunity; retrench. AND: *We should rearm like crazy!* Because the only thing these people understand is that we are determined not to let them prevail.” – Sadly, such change of course has never been tried.] The nations, and most politicians, condemn such an attitude [but welcome it when it is held, not defensively but *offensively*, by the Soviets??]. And at the end we came to the conclusion that wars do not solve problems [the Soviet monster posing as a peace angel isn’t new, of course: just think of the perfidious advances by false ‘dissident’ Andrey Sakharov in the sixties and seventies; and, of course, the whole international peace movement, going back all the way to the early 1900s, having been right from the outset a branch of communism as well as of so-called Theosophy!!!], and in earlier days thinkers said that war is necessary, that war brings about a movement ahead etc. [He indeed points to the Hegelian dialectics that are part and parcel of Marxist-Leninist thought!]. – No! War means a giant failure of politics. [Gorbachev clearly means a possible ‘failure’ of Western politics to submit to communism.]

For what should one take up arms, aeroplanes, **extremely destructive weapons** [another threat]? And why? Because the politicians got it wrong, because the politicians **still lag behind the fast changes in the world**. [By speaking of ‘politicians’, Gorbachev of course is speaking of the West: there is no such animal as a ‘politician’ in the communist system, they have only apparatchiks; politicians, whether sincere or corrupt, only exist in the democracies or constitutional monarchies of the West. And he already blames on them a World War that, by now, hasn’t even begun! – Also note the theme that (Western) politics lags behind the fast changes, which means: lags behind *their* world revolution. On the following page: a completely revolutionary Soviet postage stamp of 1988 saying: “Perestroika prodolzenye dela Oktyabrya”, i.e. Perestroika CONTINUES the October (Revolution), and: “Uskorenye – Demokratizatsiya – Glasnost”; i.e. Acceleration. Democratisation. Openness.” Perestroika was the launching of an overall revolutionary offensive. In Gorbachev’s book, Perestroika, one can read, bold and clear, that Perestroika was meant to give socialism a second breath, essentially by returning to “a Lenin who is alive”. And the West was caught completely off guard!]



And, so to speak, the Russians, the Germans, the French, [The Russians of course come first! And with the other two, they form the socialist European troika], the Americans, the Japanese, and now also the Chinese, **by the way** [we know *that*], these nations are responsible for providing for the world a peaceful, positive perspective. [And we know well what a ‘peaceful and positive perspective’ resp. “Worldwide Democratic Peace” means from the mouth of a Marxist-Leninist: it means brutal communist ‘normality’ and lights out forever! – ‘Positive’ holds also a covert meaning, as it implies ‘positivist’, thus: godless.]

And, also [now read carefully:], it’s definitely wrong to believe one could hide away, one could sit out anything. **No one can hide any more or sit anything out!** [A clear message also on an individual level: Don’t think we won’t get you, because we will! Every new passport in

almost every country of the world is now an “E-passport”, with a built-in RFID-chip.] Also small countries need contacts [i.e. ALL states of the world must be part of the overall surveillance grid!].

I believe I have now strayed quite far from the Franz-Josef-Strauß Award [laughter], but I’m convinced that the one is closely connected to the other; **connected to the legacy passed on to us by smart brains.** [Now, that’s really a conspiratorial allusion not only to Lenin, but, as he speaks in Germany, to Bismarck, Hitler, Adenauer, and all the way up to Helmut Kohl; thus, a reference also to the German strategic dimension.]

I’d like to once again express my heartfelt thanks. You know, I speak at home, here in Germany, in Europe, in the world; I advocate **[enforced]** cooperation and of course a deepening in the cooperation between Russia and Germany [France is the third cornerstone in this evil geopolitical triangle.]. Because, this means very, very much for the overall situation; it stabilises it, develops it towards a positive outcome, **and the people who are demonstrating in Wall Street demand social justice and equality** [i.e. communism; so, here we have it: Gorbachev officially endorses the Occupy movement, that has nothing to do with the recent alleged “mass demonstrations” in Russian cities demanding a repeated Duma election; these are **staged provocations**; most likely, just as the new December-29-submarine accident at Murmansk, to project the “weak look” as recommended by Sun Tzu, which in that case would mean that they couldn’t be any closer to go for it and start their desired global military adventure: things have never been more on-the-edge than right now!!! Also keep in mind that the year 2012 will be the 50th anniversary of the Cuban Crisis!!! These communists have their own funny way of celebrating anniversaries. Not to mention that the year 2017, the centenary of the October Revolution – as well as the tricentenary of the foundation of the Grand Lodge of England - is coming closer, that in 2018 will be the 200th birthday of Karl Marx and in 2020 the 150th birthday of their evil icon, Vladimir Ilyich Lenin].

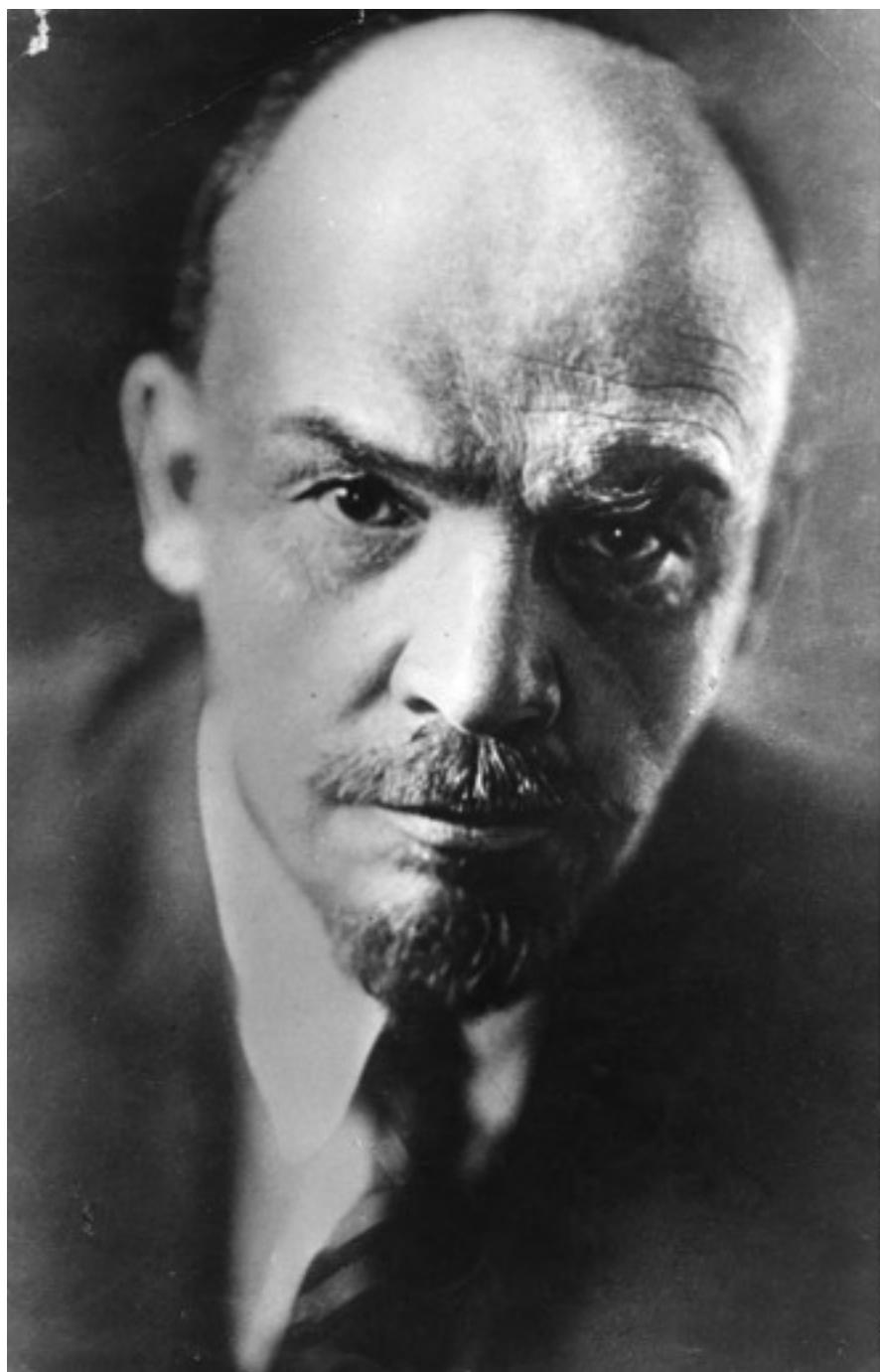
And, as you can see, also in the EU, mistakes were made. But this isn’t yet the essential point I want to make. I have the impression that – of course we aren’t out of the old crisis yet, and there are already signs on the horizon for a new crisis [which international communism, directed by Moscow and Beijing, will certainly make use of for the furtherance and victory of the revolution; via economic manipulations; via Western trade unions; via anarchist and terrorist groups, via sabotage; and so forth], but – **as LENIN calmed his comrades in arms, this was when the Soviet power came into being, when there was a chaotic situation in the country: “Yes, of course we have chaos, BUT FROM CHAOS SPRING UP NEW FORMS OF LIFE”.** [That same logic is known from highgrade Freemasonry: “Ordo ab Chao”. An utterly blasphemetic claim that man by himself should be entitled to *create* chaos (by destroying the old, God-given order), and then be able to *organise* a new (hybrid and sterile) man-made order without God. – The phrase, “New Forms of Life” also describes the Leninist ‘creativity’ that uses, for a while, even the most contradictory and opportunistic methods to reach their final revolutionary goal, as well as their idea of an overall synthetic counterfeit of true life. Because they HATE life. – It’s all deeply Satanic!]]

And therefore, chaos IS a problem, a crisis IS a problem, all this isn’t easy, but there are always included opportunities that definitely should be made use of. [Pro-communist globalist, if not Soviet mole, Henry Kissinger, made an almost identical statement on January 5, 2009 regarding the incoming new President in relation to the economic crisis. Kissinger explained, “His task will be to develop an overall strategy for America *in this period when, really, a New World Order can be created. It’s a great opportunity, it isn’t just a crisis..*”]

[And now he turns straight diabolical:] And I wish the Germans a **healthy** New Year. **And this time you’ll still have enough bratwursts and pork knuckles for New Year’s Eve** [laughter; yet, one can be sure not one single German was laughing]. **WELL, AND AS FOR THE NEXT NEW YEAR’S EVE, WE SHOULD THINK ABOUT THAT, TOGETHER!** [One can see on the video, that is bad visual quality, for a brief moment the Bavarian Prime Minister Horst Seehofer, almost certainly with a face DEEP FROZEN in shock!!! This is why they hid away this speech from the German population and from the world. It’s too late to change course; certainly also for the Germans, who once again in history overstretched their capabilities and have indeed thought they could deal with the Soviet monster on equal terms. It’s even too late to inform or prepare the public. It’ll be a hellish attack out of the blue sky. How many will in a second lose their minds and go crazy? And how many will just decide to hang themselves in their houses or apartments?]

And, I tell you quite frankly: it is for me a special, an emotional day. And regarding the accomplishments that I myself associate with my life [you see: communists are *very* different from Western careerists: they don't take too much personal pride in their achievements, but, at the most, in their 'humble' contribution to the revolutionary cause!!!] – the German question, the destiny of Germany –, these were for me of determining importance. And I'm proud of **what I could do.**

Thank you very much! I'm wishing you good success!



Note that this was given in free speech, without a manuscript! Can one learn such calculated diabolical rhetoric even in the most rigid and aggressive NLP seminar? Hardly! As the late Christopher Story put it, these people are all out of

their minds and, instead, in Lenin's mind, "*which is not a very nice place to be*". (Cross-check Lenin's two facial halves by alternately covering one whilst looking at the other: You'll be able to look right into the Satanic abyss of his soul, that is pure, bestial hatred, when viewing his left facial half, which on the photo is the right half in the shadow.)

Now comes the *whole* speech in its (utterly streamlined and manipulated) print version (given in turquoise colour) translated from German into English by this

author (everybody can double-check the authenticity of this translation by going to the German print version on the Hanns Seidel Foundation's website as was given further above); as for its second half, this altered print version is accompanied by what was actually said (the latter given in the same dark-blue as the overall text of this document). This comparison is a great case in point regarding the Soviets' systematic practice of deception, disinformation, falsification, and lies, that still continues to this very day. Sentences or passages that were actually spoken but do not appear in the print version, are indicated by [~~~]. The cynical laughter one can hear now and then on the original audio of the second half certainly isn't from German attenders, but definitely from a considerable portion of Russians who were sitting in the audience (the TV-recording indeed shows quite a number of people without headphones on and with fairly distinct Russian facial features). This time, no paragraphs are given.



GORBACHEV SPEAKS (turquoise: fabricated print version; blue: original audio transcript):

“Most honoured friends from the Government of the Free State of Bavaria, ladies and gentlemen, today is a quite special day for me, a quite special event, after so much good said about me. And I even could have prided myself, I am already 80 now, but after all I can control myself. I would like to thank the Hanns Seidel Foundation from the bottom of my heart for this honour, for granting me the Franz Josef Strauß Award. The life’s work of not a few politicians has been honoured with this award. Franz Josef Strauß himself was one of the outstanding political personages in postwar Germany. And like every strong personality, he had many political friends, but at the same time also many

political enemies. In the West he was often termed an extreme conservative. You may easily imagine what kind of political grades he got in the Soviet Union: After all, he was the favourite target of our propaganda in the decades of the Cold War, branded as a reactionary. That's the way our life works, that's our history. And we keep living it, take lessons and draw conclusions from it. In the mid '80s, serious political restructuring was begun in the Soviet Union, soon known under 'Perestroika' and 'Glasnost'. Already then we had revised much within our own ideas. My first meeting with Ronald Reagan took place in 1985 in Switzerland. We talked for an hour. Afterwards, my delegation asked me about my impression of the dialogue partner. I told them, "Reagan is a conservative to the core, a political dinosaur." Later I learnt about Reagan having been asked that same question. His answer was, "Gorbachev is a stubborn Bolshevik." That time was in no way easy for us. We had to grow beyond ourselves, so to speak. At my first conversation with Margaret Thatcher, already after ten minutes the discussion came to a standstill, and we turned away from each other. After a break, I resumed the talk. I said to Mrs. Thatcher: "You know that I have no order whatsoever from the Politbureau to persuade you to enter the Communist Party." Mrs. Thatcher smiled. The ice was broken, the situation eased, and we could continue the conversation. That's how it all began. And then quickened the pace of events that in 1989 sealed the destiny of Germany. In June 1989 I came to visit Bonn, where I met with Helmut Kohl. Following the talks, there was a press conference. We were asked whether we had discussed Germany and its reunification. We confirmed to have talked about this. The key points were expressed by each one of us in a different manner, yet in substance we said the same, namely: The reunification would be a question of a distant historical future – three months later, the Berlin Wall fell. This was a historical development determined by millions of people and by their will for reunification. Our predictions then proved inaccurate, they were corrected by life. The people were helping us to look a bit further into the future and to do a step towards that future. François Mitterrand, an eminently cautious as well as polite man, expressed to me, "I cannot imagine how you and the Germans will come out of this situation. Also I myself do not know what should be said." I realised he wasn't particularly enthusiastic about the perspective of a reunified Germany. With regard to Margaret Thatcher, she openly argued against it. Yet, they all were eminent politicians. History knows no standstill, and at the time its course took a very particular direction. We, who were politicians, had to recognise and sense this. In the end, all signed the necessary treaties, also those who had initially disagreed. Germany was reunified, and Europe was opening a new chapter in its history. After all, not only the German union was at stake, but the overcoming of the division of Europe, more than that – the division of the whole world. Franz Josef Strauß came to Moscow in December 1987. This was an important meeting. Strauß explained to me his understanding of Germany, of Europe, and the world. There's many a conversation in which one talks around things without going beyond repeating conventional wisdom. But the talk with Franz Josef Strauß went completely different. I saw in front of me a man who made no secret of his views and knew how to stand up for his positions, but who had also the gift of perceiving the state of the world and of Europe, the role of the Soviet Union and the Federal Republic, in a wider context and with a sense of realism. Strauß had made acquaintance with war at first hand. He was near Stalingrad, and from such experiences man always draws his consequences. We spoke about the danger of war, and about how to forestall it. We asked ourselves whether wars needed to be fought at all. At that time, on both sides in Europe many nuclear weapons were being stockpiled. They were also stationed on the territory of the Federal Republic of Germany. Strauß told me that, after one of

his trips to the U.S. and having talked to Secretary of Defense McNamara, he had commissioned the Inspector General of the Bundeswehr to draw up a report on the possible effects for the Federal Republic of Germany of a future war. The report's main conclusion was: Nobody would survive the use of nuclear weapons. I already mentioned our first meeting with Ronald Reagan when we commented on each other quite negatively. Nevertheless, after the negotiations, a highly important declaration was made in our joint communiqué: that it was necessary to avoid a nuclear war because in such a war there would be no victors. From this resulted the question for what we'd need an arms race worth billions of dollars in the first place. Not to forget the fact that 90% of all nuclear weapons were stationed in the U.S. and in the Soviet Union. Thus was the contextual frame of our talks with Franz Josef Strauß. As I receive today the award that carries his name, I would like to pay my reverence and respect to this man. He won great merits for German post-war policy. I am convinced it would have been so much more difficult for us to achieve the task of German reunification, had the mood among the Germans and Russians at the time been different. We should appropriately acknowledge this fact: Two peoples that had lived through such a dramatic joint history were able to find the way to reconciliation, they were able to comprehend that a confrontation would lead nowhere. Obviously, also the passed joint experiences of those centuries were coming to effect when Russians and Germans had been linked through good-neighbourly, friendly relations. [Actual audio transcript, given in dark-blue, starts here:] And it is good that there are no more walls; but, dividing lines are again emerging. [It is good that there is no more Berlin Wall. But unfortunately new dividing lines are yet again emerging.] And if one should be worried about something, and what today's politicians should think about, in Central Europe, also in Eastern Europe etc., what they should think about is: under no circumstances to allow a war, under no circumstances to allow a new confrontation. [What today's politicians in the whole of Europe including Central- and Eastern Europe should think about is their obligation to allow under no circumstances a new confrontation.] I know why the politicians in Russia so sharply react to the missile defence in Europe, to its intended stationing. But now I'm also slowly asking myself: what's this all about? [In the beginning I thought that our politicians in Russia were reacting too sharply towards the European missile defence and its planned stationing. Now, I'm asking myself today ever again about the sense and meaning of the whole project.] For, what we can see is that the missile defence is meant as a defence against Russia. Everything else is just talk, or a wall of fog to cover the truth. [For it looks as if the USA's missile defence system has been thought out as a defence shield against Russia. Everything to the contrary appears but as gibberish and a smokescreen to cover the truth.] Yes, and as a result, the Russian government said: We're going to station means of defence, here and there, **and we are ready to use weapons** that guarantee our security. [The Russian Government finally said: We too are going to station corresponding means of defence, and we are ready to use weapons that guarantee our security.] **What does this mean? WORLD WAR III!** And if Russia and the USA should again be at loggerheads, this IS World War III! This won't be restricted to a local war! [And what's the bottom line in this? It means that the possibility of a new war cannot be ruled out. If Russia and the USA stand in confrontation to each other, the whole matter will inevitably grow beyond the scale of a local conflict.] And we need to again clearly remember the lesson, you know: the Cold War was over; our partners were triumphing, **and they wouldn't see the forest for the trees any more**, in the West, and especially in the USA. [We need to clearly realise that the Cold War is over. Some

of our partners thought it ended with their ‘victory’. It seems to me that they, seized with this false euphoria of victory, lost their ability to critically assess their own condition, this is especially true of the USA.] They wanted to build a new empire, with a super-super-super-power [There it was that some started harbouring intentions of creating a new empire in the world, a situation in which one single super power would dominate the world stage.] – to which I say: **the Germans are a serious and reflecting nation**, and they know well what is being said in the USA; and when they don’t react to it and sometimes nod, it means all this can’t be taken for serious [~~~]: It’s the attempt to threaten Russia **a bit; and there is still in Europe a bit of fear left towards Russia.** [One seeks to throw Russia into anxiety and fear. And in Europe one still seems to be afraid of Russia.] Yet, we only wish to build and develop [~~~]: No one has led more wars in the 20th century than us. So much we had to suffer, [No one had to lead as many wars in the 20th century as we had to. Our people had to undergo great suffering.] and, just as a sidenote: We had *no* plans after WW II to start military action against the USA. I know it. I MUST know it. [In this context it may be said that after the ending of the Second World War we had no plans whatsoever to start military action against the USA. I know this for sure.] And, suddenly, all this starts all over again. This reminds me of those 200 or 300 U.S. bases, spread all over the world, from the Cold War era; **and have they been of any use to anybody?** [Now the situation is again aggravating. Remember those two- or three hundred U.S. military bases that at the time of the Cold War were spread all over the world. Have they been of any use to anybody?] I have the impression that the **evildoer** of the system in which the West lives, and so with the consent of Washington, **this radical market philosophy, all this hasn't turned out positively.** [I have the impression that also today's global economic situation is connected with this array of questions. One of the serious shortcomings of the economic system in which the West exists today and whose authorship in many ways goes to Washington, is connected to the too radical nature of the market philosophy. It has turned out that this way cannot be productive!] What have we got? Bubbles! One bubble after the other, and they all burst. And, one should understand at last that the solution can’t be an arms race, **the militarisation of the world and the economy**, because we’d keep on throwing money out the window. [What have we finally got? Bubbles! And these bubbles are now bursting, one after the other. It is high time to realise that the solution can’t be an arms race and the militarisation of the world and the economy. That said, even today much money is being spent senselessly.] And former Finance Minister Waigel [Theo Waigel is sitting in the first row] spoke of 10 billion DM or Dollar, of course it was Mark, Deutschmark, that he didn’t give Gorbachev at that time. How much money are we simply throwing out the window! Eisenhower is again quoted these days, General and President Eisenhower. [~~~] Yesterday I had again the idea to watch that movie: “FFF”. No. “JFK”. On the assassination of John Fitzgerald Kennedy. I like such films, and one should watch them from time to time **just so to remain awake; if possible: wide-aware!** [Recently I again watched a movie on the assassination of John F. Kennedy. One should watch such movies time and again just so not to lose one’s vigilance.] And, Eisenhower, to come back to that, said that the military-industrial complex is a dangerous thing; **and one should never lose control over it!** He said that in a way as had never been said before. And I want to say: the man was right! [Applause.] [Kennedy’s predecessor, Dwight Eisenhower, said that the military-industrial complex is a dangerous thing, and one shouldn’t lose control over it. Eisenhower expressed this point very clearly as nobody had before him. Also I say: He was right.] The military-industrial complex in our grand countries, that’s those who set the tone, who exert pressure on politics.

[The military-industrial complex represents in our grand countries that power that sets the tone and exerts pressure on politics.] I know how our military-industrial complex is doing this, and it is still very critical of Gorbachev because of Perestroika and the freeing of the country from these military expenditures. [I know well how the military-industrial complex behaves also in our country. It is also quite critical of me, this still stems from the time of perestroika, because at that time we could free the country from its excessive military expenditures.] But, **these people** have been accustomed to always ‘play the first fiddle’, **and I think that if an economy cannot provide for its people, it is an ill economy; AND SUCH AN ECONOMY MUST BE CURED, AND SO BY RADICAL MEANS!**

[The representatives of the military-industrial complex have got accustomed to playing the chief role. In my opinion, the economy should first of all provide for people a normal life. If it cannot do this, it is ill and needs to be restored by the most radical methods.] **This was my idea, this was my approach.** And I’m still repeating it today. [This was my position, this was my practical approach. I stand by this opinion even today.] But, no, what are they telling the people? They are telling them things that make them afraid. Well, and now we’re arming up. [Much depends on the psychology of the people. And what are they being told instead? They are being told things that make them feel afraid and scared. Now we are again about to arm up.] But when one looks at the situation thoroughly, one can easily see that our government is acting correctly and appropriately, because – I just say: the devil take it – **there is no system for executing global decisions in a world that is already global.** We simply still lack such mechanisms, [But as we look at the situation thoroughly, it becomes clear that our government in this case has acted reasonably and appropriately; because today there is no system for executing global decisions in a world that is already global. We still lack the appropriate mechanisms.] and I have heard with great interest that, as has been said by your Prime Minister, “we are ready to help, but not to throw money into a bottomless pit.” [With regard to the present situation in the EU, I have heard with great interest from the Prime Minister of Bavaria that one is ready to participate in the financial rescue efforts but not to throw money into a bottomless pit.] After all, **IT WAS THE GERMANS** who initiated the Euro, the European single currency, **and therefore Germany carries also great responsibility,** and Germany is big and strong, and thus carries an especially great responsibility, **from which it cannot just steal away.** [But it was particularly the Germans who initiated the Euro, this European single currency. Thus, Germany carries special responsibility for the further development of the situation.] But, this is also about the processes within the countries. Many have entered the EU in an expectation, as we say in Russia, of having things for free, I think you know exactly what I mean. [But, this is also about the processes within individual countries. Many have joined the EU so to live an opulent life, and so, as one says in Russia: for a ‘God bless you’.] Yes, so quickly did they rush to the West and left the Warsaw Pact and COMECON, all up and away towards the West, [This was for them the opportunity to speedily exit the Warsaw Pact, but also at the same time the Council for Mutual Economic Assistance, and enter into the system of the West.] and the West immediately welcomed them and quickly incorporated these new countries, which all entered suit the United Nations; and you yourselves [the Germans] have greatly furthered this development; thus: Look who is talking! And, shouldn’t one be grateful to the Greeks for having established the fundaments of our civilisation? [Laughter and applause.] [The West has contributed, not insignificantly, to this development and should therefore, as for its consequences, criticise itself. By the way, not to forget: We should be grateful to the Greeks for having laid the foundations of our civilisation.] But, well, **I think we know exactly what we**

need to think of each other, and we must build a system for executing global decisions in a global world. [Today, we know what each of us is worth. We should build a system that enables global decisions in our global world.] **And for this, NEW systems, NEW models are needed!** Betting on super-profits, super-consumption, and the like, leads nowhere. [For this, we need new mechanisms, new models. Betting solely on super-gains and unlimited consumption leads onto a dead-end road.] That's of no use! [~~~] Now, we have a billionaire who owns a submarine. And now he wants to commission a second one. Is this going to give the man happiness? No! **One should find a small submarine, torpedo his first one so to prevent the second one from being built** [laughter]; because no one needs this. Who needs this? [standing ovations] [A billionaire who privately owns a submarine and wishes to get built a second one in addition, won't get happier by this. Maybe one should find a smaller submarine so to torpedo his first submarine and thus prevent a second submarine from being built; because no man ever needs two submarines in his life.] And I ask you, **my dear Germans [!!!]: stand you also by your responsibility!** You have initiated the Euro-zone, and as soon as the control mechanisms become effective, this system will be precisely what Europe and the world need! [Applause] [Also, I ask you, my honoured Germans, to keep your sense of responsibility. You have taken the initiative to create the Euro-zone, and if the taxation mechanisms should indeed start being effective, this system will be precisely what Europe and the world need.] I think we should all really think about, together, how we can prevent a violent solution of the problems at hand, because when someone chooses force, this is the most dangerous thing that there is; and I repeat: **we're again in an arms race!** [I think we should all examine together how we can avoid a power solution of the problem at hand. If anybody chooses force, this would be the most dangerous scenario. I would like at this place to repeat once more: We are already again caught in an arms race.] **It's obviously about re-militarisation, not only militarisation of the economy, but also of consciousness. WE ARE ILL; WE ALL NEED TO BE TREATED AND CURED!** [It's indeed about a new arms race. We are dealing here not only with the militarisation of the economy, but also of consciousness. We are ill; we are all in need of being treated and cured.] And generals again become heroes; generals who believe they had disarmed too much [It seems that the generals again become heroes; they hold that they've gone too far with disarmament.], one missile of many thousands, that's too much [~~~]. And here I ask myself: How do the generals think? [~~~] If one bets on solving problems militarily, then one is wrong, then one commits a mistake, [If someone bets on solving problems militarily, then that is a mistake.] and I'd like to say this again, I've heard this, we just had in France an annual meeting, the annual conference of the World Political Forum, that I brought into being several years ago, really a serious organisation; there it was said: to bet on force and strength isn't efficient. [A short time ago took place in France the annual conference of the World Political Forum, that I brought into being several years ago. Also there it was emphasised that betting on the use of force is at least inefficient.] The nations, and most politicians, condemn such an attitude. [The nations and the majority of politicians condemn such a position.] And at the end we came to the conclusion that wars do not solve problems, and in earlier days thinkers said that war is necessary, that war brings about a movement ahead etc. – No! War means a giant failure of politics. [At the closing of the conference we again stated: Wars cannot solve problems. The thinkers of the past said that wars are necessary, that wars accelerate societal processes. No, this is wrong: Today it is obvious that war means a failure, a collapse on the part of politics.] For what should one take up arms, aeroplanes, **extremely**

destructive weapons? And why? Because the politicians got it wrong, [If one takes up arms, it means that the politicians have got it wrong.] because the politicians **still lag behind the fast changes in the world.** [~~~] And, so to speak, the Russians, the Germans, the French, the Americans, the Japanese, and now also the Chinese, **by the way**, these nations are responsible for providing for the world a peaceful, positive perspective. [The 71 (?) Russians, the Germans, the French, the Americans, the Japanese, the Chinese – all nations carry responsibility for providing for the world a positive, peaceful perspective.] And, also, it's definitely wrong to believe one could hide away, one could sit out anything. **No one can hide any more or sit anything out!** [It is useless to believe that there can be anywhere a safe hide-out where one can sit out the evil of war, that one can dismiss certain dangers. No one can hide any longer.] Also small countries need contacts. [~~~] I believe I have now strayed quite far from the Franz-Josef-Strauß Award [laughter], [I'm afraid I've now strayed rather far from the Franz-Josef-Strauß Award.] but I'm convinced that the one is closely connected to the other; **connected to the legacy passed on to us by smart brains.** [~~~] I'd like to once again express my heartfelt thanks. [Once again, I'd like to thank you all from the bottom of my heart.] You know, I speak at home, here in Germany, in Europe, in the world; I advocate cooperation and of course a deepening in the cooperation between Russia and Germany. [As you know, I'm giving lectures at home, here in Germany, in Europe and everywhere in the world. In my elaborations, I advocate cooperation in the economic, cultural, and political fields. It is a matter of course that I will always advocate cooperation between Russia and Germany.] Because, this means very, very much for the overall situation; it stabilises it, develops it towards a positive outcome, [This cooperation has a positive effect on the general situation and puts the development on a proper course.] **and the people who are demonstrating in Wall Street demand social justice and equality.** [But also here there remains a certain amount to be caught up with: For instance, the people demonstrating in Wall Street demand social justice and equality. Obviously, in this area there still exist inconsistencies.] And, as you can see, also in the EU, mistakes were made. But this isn't yet the essential point I want to make. [Also in the EU, mistakes were made. But, coming to an end, this isn't the essential point I want to make.] I have the impression that – of course we aren't out of the old crisis yet, and there are already signs on the horizon for a new crisis, [I have the impression that certainly we haven't worked ourselves out of the old crisis, and already there are signs for a new crisis on the horizon.] but – **as LENIN calmed his comrades in arms,** [Lenin comforted at his time his comrades in arms by the words:] **this was when the Soviet power came into being, when there was a chaotic situation in the country:** [~~~] "**Yes, of course we have chaos, BUT FROM CHAOS SPRING UP NEW FORMS OF LIFE.**" [Yes, it was right that one had chaos, but from chaos would spring up new life forms.] And therefore, chaos IS a problem, a crisis IS a problem, all this isn't easy, but there are always included opportunities that definitely should be made use of. [Chaos is a problem, also the crisis is a problem, all this isn't easy, but there are always included opportunities that should be utilised.] And I wish the Germans a **healthy** New Year. [I wish all Germans good health for the New Year] **And this time you'll still have enough bratwursts and pork knuckles for New Year's Eve** [laughter]. [And I'm sure that also this time you will have enough bratwursts and pork knuckles on your feast tables] **WELL, AND AS FOR THE NEXT NEW YEAR'S EVE, WE SHOULD THINK ABOUT THAT, TOGETHER!** [With regard to next year's New Year's eve, we should all think about together how it should be arranged.] And, I tell you quite frankly: it is for me a special, an emotional day. [I want to emphasise again: Today is a special, a moving day for

me.] And regarding the accomplishments that I myself associate with my life [~~~] – the German question, the destiny of Germany -, these were for me of determining importance. And I'm proud of **what I could do**. [The German question is without doubt a result of my life [??]]. The destiny of Germany was decisive for me at the time. And I'm proud of what I could accomplish back then.] Thank you very much! I'm wishing you good success! [Thank you very much! I'm wishing you good success!]”

DMITRI MEDVEDEV'S TV-ADDRESS OF NOVEMBER 23, 2011

On November 23, 2011, more than two weeks prior to Gorbachev's attack speech, Russian television broadcasted an official (prepared) address by current President Dmitri Medvedev, formally to the people of Russia, but of course really directed to the United States and the West, that perfectly fits into this new dimension of aggressive “cooperation-blackmail”, starting out – like the speech by Gorbachev, and in the very same type of upside-down Leninist audacity – with the alleged U.S. threat against Russia by trying to build up a missile defence in Eastern Europe much more moderate, by the way, than the Bush-43 administration had in mind. However, these arguments seem to be but excuses (every aggressor in history had *his* version of things, nothing new) for coming up with their deadly alternative: cooperate, on our communist terms – or else! Obviously, the unchanged Soviets feel now strong enough to launch the last final chapter of their world revolution. In other words, either the West agrees to submit to a world communist federation, complete of course with brutal purges and mass killing worldwide akin to Lenin's and Dzershinsky's Red Terror that followed the Bolshevik rise to power, or that brutal end will come about anyway, albeit preceded by war as a means of the revolution, and certainly the worst war the world has ever seen; and the Russian generals, unlike the Western military, have always seen nuclear war as leadable and winnable, apart from the fact that, according to Czech top defector Jan Šejna, the military doctrine of the communist bloc has always been oriented along *exclusively offensive* lines; of course, they knew the West would never attack them. (Text source: German subtitles on the original Russian broadcast - as shown again on a communist propaganda Youtube channel, that is connected to the one providing Gorbachev's speech as well as to that same German communist website, <http://www.bueso.de>, this time it's a Youtube channel entitled “dasistnichtmeinewelt”; translation into English by this author):



To the citizens of Russia!

Today I speak to you regarding the situation of the missile defence systems of the NATO states in Europe.

Russia's relations to the USA and to NATO in the field of missile defence have a long and complicated history. When U.S. President Barack Obama in September 2009 cancelled his predecessors' plans for the erection of a missile defence system in Europe, we welcomed this as a positive step. This decision paved for us the way towards finalising the important New START Treaty, that was signed recently and that clarifies the interconnection between strategic offensive weapons and missile defence. Let me again say that this was a great accomplishment.

Later, however, the USA began implementing a new plan that foresaw the creation of a missile defence system in gradual steps. Especially this is being viewed by Russia with some concern. Ultimately, this would lead to the stationing of U.S. missiles and military near Russia's borders and in the surrounding waters.

One year ago, at the summit of the NATO-Russia Council in Lisbon, I suggested the development of a joint and sectoral missile defence system in Europe, in which each country should be responsible for one particular sector. Furthermore, we were ready to discuss additional modifications of such a system so to allow for the wishes of our NATO partners.

Our sole aim was to keep up the fundamental principle that Europe does not need new dividing lines, but rather a common security space with full-fledged and legally defined Russian participation. It is my conviction that in this way Russia and NATO would create the unique opportunity for building a genuine strategic partnership. **We must replace in our relations, friction and**

confrontation by the principles of equality, undivided security, mutual trust, and predictability.

Unfortunately, the USA and other NATO allies have not shown enough readiness to go in that direction. Instead of showing the readiness to listen to and understand our concerns over the European missile defence system, they merely repeat that the plans are not directed against Russia and that therefore there is no reason for concern. This is the position of executive force, but representatives of some countries say openly that the whole system is directed against Russia. Yet, our requests for laying this down in the form of clear legal obligations were strongly rejected.

We hold a reasonable position. We are ready to discuss the status and content of such obligations, but our colleagues should understand that these obligations must be filled with substance instead of being empty words. They must not be formulated as promises and assurances but as specific military-technical criteria that would allow Russia to evaluate how far the actions of the USA and of NATO in the field of missile defence are congruent with their declarations, whether our interests are violated, and to what degree the strategic nuclear balance is still intact. This is the fundament of today's security situation.

We will not participate in a programme that could in short term, say, within five, six, or eight years, weaken our nuclear deterrence ability. The European missile defence programme is already underway, and, regrettably, the works are progressing fast, in Poland, Turkey, Romania, and Spain. We are being confronted with a fait accompli.

Of course, we will continue the dialogue about this topic, with the USA and with NATO. I had an exchange over this with President Obama during our latest meeting and again made very clear at that opportunity our concerns. **There is still time to come to an agreement.** Russia has the political will to conclude the agreements necessary in this area, agreements that would open a new chapter in our relations with the USA and with NATO. **If our partners show a sincere and responsible attitude towards Russia's legitimate security interests,** I am sure we will be able to find an agreement.

But if one demands from us "to cooperate" or even to act against our own interests, it will be difficult to find common ground. **In that case, we would be forced to react differently. We will decide about our steps according to the factual course of events, stage after stage as the missile defence programme will be implemented.**

In this context, I have made the following decisions:

First: I decree that the Ministry of Defence immediately **put in combat readiness** the radar system near Kaliningrad for the early warning of missile attacks.

Second: As a primary measure, **the protection for Russia's strategic nuclear weapons** will be increased under the programme for the development of our air-and space defence.

Third: The new ballistic strategic missiles, that have been commissioned by the Strategic Missile Troops and the Navy, **will be equipped with advanced**

systems for the penetration of missile defence as well as with new, highly effective warheads.

Fourth: I have given order to the armed forces to put together **a catalogue of measures by which, if necessary, the data material and control systems of missile defence systems can be rendered useless.**

These measures will be adequate, effective, and cost-efficient.

Fifth: **In case the measures given above should prove insufficient, the Russian Federation will station modern offensive weapons in the West and the South of the country that guarantee our ability to incapacitate every part of the U.S. missile defence in Europe. One step in this process will be the stationing of Iskander missiles in the area of Kaliningrad.**

Further measures against the missile defence system in Europe shall be developed and applied, as needed.

Should the situation still continue to develop not in Russia's favour, we reserve to us to terminate further disarmament- and arms control measures.

Because of the close relation between strategic offensive- and defence weapons, there could furthermore arise conditions **for an exit from the new START Treaty, and this option is written into the treaty.**

Yet, let me emphasise that we do not stand back from a continued dialogue with the USA and with NATO over missile defence and practical cooperation in this field. We are ready for this.

But, this can only be achieved via the fundament of a clear legal basis for cooperation, that would secure that our legitimate interests and concerns are met.

We are open for dialogue and hope for a **reasonable and constructive approach** from the side of our partners in the West.

FURTHER SOVIET-CHINESE INTIMIDATIONS AND WAR PREPARATIONS

A (Soviet-) Russian Topol-M (a.k.a. SS-27 Mod.1 Sickle B) Intercontinental Ballistic Missile fired from a **mobile** transport erector launcher (the United States, in contrast, relies now solely on its silo-based, 40-year-old and increasingly unreliable Minuteman-IIIs to be replaced by an updated design not before 2030, if at all). The Topol-M, an advanced version of the SS-25 Sickle and designed alternatively also for the launch from submarines, is a fairly unmatched hi-tec weapon developed in the 'Post-Soviet' era under Yeltsin. Its range is 11,000 km, with a circular error probability, due to satellite control, of only 200 m. It is equipped either with one 800 KT nuclear warhead (which equates to 44 to 61 Hiroshima bombs) or instead with a multiple independently targetable warhead (MIRV). Its most important feature, however, is that it can hardly be intercepted (which indeed opens for the unchanged Soviets, along with their equally advanced missile defence, the long-desired possibility for military blackmail against the West; and, yet the present U.S. Administration is working towards "Global Zero" of nuclear weapons, which would, even with the most powerful conventional weapons replacing them, leave America and the West without its nuclear deterrent). The Topol-M is able to perform complex evasion manoeuvres to escape interception; is equipped with a counter-targeting system; can emit decoys so to confuse defence missiles; and is shielded against radiation, EMP, nuclear explosions over 500 meters away, and laser attacks. Officially, there were deployed, as of late 2010, 52 Topol-Ms in silos and 18 on mobile launchers. At present (2011/12), that total number of 70 Topol-Ms should have increased to 78. By the year 2020, the Russian Strategic Rocket Forces say they plan to be in the possession of as many as 177 land-based Topol-Ms (silo or mobile). However, given the long tradition of Soviet cheating, real numbers should be assumed to be considerably higher. Add to this the possibly hundreds of Topols (SS-25-Sickle), Iskanders (SS-26 Stone), SS-19s and the 30 UR-100UTTKh (SS-19) and 108 RS-24 'Yars' (SS-29), not to mention their biological and chemical arsenals as well as weaponry such as the cargo-container Club-K missile system that equates to a true unrestricted-warfare terror weapon, it can be secretly launched from within a seemingly harmless cargo container and thus, theoretically, from any Western freight port, from commercial ships at sea, from civilian trucks or trains. Also, the Russians have made enormous progress in all other military fields, whether tanks, submarines, torpedo technology, and aircraft! This doesn't include the highly secretive area of Tesla weapons (directed energy weapons), where they seem to be far ahead of the United States. The unchanged Soviet Union, still more or less disguised as a "New Russia" but also including, lest we forget, the whole number of "former" Soviet republics, has a toughly trained and, so we can assume, highly motivated military. The source of their optimism and their moral is their ideology. And the Soviet Generals, who have been pushing for many years towards ever more arming up, are convinced they can fight and win a global war (in which, of course, they will be greatly assisted by their communist ally China, a country with 1.34 billion people, i.e. 19% of the world's total population). Furthermore, the open societies of the West will have another cruel surprise: communist cells – mainly immigrants, one can expect – in their midst; who will have drawn up

death lists of anticommunists, conservatives, traditionalists, priests etc.: everybody who will not be seen “fit” for living in the future communist world society.

(Some of the following will be better understood after reading sections I, II, III, VIII, and IX of the ‘Quotes & Excerpts’ part of this compilation. All facts have been been meticulously researched as well as thoroughly meditated upon by this author, based on the methodology of unmatched top Soviet defector Anatoliy Golitsyn, author of “New Lies for Old” and “The Perestroika Deception”.)

The war threats by Russia and China during the last decade, after a clever display of the “weak look” in the 1990s, were many and have intensified over the time. By now, it appears they are prepared and ready to go for it and finally crush their hated “class enemy”, with or without war, so to establish their long-desired world communist society. The West’s desperate choice will then solely be to either sign its unconditional surrender to communist world rule straight away or to accept a life-or-death military confrontation that, by human reckoning, it cannot win; not any longer.

May 13, 2000, Moscow: Only 6 days after his pompous inauguration as Russian President and as his very first act in office, former military intelligence (GRU) officer Vladimir Putin decrees the reorganisation of the territory of the Russian Federation into 8 administrative regions resp. federal districts in exactly the same manner as precisely to the day Yossif Stalin had divided the once Russian Socialist Federative Soviet Republic in those same 8 military districts on May 13, 1941 as a preparatory measure for the war against Germany that already was in the air (and that just as well could have been a Soviet invasion of Germany, had not the Germans attacked first). Thus, again, the secretly continuing USSR has entered a phase of *immediate war preparation* as early as the year 2000! Also, the already otherwise existing military districts of today happen to be identical with the newly formed regions, that are each henceforth under the control of two to five “presidential plenipotentiary envoys”, mostly military men: a system with a much stronger and more effective ‘power vertical’. Also, there were reports in that week about a possible amnesty of as many as 120,000 prison inmates obviously to be trained for service in the military, which too follows the Stalin pattern at the beginning of the Soviet-German war.



The 8 federal districts of the Russian Federation (i.e. of the 'former' RSFSR): Northwestern, Central, Southern, North Caucasian, Volga, Urals, Siberian, and Far Eastern.

November 11, 2002, Brussels: Following a summit meeting where he had met EU leaders and discussed i.a. the Chechnya crisis (and only weeks after the hostage tragedy in Moscow's Dubrovka musical theatre, in which 39 Chechen militants and at least 129 hostages were gassed to death in a highly controversial Spetsnaz operation), Russian President Vladimir Putin turned a press conference into a veritable scandal; yet, it took a day of listening to the tapes for the Western journalists to realise what he had actually said, as the Russian interpreters either hesitated to translate in full or just couldn't catch up with the speed of his outburst. What had happened: A reporter of the French daily *Le Monde* was asking about the possible use of heavy weapons against civilians in Chechnya, to which Putin gave back, among other elaborations, "If you want to become an Islamic radical and have yourself circumcised, I invite you to come to Moscow. Our nation is multi-confessional, we have experts in the field. I would recommend that he who does the surgery does it so you'll have nothing growing back afterward." Wow!!! Although Putin's aides did their best to explain away the remark, arguing the President had been exhausted and was sick and tired of Chechnya, nevertheless: what a statement! Whereby the sobering political reality of the Chechnya war is that it is a staged war controlled from both sides of the conflict by the Kremlin. For what ends, one could ask? To be able to show the West that they too have an 'Islamic problem' and put themselves on the green tables with the political leaders of the West and tie them into ever deeper cross-border co-operation between all sorts of intelligence services and possibly police. So it's but a construed pretext to further undermine and penetrate Western services and to have yet another strong argument along the lines of "Global problems need global solutions." The irony of it all, however, is that global terrorism is basically a communist invention: Mainly since the '50s and '60s, none other than the Soviets, along with the Chinese and all other communist allies, had systematically formed a worldwide network of terror organisations, mostly labelled as "liberation movements."

May 9, 2005, Moscow, Red Square: 15 years after their last May 9th "Victory Day" parade on Red Square in 1990 (the last Victory Day in the official USSR of

1991 saw no parade, maybe as a deceptive ‘peace’ gesture towards newly reunified Germany), the Russians now hold a highly Soviet-style veterans’ parade celebrating the 60th anniversary of Soviet victory over Nazi Germany (the ‘New Russia’ still refers to WW II, in unchanged Soviet fashion, as the ‘Great Patriotic War’!). Also Western leaders such as Jacques Chirac and Tony Blair attend the parade. – Although still an historical display of WW-II machinery, along with old men of 85 or older, the parade was far from being mere nostalgia: the reviving of the old Soviet habit of Red-Square parades was in itself a strong signal: we are back, or more accurately: we are still the old Soviet Bolsheviks (and from 2008, these parades were indeed geared up to full-scale state-of-the-art military parades like in the times of the overt Soviet Union, albeit still with the Lenin Mausoleum hidden behind pompous scenes of Russian flags and revolutionary paintings). Plus, this 2005 parade probably marked the starting shot for an overall wave of very brutal anti-Western and, it seems, pre-WW-III propaganda (that is now everywhere on the internet, especially on YouTube); in fact, that turn again towards a much more overt military regime had already taken place by the succession by Vladimir Putin into the office of President in the year 2000, who according to the late British analyst Christopher Story is *not*, as widely held, KGB, but GRU, i.e. Soviet foreign *military* intelligence (a rivalling structure to the KGB and much more secretive than the KGB); in other words: the current Soviet-Russian leadership, probably more than any other Soviet leadership since the days of Stalin and just-as-cruel Khrushchev, consists of *experts in war*, not in civil affairs! And Putin may well be the man to lead the unchanged USSR, along with the whole communist bloc, to worldwide victory as he is now most likely to be President for another two 6-year-terms, i.e. until the year 2024 (although we should leave behind our Western misconception that this is about individual people: they work as a collective, also at the leadership level!).

September 2006, China: After much internal debate, the U.S. Pentagon finally publishes the fact that China had successfully proven its capability of blinding U.S. surveillance satellites with powerful ground-based laser beams. Test attacks were subsequently executed by the American military to assess the severity of the problem. – Everybody should read the 1999 book “Unrestricted Warfare: China’s Masterplan to Destroy America” written indeed by two colonels of Red China’s People’s Liberation Army, Qiao Liang and Wang Xiangsui. Beside its boastfulness and aggressive style, the book first and foremost reveals the all-but-politically-correct approach by China (and certainly also Russia): *warfare by all means*. After all, they are carrying out a revolution, world revolution, and they won’t stop at anything to get their way, as for instance their 24/7 cyber war against Western institutions and corporations greatly illustrates. Nevertheless, Americans and Europeans most civilisedly maintain their diplomatic and business ties with them, simply because there is no alternative any longer: the monster has already grown far too powerful, not the least thanks to those Western politicos who opened this door into self-destruction and utter defeat some forty years ago...

October 26, 2006, East China Sea, between Japan and Taiwan: During a U.S. Navy exercise in the region, suddenly and surprisingly a Chinese Song-class attack submarine surfaced within nine miles, i.e. within torpedoing distance, of the aircraft carrier USS Kitty Hawk. None of the whole number of escorting ships of the compound (that must have included also submarines) had been aware of the presence of the Chinese submarine prior to its surfacing! The incident naturally caused great shock (not to speak of embarrassment) in American

military circles as it revealed a degree of sophistication of China's submarine fleet that had neither been known nor expected. The consequences from this new reality are far-reaching: the Navies of the West might now well be rendered useless and defenceless against Chinese (and certainly Russian) submarine approaches and attacks. Asked by American diplomats why the submarine had been shadowing the U.S. fleet, Beijing pretended ignorance and dismissed the affair as coincidental.

January 18, 2007, Xichang Space Centre, China: Despite its earlier denials about developing space weapons, China undertakes the shooting down of a redundant weather satellite of its own by a ground-space ballistic missile fired from the Xichang space centre in the North-West province of Sichuan. This first anti-satellite test by any country for two decades again causes great nervousness in the West. Yet, the Chinese Foreign Ministry stone-walls the protests, arguing it had not been informed of any such missile test, and 'assuring', "We are opposed to any arms race in space and we will not get into any arms race in space." Yet, in spite of this series of 'Sputnik shocks', American and Western circles try to carry on with business as usual, still unable to realise where all this is headed. Not only have Russia and China been in a firm alliance for half a century, and meanwhile show it quite openly, their final intention of course is not defence or emancipation against a "Pax Americana" and so forth, but preparing for overall communist triumph on a global scale. This is what Western politicians, whatever their and their elites' agenda may be, cannot see through.

February 10, 2007, Munich, Germany: At the 43rd annual Munich Security Conference that always takes place at the Hotel Bayerischer Hof, that year under the motto "Global Crises · Global Responsibility", then and from May 2012 again President of the Russian Federation, Vladimir Putin, delivered a rather unfriendly early Valentine's Day present for his 'partners' in the West: a most aggressive, threatening, and Leninistically bold speech that came as a total surprise and certainly caused a lot of headache in Western political circles as it mercilessly destroyed all illusions of an American-dominated 'unipolar' world. Worse, during the whole speech Putin appeared to be almost exploding with cold fury (this author watched it live on Bavarian television; there is a full recording on the Youtube channel "PernatyZmey"). Whatever calculated his 'fury' may have been, it showed more clearly than anything else during the previous years that the Russians "mean it"; mean what, unfortunately, seems still not to have been understood to this day, i.e. communist world dominion, in other words: a 'unipolar' world controlled by *them!* Some key passages (taken from www.ag-friedensforschung.de/themen/Sicherheitskonferenz/2007-putin.html; the website gives the official English translation from the website of the President of the Russian Federation, www.president.kremlin.ru): "[...] The unipolar world that had been proposed after the Cold War did not take place either. The history of humanity certainly has gone through unipolar periods and seen aspirations to world supremacy. And what hasn't happened in world history? However, what is a unipolar world? However one might embellish this term, at the end of the day it refers to one type of situation, namely one centre of authority, one centre of force, one centre of decision-making. It is a world in which there is one master, one sovereign. And at the end of the day this is pernicious not only for all those within this system, but also for the sovereign itself because it destroys itself from within. And this certainly has nothing in common with democracy. Because, as you know, democracy is the power of the majority in light of the interests and opinions of the minority. Incidentally, Russia – we – are constantly being taught about democracy. But for some reason those who teach us do not want to learn

themselves. [...] We are seeing a greater and greater disdain for the basic principles of international law. And independent legal norms are, as a matter of fact, coming increasingly closer to one state's legal system. One state and, of course, first and foremost the United States, has overstepped its national borders in every way. This is visible in the economic, political, cultural and educational policies it imposes on other nations. Well, who likes this? Who is happy about this? In international relations we increasingly see the desire to resolve a given question according to so-called issues of political expediency, based on the current political climate. And of course this is extremely dangerous. It results in the fact that no one feels safe. I want to emphasise this – no one feels safe! Because no one can feel that international law is like a stone wall that will protect them. Of course such a policy stimulates an arms race. [...] Madam Federal Chancellor already mentioned this. The combined GDP measured in purchasing power parity of countries such as India and China is already greater than that of the United States. And a similar calculation with the GDP of the BRIC countries – Brazil, Russia, India and China – surpasses the cumulative GDP of the EU. And according to experts this gap will only increase in the future. There is no reason to doubt that the economic potential of the new centres of global economic growth will inevitably be converted into political influence and will strengthen multipolarity. [...] Did not our country have a peaceful transition to democracy? Indeed, we witnessed a peaceful transformation of the Soviet regime – a peaceful transformation! And what a regime! With what a number of weapons, including nuclear weapons! Why should we start bombing and shooting now at every available opportunity? Is it the case when without the threat of mutual destruction we do not have enough political culture, respect for democratic values and for the law? [...] Plans to expand certain elements of the anti-missile defence system to Europe cannot help but disturb us. Who needs the next step of what would be, in this case, an inevitable arms race? I deeply doubt that Europeans themselves do. Missile weapons with a range of about five to eight thousand kilometres that really pose a threat to Europe do not exist in any of the so-called problem countries. And in the near future and prospects, this will not happen and is not even foreseeable. And any hypothetical launch of, for example, a North Korean rocket to American territory through western Europe obviously contradicts the laws of ballistics. As we say in Russia, it would be like using the right hand to reach the left ear. [...] But what is happening at the same time? Simultaneously the so-called flexible frontline American bases with up to five thousand men in each. It turns out that NATO has put its frontline forces on our borders, and we continue to strictly fulfil the treaty [on Conventional Armed Forces in Europe] obligations and do not react to these actions at all. I think that NATO expansion does not have any relation with the modernisation of the Alliance itself or with ensuring security in Europe. On the contrary, it represents a serious provocation that reduces the level of mutual trust. And we have the right to ask: against whom is this expansion intended? And what happened to the assurances our western partners made after the dissolution of the Warsaw Pact? Where are those declarations today? No one even remembers them. But I will allow myself to remind this audience what was said. I would like to quote the speech of NATO General Secretary Mr Woerner in Brussels on 17 May 1990. He said at the time that: 'the fact that we are ready not to place a NATO army outside of German territory gives the Soviet Union a firm security guarantee'. Where are these guarantees? The stones and concrete blocks of the Berlin Wall have long been distributed as souvenirs. But we should not forget that the fall of the Berlin Wall was possible thanks to a historic choice – one that was also made by our people, the people of Russia – a choice in favour of democracy, freedom, openness and a sincere partnership with all the

members of the big European family. And now they are trying to impose new dividing lines and walls on us – these walls may be virtual but they are nevertheless dividing, ones that cut through our continent. And is it possible that we will once again require many years and decades, as well as several generations of politicians, to dissemble and dismantle these new walls? [...] In conclusion I would like to note the following. We very often – and personally, I very often – hear appeals by our partners, including our European partners, to the effect that Russia should play an increasingly active role in world affairs. In connection with this I would allow myself to make one small remark. It is hardly necessary to incite us to do so. Russia is a country with a history that spans more than a thousand years and has practically always used the privilege to carry out an independent foreign policy. We are not going to change this tradition today. At the same time, we are well aware of how the world has changed and we have a realistic sense of our own opportunities and potential. And of course we would like to interact with responsible and independent partners with whom we could work together in constructing a fair and democratic world order that would ensure security and prosperity not only for a select few, but for all.”

That latter statement, fair democratic world order and prosperity for all, shows without doubt they're indeed headed for *world communism*. In these extracts one can see as clear as the blue sky that the unchanged Soviets will do everything to manoeuvre American military presence out from the European continent, engage the Europeans in an ever tighter co-operation in all spheres that would finally mean a merger between the EU and the so-called Russian Federation, on communist terms, and leave the U.S. in complete political and military isolation. Given Putin's mentioning of the growing economic and political power of Brazil, Russia, India and China (the so-called BRIC states; indeed bricks in their ever rising all-communist world architecture), one can see coming on the horizon what Stalin once said had to be achieved: the change of the encirclement of socialism by capitalism to the encirclement of capitalism by socialism. Putin's speech was an open demonstration of unchanged Soviet hate against the one great obstacle on their way to an all-communist world, the United States of America; and the psychological effect on quite a number of Western politicians seems indeed to have been devastating.

January 2008, Gulf of Biscay: Russian battle ships and aircraft hold military manoeuvres just off the Atlantic coast of NATO members France and Spain! A Russian Navy spokesman proudly terms it “the biggest exercise of its kind in the area since Soviet times.”

February 14, 2008, Moscow: Again, Happy Valentine's Day! Outgoing President Vladimir Putin gives the last international press conference of his (second) term as President of the Russian Federation. The thing lasts, Soviet-style, about five (!) hours, and even surpasses in aggressiveness his speech of February 14, 2007 in Munich. Adrian Blomfield writes in his February 15, 2008 article “Vladimir Putin’s nuclear threat to the West” on The Telegraph’s website, “Vladimir Putin has delivered perhaps his most menacing tirade against the West yet, repeating threats to train nuclear missiles on Europe and warning of unspecified retaliation if Kosovo declared independence. Addressing his last press conference as Russian president, Mr Putin mounted a defiant display that

demonstrated more emphatically than ever the widening gulf between Moscow and its former Cold War rivals. In a vintage performance, the former KGB spy laced almost five hours of invective with crude insults, threats and admonitions often expressed in the argot of the Russian street. Reserving his greatest ire for the United States, which he accused of harbouring a colonial mentality towards Russia, Mr Putin again said that Europe would pay the consequences for a Washington-backed plan to erect a missile shield in Poland and the Czech Republic. ‘Our generals, our security council, consider these moves a threat to our national security,’ he said. ‘We asked our partners to stop but no one listened to us. So if they continue we will have to react appropriately by retargeting our missiles.’ Mr Putin also made similar threats against Ukraine if it joined Nato. The Russian leader – often accused of returning his country to a state of autocracy – portrayed his nuclear threat as an act of democratic generosity, saying he was acting in the interests of Europeans who opposed American military expansionism. [...] He told Western observers who refused to monitor the forthcoming election, widely seen as a sham, that they should ‘rather teach their own wives how to cook cabbage soup.’ [!!!!!] – The world has now been on the brink of World War III for quite some time, and Putin’s sinistre ‘recommendation’ to the West their wives should learn how to cook cabbage soup is along the same lines as Gorbachev’s threat of Dec. 10, 2011 that Germany could have had on New Year’s Eve 2011/12 full dinner tables for the last time. The message: prepare for poverty and hunger, because we are going to crush you. And the cabbage soup comment even contains an additional element: the Western societies, by decades of communist/feminist indoctrination, will be completely HELPLESS; with men unable or unwilling to fight, and women who know nothing about the basic necessities of survival in a time of crisis or war!!!

May 9, 2008, Moscow, Red Square: The first Victory-Day parade on Red Square, after three years of ‘nostalgic’ parades, that displays again, like in Soviet times, Russia’s ‘military power’. Russian propaganda outlet ‘Russia Today’ (RT) starts its live broadcast with the following Soviet-to-the-core design (next page):

This is NOT made up! It’s the present allegedly ‘post-communist’ Russian reality that in fact differs not one iota from the former reality under overt Soviet communism. Yet, hardly anybody in the West seems to have asked himself why supposedly post-Soviet Russia is so much in love with its Soviet “past”!!! You have depicted here the highest military decoration in the Soviet Armed Forces for WW II service (made of platinum, rubies, and 150 diamonds!), the Order of Victory (“ПОБЕДА”), showing Spasskaya Tower on Red Square and in front of it the inevitable Lenin Mausoleum. As this is an original Soviet award, you of course get the Soviet Union’s acronym on top: “CCCP”, i.e. USSR. Yet, Victory Day has always had a double meaning: pompously celebrating Soviet victory in 1945, but also anticipating all-encompassing global victory for world communism! That second meaning has acquired much greater relevance and actuality today.

RT’s presenter of this propaganda farce, Englishman Kevin Owen, asks his studio guest Sergey Lebedev, Managing Director of the “Ligerion Group” and military consultant (*not* the Sergey Lebedev who was until 2007 Director of Russian Foreign Intelligence and is now the Executive Secretary of the CIS), *why* this event is “bigger than in recent years”. Lebedev’s cryptical answer, in stiff Soviet-English prose: “Well, ahhh, actually, ahhh, parade is a tradition [sic!] of this country, and this year specifically the combat material is returning to the scene, and it’s going to be part of the show.” (A classic non-answer! However, there might be very much an explanation that Mr. Lebedev carefully hid from us: After all, 2008 was the year when Marxist-to-the-core Comrade Obama strove for presidential nomination and was finally elected President of the United States. Everybody should check out on the web the two interviews, as audio-files, with

computer expert Tom Fife – one time at Jeff Rense, the other time and more in-depth at Jeff Nyquist, the latter given here in a full transcript in chapter XIX, page 242 ff under the title, “Barack Obama: The -unchanged- Soviet Union’s Chosen One” –, where Mr. Fife spoke about a very peculiar incident back in early 1992 at a Moscow farewell party with Russian business partners with whom he and other Westerners were engaged in a joint venture: there was a heated argument on that evening, or rather a monologue, by the host’s wife, a committed communist, who – never mind that the USSR had been officially abolished two months prior – boasted that America would in due time have a black president, and he would be a communist, a Soviet; he was already around, had attended America’s elite universities, was “Ivy League”, he had a white American mother and an African father, he grew up in Hawaii; he would be irresistible for Americans, and he would be a great blessing for world communism; his name was Barack. – As one listens to these interviews one can’t help sensing that Tom Fife is telling the truth, which in that case would mean that America has already been, since that chaotic inauguration on January 20, 2009 and without knowing, in a state of *post-revolution!!!* Obama, should he be re-elected, which is more than likely, might well show a quite different face from what he has shown so far and push the United States right into full-blown communism, which he and his wife already in their 2008 campaign, remember, quite openly said they would.) Owen: “Combat material. What are we talking about there?” Lebedev: “We are talking about the hardware, the military hardware.” Owen: “Okay, so, we are seeing, what, tanks, and big military hardware like we saw back in the nineties?” Lebedev: “Yes, exactly. And I’d say that the nation was expecting for this event for a long time.” [sic!] ... Owen: “How important is it to Russia, Sergey, and Russians, in 2008, 63 years on?” Lebedev: “Well, I’d say it’s very important **because the country underwent very serious changes, and there were difficult times during this reform** [a coded confirmation of the unbroken continuity from the overtly communist era to ‘post-Soviet’ covert communism], and the nation needs certain good landmarks, this is primarily the internal event and importance. **But, on second thought, we have to remind that Russia is also a serious player in the world arena, it has its national interests, and it should have certain tools to protect them.**” – A threat. The truth is the Soviet military has never been meant and still today is not meant as a defence force but as the means to eventually overwhelm and crush the West, whether by its actual use or by mere military blackmail.

By the way, it’s worth comparing these May 9th parades since 2008 to those until 1990 (as presented, e.g., on the propaganda Youtube channels “RedSamurai84” and “RussiaToday”): The whole procedure and atmosphere are absolutely identical! More than that, the rapid changes that have taken place in the past decades in the West, and not to the better, seem to have left the continuing USSR completely untouched: as one watches closely the faces of the young, of the old, of the military, there is not the slightest difference between, say, 1985 or 1990, and 2008! Lest we forget, there had been *no* 1968 in the Soviet Union, *no* drug pandemic like in the West, *no* anti-authoritarian education, *no* ‘peace’ movement, *no* undermining of patriotism, *no* gay movement, and so forth. The West had been brought down by these Leninist/Gramscian/Frankfurt School subversion strategies; the communist bloc, in contrast, had stayed the same, which is why they can now come up and teach the West ‘old-fashioned’ discipline and ‘manners’. (Also, Minister of Defence and soldiers address each other in unchanged communist fashion by “ТОВАРИЩ”, Tovarishch, thus: “Comrade”, which is still the official way of address in Russia’s military!) The only differences remaining the Lenin Mausoleum being hidden

behind huge scenes, the leadership therefore standing not on top but in front of it, no huge Lenin portrait covering the fassade of the reactivated shopping centre *Gum* opposite to the Kremlin wall, and the Defence Minister these days being not an army general but a ‘civilian’.

May 9, 2010, Moscow, Red Square: This time, the Soviets achieved a special propaganda coup: In the Victory Day parade participated units of the three WWII allies, United States, Britain, and France. As they were marching to Soviet military music and rendered their military salute to the leaders of the unchanged Soviet Union, with whom they had been for so many decades (and still are) in a life-or-death struggle, one inevitably felt reminded of the Olympic summer games of 1936 in Berlin when also then the British and French delegations gave their salute to Adolf Hitler. History is repeating itself.



The role of (East-)German Chancellor Angela Merkel, who too took part in this event, is more than dubious. She may well be a Soviet plant in the heart of the formerly West German political establishment! Also, the 2010 Victory Day Parade was the first in the ‘post-Soviet era’ in which the old and since the year 2000 restored Soviet Stalin anthem was again played, and so in front of international guests!!! Finally, the commanders’ limousines are now for the first time *pitch-black*, outside and inside, instead of formerly light-grey; which adds to the intimidation.

A clever way of ‘hiding’ and at the same time *showing* the Lenin Mausoleum. An overhead camera serves the trick! So happened on May 9, 2010, and so for the first time. Hence, each year they ‘restore’ the old Soviet Union a little bit further. The day it will be officially again the USSR will be of course a traumatic day for the West that will then see that it has been duped over all those years and has now ended up trapped and defeated.

November 7, 2010, Moscow, Red Square: For the first time since the fake dissolution of the Soviet Union, it seems, also a Revolution Day celebration was held on Red Square. Not a military parade with armory but nevertheless a parade with some military units and Komsomol youth, commemorating officially the Revolution Day parade of 1941 (not the October Revolution itself, “of course”...)

November 8, 2010, off the coast of Los Angeles: A mysterious missile launch some 35 miles off the Southern Californian coast resulted in widespread uncertainty and confusion. All DoD entities positively confirmed there had been no missile test. At the same time, the Pentagon ruled out that it could have been a missile launch by a foreign power, coming up with the ridiculous explanation it must have been an airliner or a “toy rocket”. Yet, former U.S. Ambassador to NATO as well as former Deputy Secretary of Defense Robert Ellsworth identified the projectile as “a big missile.” Also, retired U.S. Air Force Lieutenant General Tom McInerney’s assessment was, “Look, this is not an airplane because of the plume, and the way you see that plume. Airplanes do not con at sea level or 5,000 feet like that. I spent 35 years flying fighters, and I never saw an airplane con like that. That is a missile, it’s launched from a submarine, and you can see it go through a correction course, and then it gets on a very smooth trajectory, meaning that the guidance system is now kicked in, it’s going at about 45° away from you, that’s why you are not seeing a lot of vertical velocity.” Could it have been a Chinese or (Soviet)-Russian missile fired from one of their super-quiet submarines?



May 9, 2011, Moscow, Red Square: The Victory Day parade starts with the grim WW II song “Sviashchennaya voyna” (The Sacred War) written in 1941 by Alexandrov, the composer also of the Soviet anthem of 1944. The lyrics, then applied to invading Nazi Germany, might well be directed today to the “decadent imperialist” West: *“The huge country is rising / Is rising for the deathly battle / Against the dark fascist force / Against their cursed hordes – (Refrain:) Let our noble wrath / Seethe like waves / The national war is going / The Sacred War – Will resist the oppressors / Of right notions (ideas) / Rapists, bandits / People’s*

t tormentors – Refrain – Don't their black wings dare / Fly over our Motherland / Don't the enemy dare tread / Our immense fields – Refrain – Let us put a bullet into the brow / Of the rotten fascist vermin / Let us make a strong coffin / For such breed – Refrain". One can ask whether this has still anything to do with "commemoration". It rather feels like a call to battle here and now!



There have been many more explicit World War III threats (it's clear they are now trying to impose their will on the West, and be it through war), from both Russian and Chinese Generals as well as from the political leadership, usually whenever the West tries to act in ways that could interfere with the communist goal of complete world domination. First it was George W. Bush's project of stationing defence missiles in Poland (that was cancelled by successor Obama) and the question of Kosovo's independence from Serbia; then it was the Georgia crisis in August of 2008; now it is a downgraded American plan for missile stationing in Eastern Europe; the permanent tensions with Iran; and the situation in Syria (a close satellite country that Russia and China are determined to defend). Furthermore, there are the unresolved Taiwan question, recurring tensions between North- and South Korea, and a number of other issues in the Far Eastern region. Not to forget Russia's repeated intrusions into Swedish, Norwegian and British airspace and the revived permanent reconnaissance flights of their (upgraded) propeller 'Bear' bombers; the latter being possibly more of a symbolic act.

QUOTES AND EXCERPTS

I. ANATOLIY GOLITSYN (*1926) "*New Lies for Old: The Communist Strategy of Deception and Disinformation*", completed 1980, published at Dodd, Mead & Co., New York 1984 (The following excerpts read almost like a prophecy by a clairvoyant. Golitsyn precisely knew the Soviet strategy and their overall methodology. Had he been properly listened to by the Western "structures", resp. had those structures been such as to be ready to listen, history might well have taken a very different course! Bold print and added photos with commentary by the presenter of this compilation):

(Pages 327, 328 :) "In consequence, the communist strategists are now poised to enter into the final, offensive phase of the long-range policy, entailing a joint struggle for the complete triumph of communism. Given the multiplicity of parties in power, the close links between them, and the opportunities they have had to broaden their bases and build up experienced cadres, the communist strategists are equipped, in pursuing their policy, **to engage in maneuvers and strategems beyond the imagination of Marx or the practical reach of Lenin and unthinkable to Stalin.** Among such previously unthinkable strategems are the introduction of false liberalization in Eastern Europe and, probably, in the Soviet Union and the exhibition of spurious independence on the part of the regimes in Romania, Czechoslovakia, and Poland."

(Pages 337 to 347:) "Certainly, the next five years will be a period of intensive struggle. It will be marked by a major coordinated communist offensive intended to exploit the success of the strategic disinformation program over the past twenty years and to take advantage of the crisis and mistakes it has engendered

in Western policies toward the communist bloc. **The overall aim will be to bring about a major and irreversible shift in the balance of world power in favor of the bloc as a preliminary to the final objective of establishing a worldwide federation of communist states.** There are a number of strategic options at the disposal of the communist strategists that can be used in various combinations to achieve their ultimate objectives. It would be impossible to list them all, but five likely interconnected options are as follows.

- A closer alignment of an independent socialist Europe with the Soviet bloc and a parallel alignment of the United States with China. Japan, depending on whether it remains conservative or moves towards socialism, might join either combination.
- A joint drive by the Soviet bloc and a socialist Europe to seek allies in the Third World against the United States and China.
- In the military field, an intensive effort to achieve US nuclear disarmament.
- In the ideological and political field, East-West convergence on communist terms.
- The creation of a world federation of communist states.

In each of these the scissors strategy [i.e. the fake Sino-Soviet split] will play its part; probably, as the final stroke, the scissors blades will close. The element of apparent duality in Soviet and Chinese policies will disappear. The hitherto concealed coordination between them will become visible and predominant. **The Soviets and the Chinese will be officially reconciled. Thus the scissors strategy will develop logically into the “strategy of one clenched fist” to provide the foundation and driving force of a world communist federation.** The suggested European option would be promoted by a revival of controlled “democratization” on the Czechoslovak pattern in Eastern Europe, including probably Czechoslovakia and the Soviet Union. The intensification of hard-line policies and methods in the Soviet Union, exemplified by Sakharov’s arrest and the occupation of Afghanistan, presages a switch to “democratization” following, perhaps, Brezhnev’s departure from the political scene.

(The following observations were made prior to Brezhnev’s death. They are followed by comments on developments subsequent to that event, beginning on page 347. – ED. [Editors of ‘New Lies for Old’])

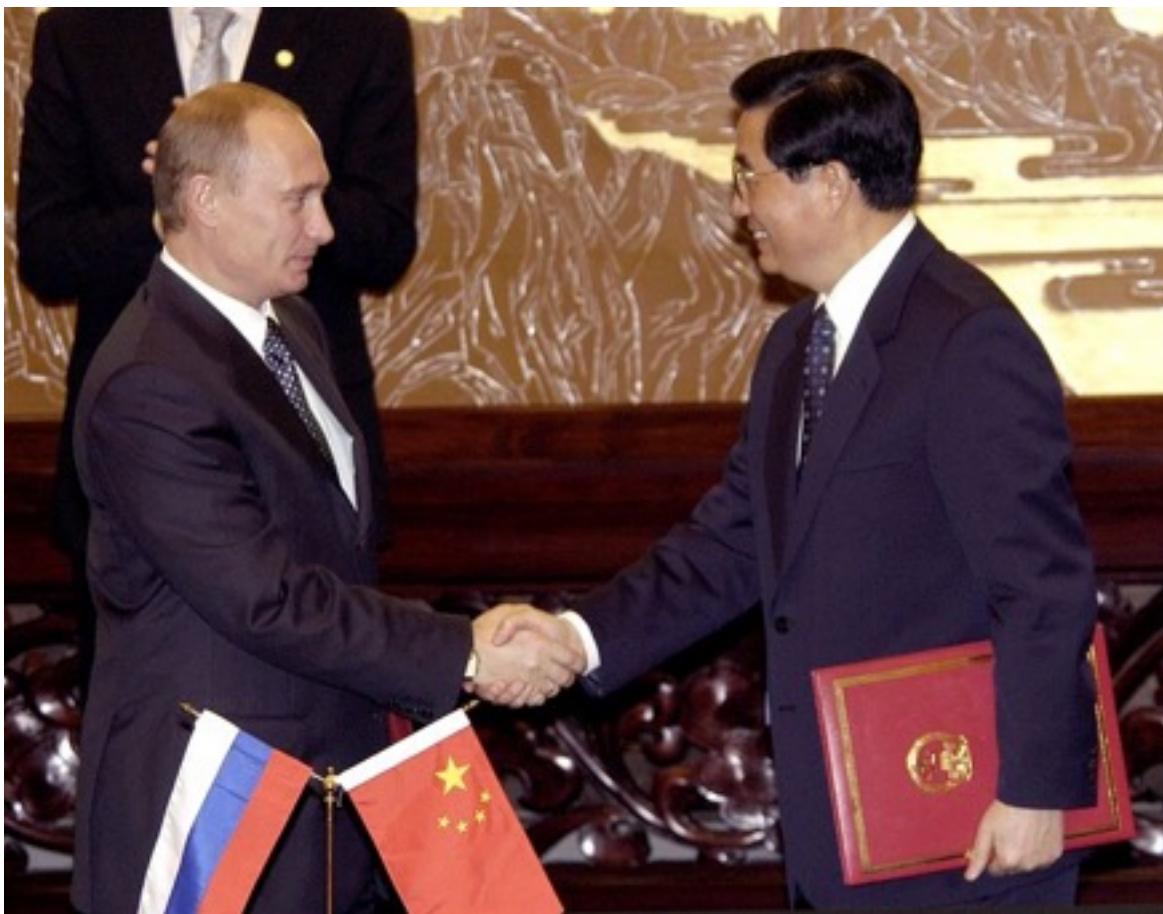
Brezhnev’s successor may well appear to be a kind of Soviet Dubcek. The succession will be important only in a presentational sense. The reality of collective leadership and the leaders’ common commitment to the long-range policy will continue unaffected. Conceivably an announcement will be made to the effect that the economic and political foundations of communism in the Soviet Union have been laid and that democratization is therefore possible. This would provide the framework for the introduction of a new set of “reforms.” The Brezhnev regime and its neo-Stalinistic actions against “dissidents” and in Afghanistan would be condemned as Novotny’s regime was condemned in 1968. In the economic field reforms might be expected to bring Soviet practice more into line with Yugoslav, or even, seemingly, with Western socialist models. Some economic ministries might be dissolved; control would be more decentralized; individual self-managing firms might be created from existing plants and factories; material incentives would be increased; the independent role of technocrats, workers’ councils, and trade unions would be enhanced; the party’s

control over the economy would be apparently diminished. Such reforms would be based on Soviet experience in the 1920s and 1960s, as well as on Yugoslav experience. The party would be less conspicuous, but would continue to control the economy from behind the scenes as before. The picture being deliberately painted now of stagnation and deficiencies in the Soviet economy should be seen as part of the preparation for deceptive innovations; it is intended to give the innovations greater impact on the West when they are introduced. Political "liberalization" and "democratization" would follow the general lines of the Czechoslovak rehearsal in 1968. This rehearsal might well have been the kind of political experiment Mironov had in mind as early as 1960. The "liberalization" would be spectacular and impressive. Formal pronouncements might be made about a reduction in the communist party's role; its monopoly would be apparently curtailed. An ostensible separation of powers between the legislative, the executive, and the judiciary might be introduced. The Supreme Soviet would be given greater apparent power and the president and deputies greater apparent independence. The posts of president of the Soviet Union and first secretary of the party might well be separated. The KGB would be "reformed." Dissidents at home would be amnestied; those in exile abroad would be allowed to return, and some would take up positions of leadership in government. Sakharov might be included in some capacity in the government or allowed to teach abroad. The creative arts and cultural and scientific organizations, such as the writers' unions and Academy of Sciences, would become apparently more independent, as would the trade unions. Political clubs would be opened to nonmembers of the communist party. Leading dissidents might form one or more alternative political parties. Censorship would be relaxed; controversial books, plays, films, and art would be published, performed, and exhibited. Many prominent Soviet performing artists now abroad would return to the Soviet Union and resume their professional careers. Constitutional amendments would be adopted to guarantee fulfillment of the provisions of the Helsinki agreements and a semblance of compliance would be maintained. There would be greater freedom for Soviet citizens to travel. Western and United Nations observers would be invited to the Soviet Union to witness the reforms in action. **But, as in the Czechoslovak case, the "liberalization" would be calculated and deceptive in that it would be introduced from above. It would be carried out by the party through its cells and individual members in government, the Supreme Soviet, the courts, and the electoral machinery and by the KGB through its agents among the intellectuals and scientists.** It would be the culmination of Shelepin's plans. It would contribute to the stabilization of the regime at home and to the achievement of its goals abroad. The arrest of Sakharov in January 1980 raises the question of why the KGB, which was so successful in the past in protecting state secrets and suppressing opposition while concealing the misdemeanors of the regime, is so ineffective now. Why in particular did it allow Western access to Sakharov and why were his arrest and internal exile so gratuitously publicized? The most likely answer is that his arrest and the harassment of other dissidents is intended to make a future amnesty more credible and convincing. **In that case the dissident movement is now being prepared for the most important aspect of its strategic role, which will be to persuade the West of the authenticity of Soviet "liberalization" when it comes.** Further high-level defectors, or "official émigrés," may well make their appearance in the West before the switch in policy occurs. The prediction on Soviet compliance with the Helsinki agreements is based on the fact that it was the Warsaw Pact countries and the Soviet agent Timo who initiated and pressed for CSCE process. Since the Soviets signed the CSCE agreements, they may be expected at some stage, at least, to go through

the motions of complying with them. Their present ostentatious noncompliance, noted at the follow-up conferences in Belgrade and Madrid, is intended to heighten the effect of their switch to apparent compliance in the final phase of policy. **“Liberalization” in Eastern Europe would probably involve the return to power in Czechoslovakia of Dubcek and his associates. If it should be extended to East Germany, demolition of the Berlin Wall might even be contemplated.** Western acceptance of the new “liberalization” as genuine would create favorable conditions for the fulfillment of communist strategy for the United States, Western Europe, and even, perhaps, Japan. The “Prague Spring” was accepted by the West, and not only by the left, as the spontaneous and genuine evolution of a communist regime into a form of democratic, humanistic socialism despite the fact that basically the regime, the structure of the party, and its objectives remained the same. Its impact has already been described. **A broader-scale “liberalization” in the Soviet Union and elsewhere would have an even more profound effect. Eurocommunism could be revived. The pressure for united fronts between communist and socialist parties and trade unions at national and international level would be intensified. This time, the socialists might finally fall into the trap.** United front governments under strong communist influence might well come to power in France, Italy, and possibly other countries. Elsewhere the fortunes and influence of communist parties would be much revived. The bulk of Europe might well turn to left-wing socialism, leaving only a few pockets of conservative resistance. **Pressure could well grow for a solution of the German problem in which some form of confederation between East and West Germany would be combined with neutralization of the whole and a treaty of friendship with the Soviet Union. Britain would be confronted with a choice between a neutral Europe and the United States. NATO could hardly survive this process.** The Czechoslovaks, in contrast with their performance in 1968, might well take the initiative, along with the Romanians and Yugoslavs, in proposing (in the CSCE context) the dissolution of the Warsaw Pact in return for the dissolution of NATO. **The disappearance of the Warsaw Pact would have little effect on the coordination of the communist bloc, but the dissolution of NATO could well mean the departure of American forces from the European continent and a closer European alignment with a “liberalized” Soviet bloc.** Perhaps in the longer run, a similar process might affect the relationship between the United States and Japan leading to abrogation of the security pact between them. **The EEC on present lines, even if enlarged, would not be a barrier to the neutralization of Europe and the withdrawal of American troops. It might even accelerate the process.** The acceptance of the EEC by Eurocommunist parties in the 1970s, following a period of opposition in the 1960s, suggests that this view is shared by the communist strategists. The efforts by the Yugoslavs and Romanians to create stronger links with the EEC should be seen not as inimical to Soviet interests, **but as the first steps in laying the foundation for a merger between the EEC and Comecon. The European Parliament might become an all-European socialist parliament with representation from the Soviet Union and Eastern Europe.** “Europe from the Atlantic to the Urals” would turn out to be a neutral, socialist Europe. **The United States, betrayed by her former European allies,** would tend to withdraw into fortress America or, with the few remaining conservative countries, including perhaps Japan, would seek an alliance with China as the only counterweight to Soviet power. **The greater the fear of a Soviet-socialist European coalition, the stronger the argument for “playing the China card” – on the false assumption that China is a true enemy of the Soviet Union.** “Liberalization” in Eastern Europe on the scale suggested could have a social

and political impact on the United States itself, especially if it coincided with a severe economic depression. **The communist strategists are on the lookout for such an opportunity.** Soviet and other communist economists keep a careful watch on the American economic situation. Since the adoption of the long-range policy, an Institute of World Economy and International Relations, originally under Arzumanyan and now under Inozemtsev, has been analyzing and forecasting for the Central Committee the performance of the noncommunist, and especially the American, economic system. Inozemtsev is a frequent visitor to the United States and was a member of a Soviet delegation received by the U.S. Congress in January 1978. **The communist bloc will not repeat its error in failing to exploit a slump as it did in 1929-32.** At that time the Soviet Union was weak politically and economically; next time the situation would be different. **Politically the bloc would be better poised to exploit economic depression as proof of the failure of the capitalist system.** Information from communist sources that the bloc is short of oil and grain should be treated with particular reserve, since it could well be intended to conceal preparation for the final phase of the policy and to induce the West to underestimate the potency of the bloc's economic weapons. The bloc would certainly have an interest in secretly building up reserves of oil and grain that could be used for political purposes in a time of crisis to support newly established procommunist governments in Europe or elsewhere. It is worth noting that the scale of Soviet oil exports to India is already producing political dividends for the Soviet Union. "Liberalization" in the Soviet Union could well be accompanied by a deepening of the Sino-Soviet split. This might include a rupture in trade and diplomatic relations, an increase in spectacular frontier incidents, and perhaps deeper incursions into one another's territory on the lines of the Chinese "invasion" of Vietnam in 1979 – an invasion that could well have been intended as a rehearsal for a future Sino-Soviet operation. A deepening of the split would sharpen the scissors strategy. It would encourage an even closer alignment with China of the United States and any other surviving conservative nations against a Soviet-socialist European coalition. Military cooperation would be included in this alignment and China might go so far as to offer bases in return for help in building up her military potential. In this connection, the agreements on bases between the United States and Somalia and Egypt may be a portent. A breach in diplomatic relations between the Soviet Union and China might complicate but would not interrupt the process of policy coordination between them. They have now had twenty years in which to build up experience and mutual confidence in handling a bogus split. The existing Sino-Soviet bilateral links – political, diplomatic, and economic – could have been used for the purpose of coordinating Sino-Soviet disinformation activity connected with the split. Interruption of those channels might be a handicap, but there has been time in which to prepare alternative solutions to the problem of coordination. The breach in Soviet-Albanian diplomatic relations in 1960 was not followed by a breach in relations between Albania and all the other East European communist states. Following this precedent, Romania and Yugoslavia at least might be expected to maintain their representation in Peking if the Soviets were to withdraw or be "thrown out." To some extent, Sino-Soviet coordination could be carried on through Romanian and Yugoslav intermediaries. Another possibility is that direct, secret communications links exist between the Soviet Union and China that are not accessible to the West. In addition there is the possible existence of a secret bloc headquarters staffed by senior representatives of the major communist states, to which allusion has been made above. An alignment of the Soviet Union and Eastern Europe with a socialist Western Europe would exert a powerful influence over Third World

socialist parties and trade unions. Some of the remaining conservative Third World countries would be strongly drawn toward a socialist orientation. Resistance to communism from the Socialist International would be replaced by a combined communist-socialist drive for Third World influence, backed by economic aid. It would have far-reaching consequences, especially if US aid should be curtailed in response to a severe depression. Soviet oil and grain could be used to good effect. In his article on Nicaragua, Arismendi, the leading Latin American communist strategist, envisaged international solidarity between socialists and communists in support of the "national liberation" struggle in Latin America. Cuba, which might follow the Soviet example of "liberalization" (the 1980 Cuban emigration might be part of the preparation for such a move), would play an active part in the liberation struggle. Those leaders of the nonaligned movement who had close relations with communist countries would try to involve the rest of the nonaligned movement in concerted actions with communists and social democrats to promote the joint aims of procuring the disarmament of the United States and the reduction of its role as a world power; of isolating Israel, South Africa, and Chile; and of helping liberation movements in Latin America, Southern Africa, and the Middle East, especially the PLO. A variety of forums – the UN, the OAU, and the Brandt commission on the North-South problem – would be used for exerting political and economic pressure, including, if possible, the denial of oil. In apparent competition with the Soviet Union, China would step up its Third World activity. The United States could be tempted to encourage the growth in influence of China and her associates, such as Egypt, Somalia, and the Sudan, as a barrier to Soviet expansion. American support for China would greatly improve her openings for maneuver and for making false alliances with Thailand and Islamic countries, such as Pakistan, Iran, Egypt, Saudi Arabia, and other conservative Arab states. It would also open doors for Chinese penetration of Latin America. The Soviet occupation of Afghanistan was used by the Chinese to improve their position in Pakistan. Following this pattern, more Soviet and Chinese interference could be expected in the affairs of neighbor states. Sino-Soviet "rivalry" did not impede their Third World penetration. If the Third World were to be divided into pro-Soviet and pro-Chinese camps, it would be at the expense of the interests of the United States and any other surviving conservative Western nations. The final outcome of support for Chinese influence in the Third World would be the emergence of additional regimes there that would be hostile to the West. A Soviet-socialist European coalition, acting in concert with the nonaligned movement in the United Nations, would create favorable conditions for communist strategy on disarmament. **The American military-industrial complex would come under heavy fire. "Liberalization" in the Soviet Union and Eastern Europe would provide additional stimulus to disarmament. A massive U.S. defense budget might be found no longer justified.** Even China might throw in its weight in favor of a Soviet-socialist line on arms control and disarmament. After successful use of the scissors strategy in the early stages of the final phase of policy to assist communist strategy in Europe and the Third World and over disarmament, a Sino-Soviet reconciliation could be expected. It is contemplated and implied by the long-range policy and by strategic disinformation on the split. **The communist bloc, with its recent accretions in Africa and South-East Asia, is already strong. European-backed Soviet influence and American-backed Chinese influence could lead to new Third World acquisitions at an accelerating pace.** Before long, the communist strategists might be persuaded that the balance had swung irreversibly in their favor. In that event they might well decide on a Sino-Soviet "reconciliation." **The scissors strategy would give way to the strategy of "one clenched fist."**



Former and soon-to-return Russian President and from 2008 to 2012 Prime Minister, Vladimir Putin, and Chinese President, Hu Jintao, having “elevated” Sino-Russian relations in recent years to the level of “strategic partnership”, in other words to *overt alliance*, sorting out once and for all their “border hostilities” of the past – exactly as Anatoliy Golitsyn had warned of that the scissors strategy would give way, at the end of the final phase of the communist long-range strategy, to a highly uncomfortable “one-clenched-fist”-blackmail-policy against the West. Indeed, the world has now reached exactly there! – Quite symbolically, the People’s Republic of China declared 2006 the “Year of Russia”, and in return the Russian Federation 2007 the “Year of China”.

At that point the shift in the political and military balance would be plain for all to see. Convergence would not be between two equal parties, but would be on terms dictated by the communist bloc. The argument for accommodation with the overwhelming strength of communism would be virtually unanswerable. Pressures would build up for changes in the American political and economic system on the lines indicated in Sakharov’s treatise. Traditional conservatives would be isolated and driven toward extremism. They might become the victims of a new McCarthyism of the left. The Soviet dissidents who are now extolled as heroes of the resistance to Soviet communism would play an active part in arguing for convergence. Their present supporters would be confronted with a choice of forsaking their idols or acknowledging the legitimacy of the new Soviet regime. Integration of the communist bloc would follow the lines envisaged by Lenin when the Third Communist International was founded. That is to say, the Soviet Union and China would not absorb one another or other communist states. All the countries of the European and Asiatic communist zones, together with new communist states in Europe and the Third World, would join a supranational economic and political communist federation. Soviet-Albanian, Soviet-Yugoslav, and Soviet-Romanian disputes and differences would be resolved in the wake, or possibly in advance of, Sino-Soviet

reconciliation. The political, economic, military, diplomatic, and ideological cooperation between all the communist states, at present partially concealed, would become clearly visible. **There might even be public acknowledgement that the splits and disputes were long-term disinformation operations that had successfully deceived the “imperialist” powers. The effect on Western morale can be imagined. In the new worldwide communist federation the present different brands of communism would disappear, to be replaced by a uniform, rigorous brand of Leninism. The process would be painful.** Concession made in the name of economic and political reform would be withdrawn. Religious and intellectual dissent would be suppressed. Nationalism and all other forms of genuine opposition would be crushed. Those who had taken advantage of détente to establish friendly Western contacts would be rebuked or persecuted like those Soviet officers who worked with the allies during the Second World War. **In new communist states – for example, in France, Italy, and the Third World – the “alienated classes” would be reeducated. Show trials of “imperialist agents” would be staged. Action would be taken against nationalist and social democratic leaders, party activists, former civil servants, officers, and priests. The last vestiges of private enterprise and ownership would be obliterated. Nationalization of industry, finance, and agriculture would be completed.** In fact, all the totalitarian features familiar from the early stages of the Soviet revolution and the postwar Stalinist years in Eastern Europe might be expected to reappear, especially in those countries newly won for communism. **Unchallenged and unchallengeable, a true communist monolith would dominate the world.”**

II. ANATOLIY GOLITSYN: *“The Perestroika Deception: The World’s Slide Towards the Second October Revolution (Memoranda to the Central Intelligence Agency)”, Edward Harle Ltd., London, New York 1995:*

August 1985 (page 188): “The speedy appointment of Mikhail Gorbachev as the Party leader confirms this analyst’s earlier conclusion about the cessation of power struggles in the Soviet leadership and the solution of the succession problem by the selection of the leader in advance by the Politburo. – Gorbachev was selected, coached and prepared for this appointment by the late Suslov and Andropov and by Ponomarev and Gromyko in the same way as Dubcek was chosen for the Czechoslovak leadership. Gorbachev’s speech and other indications confirm the Author’s earlier analysis about forthcoming Soviet ‘liberalisation’ which has been in preparation during the past two decades under Shelepin and Andropov. Gorbachev was selected as the ‘new generation representative’ because of his decisiveness, his demeanour and, above all, because he has been well groomed for implementing the ‘liberalisation strategy’. Another factor favouring his selection was his non-involvement in Stalin’s repression. – **There are no valid grounds for favourable illusions or for the euphoria in the West over the Gorbachev appointment and the coming ‘liberalisation’.** In fact, these developments may present a major challenge

and a serious test for the United States' leadership and for the West. The liberalisation will not be spontaneous nor will it be genuine ...”

December 1985 (page 197): “Gorbachev has launched a political offensive: The need to expose ‘his’ strategy and covert operations: **Somehow the Western media have an uncanny capacity to detect, expose and attack covert operations of the United States – but not those of the Soviet Union ...”**

March 1987 (page 10): “... The next strategic moves will include: a) Mass Jewish emigration intended to swing Western public opinion towards acceptance of ‘democratisation’ as genuine; b) The revival of ‘liberalisation’ in Poland and the introduction of economic reforms there; c) New initiatives around the time of the Pope’s visit to the USSR; d) **An initiative leading towards German federation ...”**

January 4, 1988 (page 50): “Communist Grand Strategies and Western Illusions: An assessment of Gorbachev’s visit to the United States in the light of the Grand Soviet Deception Strategy: The main purpose of General Secretary Gorbachev’s visit to the United States in December, 1987 was not to prepare for a summit meeting or to reach an agreement on a reduction of nuclear missiles but to engage the American elite in the execution of Soviet strategy and to influence it in directions favourable to the strategy. **Since the strategy presents a threat to the long-term survival of the United States, there is an acute and pressing need for a new American counter-strategy and for a new concept of counter-intelligence ...”**

September 1988 (page 66): “Western Counter-Strategy against ‘Perestroika’: Past American Strategic Mistakes in Dealing with the Communist World: After the Second World War the United States made a strategic mistake in adopting the defensive policy of containment of Communism as advocated by Ambassador Kennan. This policy failed to take into account the depth of the crisis in the Communist system at that time, the prevailing revolutionary situation in the Communist countries and the overall strength of the American nation. **At that time, the United States enjoyed a position of superiority. An offensive strategy of support and liberation for the Communist satellites in revolt would have been more appropriate. The bankruptcy of the strategy of containment was exposed by the uprisings in Hungary and Poland, when the United States missed an historic opportunity to free Eastern Europe from Soviet tyranny once and for all ...”** – (pages 68, 69): “Western Counter-Strategy against ‘Perestroika’: Improvisation should be replaced by an effective American counter-strategy against ‘perestroika’. How effective it will be depends upon how accurately the United States can assess the new situation in the USSR. Because Washington overestimated the strength and aggressiveness of the Communist camp in the immediate post-war period, the United States adopted an inadequate defensive strategy of containment. Now the risk is that the United States will underestimate the political strength and aggressiveness of the Communist camp and engage itself actively with Gorbachev and ‘perestroika’. Meanwhile, American leaders and experts on the Soviet Union remain as confused as ever by Communist disinformation on internal Soviet developments. Soviet criticism of Brezhnev (under whom the Soviets achieved military superiority), the dismissal of Yeltsin on the eve of Gorbachev’s visit to Washington, the Ligachev affair, the enlistment of Soviet religious leaders for ‘perestroika’ and the demonstration by national minorities on the eve of President Reagan’s visit to Moscow, are all part of the deliberate stage-setting

planned and organised by the Soviet strategists to encourage active American involvement in '*perestroika*'. Provoking the national minorities into agitation represents a new category of Soviet covert operations in support of the strategy, with the provocations conducted jointly by the Party apparatus, the Komsomol, the KGB, the mass organisations, religious activists and others. Occasionally, evidence of forward planning is forthcoming from the Soviets themselves. For example, an Armenian economic adviser to Gorbachev on '*perestroika*' recently let slip in talks with American Armenians in California that 'the measures for solving the Armenian conflict were already in preparation in 1987 and I myself supported them'. These operations demonstrated that the USSR, far from falling apart, is using its totalitarian resources more actively and imaginatively for strategic purposes. The sophistication of these operations contrasts sharply with the primitive 'rent-a-crowd' operations of the stagnant, repressive, Stalinist régime. **By emphasising the alleged instability of Gorbachev's position and the fragility of '*perestroika*', the operations are designed to induce an American underestimate of Soviet political strength, to create a favourable climate for Gorbachev's negotiations with American leaders and to entice them into adopting an ultimately suicidal policy of support for and engagement in '*perestroika*'.** Any US strategy of active engagement would be perilous folly. **It should never be forgotten that the ultimate objective of Soviet strategy is not '*perestroika*' in the USSR but the restructuring of the American political and economic systems including the 'military-industrial complex'.** It is this aggressive angle of Gorbachev's '*perestroika*' which American counter-strategy should address ..."

March 1990 (page 110): "The Difficulties Faced by the Western Media in Covering '*Perestroika*': The Western media are in a difficult and vulnerable situation. They have to cover the process of '*perestroika*' in the Communist countries within a frame of reference wrongly defined for them both by the Communist strategists, who naturally do their best to ensure favourable coverage of '*perestroika*' by the Western media, and by Western governments which mistakenly accept and support '*perestroika*' as a process serving Western interests. Like Western governments and their intelligence services, the Western media lack reliable sources of information on the *strategic intentions* of Communist officials. Like their governments, the Western media have been caught unprepared by the advent of '*perestroika*' and have no understanding of its origin, its motivation, its use of political and security potential or its anti-Western strategic design. All these factors contribute to the media's uncritical and inaccurate coverage of the subject ..."

September – November 1990 (page 120): "Exposing '*Perestroika*' as the Strategy for a Second October World Socialist Revolution ('Weltoktober') – The New Pattern of Non-Violent Revolution, not by Communist Parties, Dictatorships, the Soviet Army and Violence but through False Reform, Influence and the Political Action of the Soviet Forces Engaged in Party-Controlled 'Democratisation' and the So-Called Multi-Party System in the USSR – The Paramount Role of Soviet Strategic Disinformation in the Successful Execution of the '*Perestroika*' Strategy: It was not the Author's intention to submit further political Memoranda to the CIA on Soviet affairs. But he found that he could not sit idly by and watch the United States and its political leaders being taken in by Soviet strategic disinformation and overwhelmed by their own wishful thinking about the evolution of the Soviet system. He therefore decided to make a further attempt to explain the real essence of '*perestroika*', to expose its contradictions, to reveal its strategic design, to give warning of its potentially dangerous impact

on the United States and to counteract the present simplistic and over-optimistic Western view of its significance. Sooner or later informed opinion in the Western democracies will comprehend the new dimensions of the Soviet threat and the pendulum of US policy will begin to swing back from its present confusion to a greater sense of reality. The Memorandum is submitted in the hope of accelerating the process ...” – (pages 132, 133): “The Probable Outcome: Since the West does not comprehend the strategic design behind Soviet ‘democratisation’ and economic reform, it cannot foresee the probable impact of these changes on the West. The question to be addressed is not whether the changes are reversible or irreversible but what their meaning is for the West in the long run. Because of the basic differences between the Western and Soviet-style concepts of democracy and the market economy, Western attempts to educate Soviet and East European ‘instant democrats’ in true democracy and market economics are naïve and short-sighted. Optimistic expectations of long-term Western dividends from Western support for ‘perestroika’ are doomed to disappointment. Present Soviet-Western cooperation is only temporary: the East-West alliance is only tactical. Soviet-style democracy is ‘cuckoo-egg democracy’. When the chick hatches, it will display its true antagonistic nature and seek to dominate the nest. Blind to Soviet strategy, the United States will find itself increasingly marginalised in world affairs. To paraphrase an expression used by Marx, the United States will be left stranded in isolation to contemplate its own destruction and demise. The Soviet pattern of violent revolution and terror came to be understood and effectively resisted by the West. Unless the West can bring itself to understand the new, temporarily non-violent pattern, it is destined to suffer defeat. Had an improvised form of ‘perestroika’ been hastily introduced in the Soviet Union, it would have led to an anti-Communist and nationalist explosion and, conceivably, to true democracy and freedom. But the current ‘perestroika’ offensive has been launched by the Soviet strategists after *thirty years of preparation and experiment*: the risks have been calculated, and uncontrolled eruptions have been, and will continue to be, forestalled and suppressed. Western support for the Communist leaders who are imposing ‘perestroika’ from above has extinguished any remaining possibility of it evolving spontaneously towards genuine democracy. **When with Western help the Soviet strategists have overcome their deliberately exaggerated economic difficulties and can provide their population with an abundant supply of consumer goods, they will be able to demonstrate to the world the superiority of the Soviet system. They will have successfully rebuilt, restructured and renewed their society. – At that point, they will turn on the ‘hated capitalist’ and a new holocaust will result. The new holocaust will be based on class, not race. Its principal victims will be the Western political, military, religious and managerial elites.”**

April 1991 (page 136): “A Touch of Realism in Assessing the Struggle between Gorbachev’s Supporters, Yeltsin’s Supporters and Nationalists in the Soviet Republics: 1. The ‘fighting’ between Gorbachev’s supporters, Yeltsin’s supporters and the nationalist ‘independent’ Republics’ supporters, is a deliberate attempt by the Soviets to create and develop three parallel political structures of power in the USSR. The first is the Communist ‘democratic’ structure; the second is the anti-democratic structure; and the third is the nationalist ‘independent’ Republic structure, both Communist and ‘anti’-Communist. **All three structures, however, are controlled, guided and coordinated by the Communist Party and by the Communists in the Republics.** Thus, all three structures have a good chance of succeeding. When they have succeeded, **they will not give the credit to the West but will instead congratulate**

themselves on the formation of their new system which they will then try to introduce to the West as a model which the West should emulate. 2. Their new complex three-tier system will become politically stronger and more truly ‘democratic’ than the American system. Thus, it could become the foundation for the establishment of a World Government. 3. One can then expect that all the Soviets including the ‘democratic’ Communists led by Gorbachev or by another Leninist, the ‘democratic’ anti-Communists led by Yeltsin and the ‘nationalists’ of both the Communist and anti-Communist variety, may try to influence confused and naïve American politicians, Members of Congress and the American public to accept the following lines of convergence: a) That Soviet society has been renewed and has ‘solved’ its political and economic problems (without any indication of how this has occurred being evident). b) That the Soviet system has evolved into one which should serve as a model for the West, given such attractions as its free education and medical services. 4. The new strategy is designed in part to influence American society to demand similar changes in the American system. **It will be argued that the American system is decadent, deeply in debt, ridden with crime, crippled by drugs and heavily burdened with the high cost of education and the higher cost of medical care. The impact of this old-style propaganda on the American public may well be effective because of the alleged changes in the Soviet system described above.”**

August 19, 1991 (“written as news of the ‘hardliners’ coup was announced; and delivered to the CIA on August 20, 1991”; pages 137, 138): “Behind the Soviet Coup – Soviet Strategy and its Development: the Main Objectives of the Coup: **Who called the shots in the USSR before the ‘coup’ and who introduced the ‘reforms’? Gorbachev and his ‘liberals’? NO, the Party and its strategists. Who is calling the shots now and who proposed the coup to replace Gorbachev? The ‘hardliners’, the Minister of Defence and the Chief of the KGB? NO, the Party and its strategists.** The ‘coup’ was proposed in accordance with the requirements of the Soviet strategy of convergence leading to eventual World Government. This strategy and its moves, like the present Soviet ‘coup’, can only be understood in the light of the theories of one of the principal Soviet agents of influence, namely Sakharov, and his timetable for convergence. According to Sakharov, during *the first phase* the Leninist realists (i.e. Gorbachev and other ‘liberals’) will expand and strengthen ‘democracy’ and economic reform in the USSR and other socialist countries. As we know, this has already happened. According to Sakharov, in *the second phase* the pressure exerted by the Soviet example and by the internal progressive forces would lead to the victory of the Leftist Reformist Wing (the Soviet term for American liberals) which would begin to implement a programme of collaboration and convergence with the USSR on a worldwide scale, entailing changes in the structure of ownership. According to Sakharov, this phase would include an expanded role for the intelligentsia and an attack on the forces of racism and militarism. We had reached this phase before the war with Iraq. In the assessment of the Soviet strategists, the US victory over Iraq *adversely* affected the political balance in the United States. In their view, the victory weakened and demoralised the liberals (or Leftist Reformists) and strengthened the centrist and conservative forces and the US military. This disturbed Soviet plans to carry out their strategy of convergence. They saw that their main political allies in achieving convergence with the United States had been weakened. Accordingly they engineered this strategic ‘coup’ to reverse and improve the political fortunes of their American allies. Seen in strategic terms, the main purpose of Gorbachev’s ‘dismissal’ is further to confuse American opinion and to alter the political

landscape in the United States so as to accelerate the progress of the Soviet strategy and to put it back on the rails. **This strategy is a deliberate and coordinated walk towards ultimate victory by advancing first the left leg of action by ‘liberals’, then the right leg of action by ‘hardliners’ and then once more the left leg of action by ‘liberals’. The ‘dismissal’ of Gorbachev is temporary.** In earlier Memoranda I predicted a calculated ‘resignation’ by Gorbachev and his eventual return to power. The ‘coup’ confirms this prediction. According to my analysis, the ‘coup’ is aimed at intensifying American anxieties over the fate of Gorbachev and the other ‘liberals’ and ‘reformists’ in the USSR like Shevardnadze. When these concerns reach their peak, the Soviet strategists’ next move can be expected. They will return Gorbachev and other ‘liberals’ to power through a campaign of strikes and demonstrations organised by the Party. As the Soviet strategists see it, Gorbachev’s return and the restructuring of the ‘reformists’ in the USSR will also strengthen the American liberals, revive their fortunes and help them win future elections – leading eventually to the convergence of the United States and the USSR. **In short, Gorbachev’s return will be a repetition of the device of the suppression of Solidarity in Poland, followed by its victory.** The *main* purpose of the ‘coup’ is to reverse an unfavourable situation for potential Soviet allies in the United States and to create favourable conditions for the implementation of the convergence strategy. The *second* objective is to secure the non-violent creation of the new Soviet Federation of Republics. The *third* objective is to provide any potential adventurers there may be in the Soviet military with a lesson and thereby to eliminate any possibility of a genuine coup in the future.”

August 20, 1991 (“delivered to the CIA on August 21, 1991”; pages 139, 140): “A Further Analysis of the Objectives of the Soviet ‘Coup’: The point has already been made that Gorbachev will be returned to power at the moment when it best serves the Soviet strategy of convergence. Depending on the circumstances prevailing at the appropriate time, he could be returned to power through an election, after a period of other activities. His alleged removal from power and house arrest are deliberate devices to build up his popularity before such an election. Meanwhile one can expect that the Soviet strategists intend to replace him or add to his team another ace card, the ‘anti-Communist’ (but, like Gorbachev, protégé of Andropov) Boris Yeltsin, leader of the Russian Republic. As the Soviet strategists see it, Gorbachev has exhausted the influence he exerted on their behalf in the West. He was unable to extract more economic aid at the London Summit Meeting and his advice concerning a diplomatic solution to the conflict with Iraq was ignored by President Bush. **It is the strategists’ belief that Boris Yeltsin will give greater credibility in the West to Soviet economic and political ‘reform’.** He will be in a better position to exploit his influence to extract additional economic aid from the West and, in particular, to obtain from the West a commitment to a new Marshall Plan for Russia. A Marshall Plan for Russia is one of the primary interim objectives of the Soviet strategists and one that Gorbachev failed to achieve. The strategists expect that Yeltsin will be able to exert greater influence in diplomatic, economic and political relationships and will receive more cooperation in the international arena particularly in the Middle East and at the United Nations. One can expect that the Soviet strategists will come forward with fresh initiatives combined with deliberate provocations and crises in order to enhance the role of the United Nations. They will do this because they regard the United Nations as a stepping stone to a future World Government. The Soviet political game and the Soviets’ trickery in ‘manipulating’ politicians like Gorbachev and Yeltsin for Western public consumption demand more imagination and a better grasp of these

machinations from the Bush Administration. For example, to proceed with the appointment of Mr Robert Strauss as the new Ambassador in Moscow is a great mistake because the appointment is being made at a time when the Soviet strategists are deliberately undermining the credit and prestige President Bush gained from his dealings with Gorbachev. They are undercutting the President in favour of their political allies – namely, the American liberals. Nowadays the situation is more serious than it was after the Second World War. President Truman woke up to the nature of Stalin's mentality, his deeds and his intentions. **The Bush Administration, by contrast, has no understanding of Soviet strategy and its ultimate, aggressive, strategic designs against the United States.** Given this situation and the Soviet 'game plan', the President, instead of appointing a politician/businessman like Robert Strauss as American Ambassador in Moscow, should consider appointing someone like Richard Helms or General Vernon Walters – that is to say, a professional man and an intelligence expert who might see through the Soviet game plan and help the Administration as General Bedell Smith helped President Truman in 1947."

August 26, 1991 (page 141): "The Author's Analysis of the Soviet Objectives of the Calculated Soviet 'Coup' and of its Calculated 'Failure': According to my assessment, the Soviet 'coup' and its 'failure' constituted a grandiose display of deception – a provocation. The 'ineptitude' of the participants in the 'coup' and the 'failure' of it were skilfully planned and executed. **The main argument in support of this assessment is that the Soviet military, the KGB, the Party and leading media figures apparently had neither the skill to launch a successful coup nor the guts to crush resistance to it. This is news indeed!** Facing a real crisis in Hungary in 1956, the same forces displayed exceptional skill, knowhow and determination in crushing a genuine revolt. Knowledge of the Soviet mentality and of Moscow's record of ruthless action has convinced this analyst that the Soviet military, the Party and the leaders of the media all have the skill, the will and the courage to crush genuine resistance and opposition. They did not display them on this occasion because the abortive 'coup' was carried out in accordance with Party instructions; and it was the Party and the Komsomol themselves which organised the alleged resistance to it. The real participants both in the 'coup' and in the 'failure' were some 20,000 or more chosen Komsomol and Party members in Moscow with two or three tank divisions guided by their political commissars and a handful of dedicated Party officials and generals who sacrificed their prestige in the interests of the Party's strategy and under the guidance of its strategists. The calculated nature of the 'coup' and its timing show that it was staged by the Russian, President Yeltsin, to save the essence of the Union at the time of transition to a new form of federation. The abortive 'coup' and the 'resistance' to it were carefully calculated displays intended primarily for the West. This explains why Western media contacts with Moscow were not curtailed. On the contrary, the big guns of the Soviet media like Vitaliy Korotich and representatives of the Arbatov Institute were on hand both in Moscow and in the United States to 'help' the Western media with their interpretation of developments in the USSR. The episode shows how well Soviet strategists like Arbatov and his experts on the American media have mastered the art of projecting such displays for consumption *by* the American media, and throughout the West. The Soviet strategists sought to underline for the West the dramatic ineptitude of the 'coup' and the spectacular courage and resistance displayed by the new 'Russian democrats' and their leader Yeltsin in 'defending' the Soviet Parliament – their symbolic equivalent of 'The White House'. The main external objective of the display was to demonstrate to the West that Soviet democratisation is genuine, that it has the

support of the people and that it is working. They want to convince the West that Western investment in the USSR will pay dividends. **They expect that the West will now respond with a new Marshall Plan which will bring Western technology flooding in to the Soviet Union, promoting joint ventures and stimulating a restructuring of the Soviet economy along the lines of the revival of the German and Japanese economies after the Second World War.** Internally, one objective is to influence the Soviet population towards acceptance of the new Party-controlled ‘democracy’ as a real power and to develop the strength and maturity of the new ‘democratic’ structure and the popularity of its leaders, especially Yeltsin. Another objective is to exploit this staged ‘coup’ in order to reorganise and ‘reform’ the Soviet bureaucracy, the military, the intelligence and counter-intelligence organisations and the diplomatic service, and to give them a new ‘democratic’ image. The Soviet strategists realise that only with such a new image, implying a ‘Break with the past’ and severance from Communism, can these organisations be converted into effective weapons for convergence with their counterparts in the United States. A further internal objective is to emphasise the change in the system by means of the spectacular, televised but calculated removal of old Communist symbols like the monuments to Lenin and Dzerzhinskiy, and the red banners. **These changes do not represent a genuine and sincere repudiation of Soviet design and intentions to secure an eventual world victory. Although very spectacular, the changes are cosmetic.** They demonstrate only that Arbatov and others know how to manipulate American and other Western media through the use of powerful symbols such as the dismantling of the Berlin Wall, the toppling of Lenin and Dzerzhinskiy statues and Yeltsin’s staged ‘defence’ of the Soviet ‘White House’.



August 19, 1991: President of the RSFSR (Russian Soviet Federative Socialist Republic), Boris Yeltsin, on top of a tank in front of what then was the seat of the Supreme Soviet of the RSFSR, suddenly named “The White House”, playing his melodramatic part in the staged spectacle of “countering a coup attempt by old-style communists”. – Although the scene is far from convincing, the West also this time swallowed the lie.

If the Soviets were truly moving towards genuine democracy, and were intent on a true 'Break with the Past', these symbolic changes would be accompanied by the introduction and implementation of a de-communisation programme, the irrevocable (not cosmetic) prohibition of the Communist Party and Komsomol organisations at all levels throughout the USSR, and the removal of 'former' Party and Komsomol members from all the main seats of power including the KGB, the Soviet army and its political commissar administration, the Ministries, especially those for the Interior and Foreign Affairs, and the trade unions. Yeltsin has allegedly banned the Communist Party in Russia. But the question should be asked: 'Why did he forget to ban the Komsomol youth organisation?' (Note by Author, Anatoliy Golitsyn: According to 'The New York Times' of 29 September 1991, the Komsomol voted to dissolve itself; its regulations were changed '**to allow subordinate youth leagues in the Soviet Republics to succeed it**' – Bold print by Author, Anatoliy Golitsyn). To carry conviction, the necessary purge of former Communists would have to be carried out at all levels, as was the intention with the de-nazification programme in Germany after the war. Without any such programme, present changes, however impressive, will remain cosmetic. There are at present no means of distinguishing reliably between a genuine democrat and a former Communist in Russia. However one important criterion for judging the sincerity of the abrupt and virtually simultaneous conversion of former Communist leaders into true democrats would be a frank official statement from them that the Soviet Party and Government adopted a long-range strategy in the years 1958 to 1960, that '*perestroika*' is the advanced phase of this strategy, and that it is to be abandoned forthwith in favour of normal, open, civilised relations. There has been no sign whatsoever of any such admission. Further criteria for judging the sincerity of the abrupt conversion of 'former' Communist leaders into believers in true democracy would need to include: 1. An official admission that the 'dissident movement' and its leader, Sakharov, were serving the interests of that strategy under KGB control; 2. Public exposure of the main KGB agents among Soviet scientists, priests, writers and theatre and movie personalities who have been playing an active role in the KGB-controlled political 'opposition' – especially those like the 'conservative' Kochetov and the 'liberal' Tvardovskiy who in the 1960s engaged in a Party- and KGB-controlled debate intended to convey the false impression that Soviet society was evolving towards democracy; 3. And finally: a categorical repudiation of any strategic intention on the part of the Soviets of working towards 'convergence' with the United States. – **The self-evident absence of any of these criteria indicates that the symbolic changes mean no more than that the strategists had reached the conclusion that the old symbols had outlived their usefulness – at least, in the Soviet Union and Eastern Europe – and had to be replaced by new, more attractive, popular symbols.** Moreover these cosmetic changes are logical and were predicted earlier by this analyst. The Soviets realised that convergence with the United States cannot be achieved under the old compromised symbols like Lenin, Dzerzhinskiy and others associated in the Western mind with terror, repression, exile and bloodshed. Convergence requires the introduction of new, attractive, national and 'democratic' symbols conveying the impression that Soviet 'democracy' is approaching the Western model. No doubt these cosmetic changes, the reorganisation of the Soviet bureaucracy and the new, more enigmatic status of its leaders like Yeltsin will be seen by the West as a deepening of the process of Soviet 'reform', offering new opportunities for Western policy. But the West's main weakness remains unchanged: it cannot grasp the fact that it is facing an acceleration in the unfolding of Soviet convergence strategy which is intended to procure the subservience of the West

to Moscow under an ultimate Communist World Government. The Machiavellian boldness and imagination displayed by the Soviet strategists through their staged ‘coup’ and its preordained defeat are alarming. **No doubt these manoeuvres will be followed not only by faked suicides, but also by staged trials of the alleged leaders of the ‘coup’.** These leaders may well be sentenced to *apparent* prison terms. But in fact they will live in comfortable retirement in resort areas like the Crimea and the Caucasus. **Russia is a big country and places can be found for them to hide.** The ‘coup’ and its ‘defeat’ show that the Soviets will go to any lengths in pursuit of their convergence strategy. This reminds me of remarks by Vladimir Zhenikov, the former KGB *Rezident* in Finland, and Aleksey Novikov, another KGB officer, at the time the strategy was adopted in 1961. Both of them had recently returned from home leave in Moscow. When I asked for the latest news from headquarters, both replied using different words but to the same effect: This time the KGB are going to finish with capitalist America once and for all.’ I believed them then, and I believe that what is happening now is a bad omen for Western democracy. The other alarming aspect of the situation is Western euphoria and the uncritical acceptance of present Soviet developments at their face value. This shows how easily the West can be taken in by staged Soviet spectacles, and how justified the strategists are in believing that their ‘era of provocations’ will produce the intended results. Furthermore, Western euphoria and naïveté serve only to encourage the Soviet strategists to stage new spectacles more convinced than ever that their strategic designs are realistic.”

Boris Pugo, then Interior Minister of the Soviet Union, one of the – quite prominent – group of “putschists” of August 18-21, 1991, that included, among others, Head of KGB, Vladimir Kryuchkov; Defence Minister, Marshal Dmitriy Yasov; Prime Minister Valentin Pavlov; Vicepresident of the USSR, Gennadi Yanayev; Deputy Defence Minister, General Valentin Varennikov; and Secretary of the Central Committee of the CPSU, Oleg Shenin. – As the only one, Pugo was indeed announced to have, along with his wife, committed “suicide”, after the staged coup had been brought to its calculated failure (obviously in an attempt to give events greater credibility in the West). On the basis of Anatoliy Golitsyn’s analysis, one should rather assume that Pugo henceforth lived a privileged life in the hide somewhere in the vast spaces of the USSR. The other “plotters”, just as Golitsyn had predicted, were at first officially put to “arrest”, but already by 1993 released and solemnly amnestied in 1994, continuing seamlessly with their “post-Soviet” careers in business or the reformed structures of the “new Russia” or – in the case of Yasov, being already age 70 – leaving the scene for a while into temporary retirement.

Former Defence Minister and “plotter” of 1991, Marshal Dmitriy Yasov (born 1923), on November 17, 2004, being decorated by President Vladimir Putin. – Note the expression and overall posture of Yasov, showing him, as the man of the “old” Soviet Union that he is, obviously very much pleased by how things are going for “new, post-Soviet” Russia. – In this picture you have the full continuity of the Soviet Union documented, and it even doesn’t need a single comment. Strong proof of the continuity is also the fact that Yasov in 1998 (still under Yeltsin!) returned into a prominent position as advisor at the Defence Ministry of the Russian Federation!



Former Deputy Defence Minister and Commander-in-Chief of the Soviet Land Forces, as well as “plotter” of 1991, General Valentin Varennikov (1923 – 2009), and President Vladimir Putin on April 11, 2002. Varennikov was from 1995 a member of the state Duma for the Communist Party of the Russian Federation and co-founded in 2003 a new “socialist-nationalist” party named “Rodina”. – Also, carefully watch the body language of the two men (who are BOTH military men, as Putin isn’t as is always stated from the KGB but from the GRU, i.e. Soviet military intelligence, that still has kept its name till today): it shows them as part of a collective Soviet leadership and destroys the myth popular in the West of Putin, the “lonely Tsar”.



August 22, 1991, earliest morning: "Marked and traumatized" Mikhail Gorbachev's return to Moscow, and thus mythical resurrection, after three days of "isolation" and "house-arrest" at his holiday resort on the Crimea. During the subsequent transition period until the replacement of the USSR by a "new" structure in late December of the same year, Gorbachev continued to be President of a Soviet Union gradually "deprived" of its Communist Party that, after a series of decrees by the Russian President, Boris Yeltsin, was finally terminated on November 6, 1991. – In reality, however, the Party just went underground and prepared for its new task: the overall political offensive on all fronts to achieve final communist victory.

Eve of December 25, 1991 (they LOVE to usurp Christmas Day, not only for gaining maximum attention, but also for quite Satanically mocking and inverting Christianity) Formal "dissolution" of the Soviet Union and deceptive taking down of the Red Flag from the Kremlin's roof-top, one of the most powerful images in the series of staged events since 1989. – However, after 1999, marked by the leadership change from Yeltsin to Putin, step by step all the symbols from the "Soviet era" returned – in other words, the Soviet Union started again slowly to show its true face: In 2000, the old "Stalin"-anthem by Alexandrov, that had been the anthem of the Soviet Union from 1944 to 1991, was reintroduced, albeit with a slightly changed text (people had never become familiar with the Glinka-anthem, in force from 1992 to 2000, anyway), a powerful remilitarisation of the whole (still Soviet-) Russian society took place, all complete with the "return" of red flags, impressive Soviet-style military parades on Red Square, a widespread and officially "tolerated" Soviet nostalgia and even Stalin-renaissance, and finally ever more sinistre sabre-rattling and bullying against the West (that has meanwhile given way to a sense of triumph in the face of a Marxist comrade loyally executing world revolution policy right from "White House proper" at Washington D.C.). – Not to forget the "friendly" face of the dialectic in the person of internationally operating Mikhail Gorbachev who for almost twenty years has been busy with tying the Western political, journalistic, intellectual, economic, and cultural elites into the manipulative spiderweb of communist geo-strategic engineering.

March 26, 1992 (page 149): "Geopolitical Strategies of Russia, the 'Commonwealth of Independent States' and China: A Comment on Ex-President Nixon's Advice on Massive Aid to Russia: In an earlier Memorandum to the CIA this analyst explained the common Sino-Soviet long range strategy of convergence with the West and the intended exploitation for the purposes of this strategy of the new openings arising from the 'reformed' political structure of the former USSR and the emergence of the alleged 'democrats', 'non-Communists'

and ‘independents’ who are running it. The present assessment shows how, because of Western ignorance of and confusion about the strategy underlying ‘perestroika’ and because of Western political and economic support for the so-called reform of the Soviet system, the Commonwealth of Independent States (CIS) has been successfully installed and has begun to carry out concrete new geopolitical strategies within the framework of the long-standing overall Communist strategy of convergence. These strategies are still being guided and coordinated by the same Soviet strategists who have simply shifted away from the use of the old worn-out ideology and the familiar but obsolete patterns, to the exploitation of geopolitical factors and of the new potentialities of the ‘reformed’ Communist system. The common feature of these geopolitical strategies is the manipulation and use of the ‘democratic’ and ‘independent’ images which the change in form from the USSR to the CIS and its individual members has provided so abundantly and the nature of which the West has, so far, failed to comprehend. The following upgraded strategies may be distinguished: 1. *The first strategy* involves the CIS and Russia in particular dealing directly with longstanding American allies like Germany and Japan and causing their allegiance to be shifted away from the United States towards economic and political alliance with the CIS and especially with Russia. To this end Russia is exploiting American economic rivalry with Germany and Japan, together with the large-scale involvement of Germany and Japan in economic cooperation with Russia and the offer to them of lucrative market and investment opportunities in Russia. China can be expected to join in this campaign to steal away old American allies by concentrating on offering the Japanese various investment opportunities in China. 2. *The second upgraded strategy* involves the use of the new ‘independent’ Muslim states in the CIS to establish and develop economic and political cooperation with the fundamentalists in Iran and elsewhere in the Muslim world. According to this assessment the much-advertised feud between the Armenians and the Azerbaijanis of Turkish descent in Nagorno-Karabakh may be a tactical ploy to involve Turkey, Iran and other Muslim countries in support of eventual alliance with Azerbaijan and other Central Asian Muslim states in the CIS. This strategy takes into account the growing power of the fundamentalists and the possibility of their gaining control over substantial oil reserves. A primary objective of the strategy here is to achieve a partnership with the fundamentalists in Iran and Algeria and to replace the present American-oriented rulers of Saudi Arabia with fundamentalists. The opening in Saudi Arabia of a Russian Embassy and the probable opening of Embassies by Muslim states of the CIS should be seen, not only as an attempt to extract a few extra Saudi billions, but as part of an offensive to bring about a political reorientation in that country. Chinese Muslims can also be expected to play an active role in promoting alliances with the fundamentalists. The supply of missiles to Iran by the Chinese should be looked at in the context of this strategy. 3. *The third strategy* is to facilitate a shift of the emerging regime in South Africa from the Western sphere of influence towards close economic and political cooperation and alliance with the CIS using for this purpose old friendships with leaders of the African National Congress and the South African Communist Party with which it is effectively merged. One can expect that the offensive to facilitate such a partnership will become more active and more visible than ever, after the ‘reforms’ in the CIS and South Africa have stabilised. 4. *The fourth strategy* is that of using and manipulating the changes in the former Soviet Union to bring about, in the longer run, radical changes in relations between the United States and Israel, in the political power structure in Israel itself, in Israel’s position in the Middle East and in world opinion towards Israel. The fact that the new leaders in

Russia have promised the withdrawal of Soviet troops from Germany, the Baltic countries and Poland, and that they are insisting on a seven-year term for the strategic arms reduction treaty being negotiated with the United States, are indications that the Russian strategists have their own timetable. This is not based on what is going to occur in the CIS according to the optimistic expectations of Western observers, but rather upon the Soviet estimate of the time needed for the strategies described above to take effect. The possibility that the United States will lose valuable allies during this period is not something new. There is nothing permanent in international relations. The Americans experienced this not so long ago when they *suddenly* lost Iran. **The vulnerability of the United States arises from the fact that its basic premises, assumptions and perceptions about the present and future of Russia and the CIS are wrong. Where the United States sees golden opportunities, it is in reality facing traps set for it by the Soviet long-range strategists. The impact on the United States of the successful execution of these strategies would be devastating.** The loss of old allies and the loss of oil reserves, following the equally catastrophic loss of South Africa, would result in the re-emergence of the CIS and China as stronger adversaries, and in an 'irreversible' change in the balance of world power in their favour. The United States would be weakened and divided and the pressure for the impetus towards convergence of the CIS and China with the United States on Sino-Russian terms would be intensified. – The Dangerous Advice of Mr Richard Nixon: In this context a comment need to be made on former President Nixon's criticism of President Bush for giving insufficient aid to Russia and his recommendation that massive economic technological aid comparable in scale to the Marshall Plan should be provided to the CIS. Nixon suggested that the present administration was missing an historic opportunity to help Yeltsin and to transform Russia into a democracy. This analyst believes Mr. Nixon's advice to be erroneous and damaging to the vital interests of the United States for three important reasons: 1. Mr. Nixon has no understanding of the true nature and meaning of the changes in the former Soviet Union. He does not appreciate the calculated origin of the new realities there. He fails to see that 'perestroika' and the introduction of quasi-democracy and limited capitalism are all being carried out on the lines of Lenin's New Economic Policy within the framework of the long-range strategy adopted by the Soviet and Chinese leaders in 1958-60. 2. Mr. Nixon puts too much trust in the former Communist leaders and in their instant conversion into 'democrats', 'non-Communists' and 'independents'. He does not realise that this is a tactical conversion along the lines of Lenin's classic advice to Communists to abandon leftist and revolutionary phrases and to adopt a rightist, opportunistic image in order to achieve their strategic objectives. 3. Mr. Nixon ignores the geopolitical strategic designs of the present leaders of the CIS and China aimed at weakening the United States and at achieving convergence. Even more important, he misinterprets the motive forces at work in the structure of the CIS. Following his advice by extending massive aid to the CIS will have the opposite effect to that which he intends. **It will not transform Russia into a democracy and it will not prevent a new despotism there. But it will finance the transformation of Russia and the CIS into a more viable, more powerful adversary of the United States which will resume its old ideological hostility towards genuine American democracy and capitalism.** It will allow the leaders of the CIS and Communist China to accelerate the pace at which they carry out their aggressive strategies against the United States and its present allies. And it will lubricate slush funds, directing hard currency into offshore bank accounts to finance intelligence activities. Here in the United States we have a high regard for Mr Nixon's

opinions. But it is more important to consider how the leaders of the CIS regard Mr Nixon and his metamorphosis from a fervent anti-Communist into a strong supporter of Gorbachev, Yeltsin and '*perestroika*', and an advocate of massive aid to Russia. The question was put somewhat diplomatically to the Russian Ambassador, Lukin, by a Western journalist. Watching Ambassador Lukin on the television screen while he was giving his cunning reply, this analyst was left in no doubt that the CIS leaders regard Mr Nixon's conversion in the light of Lenin's alleged advice on how to assess and deal with Western politicians. Lenin is supposed to have divided Western politicians into two categories: those who were clever, anti-Communist adversaries who should be taken on, confronted and dealt with seriously; and those who were confused and 'useful idiots', who could be exploited up to the hilt in the Communist interest. Since the Soviet long-range strategy and its final phase of '*perestroika*' were based upon Lenin's New Economic Policy experience and were imbued with Leninist spirit and thought, it is natural that successive Communist leaders should have seen Mr Nixon through Lenin's eyes. In 1959, when Mr. Nixon held strongly anti-Communist views, Khrushchev, who initiated the long range strategy designed to bury capitalism in America, invited him to Moscow through the Soviet ambassador in Washington and took him seriously – that is to say, flattered him – by debating his views on Communism with him. Brezhnev took him equally seriously by simultaneously engaging him in SALT negotiations while fighting him in Vietnam, and then concluding the agreement on Vietnam which led to the American defeat there. During the impeachment process, Soviet officials mocked Mr. Nixon. According to an American reporter, Soviet officials and journalists asked him at the time with obvious sarcasm: 'What are you doing to our Nixon?'

Now that Mr Nixon is Yeltsin's most ardent supporter and exponent of the case for a Marshall Plan for the CIS, its leaders must be laughing their heads off recalling Lenin's phrase about 'useful idiots' – while harvesting the benefits of Mr Nixon's support for their devious policies. – Retaining the Capacity to Think: US intelligence agencies should be on the lookout for signs of the implementation of the geopolitical strategies of the CIS and its members and should provide policymakers with timely warnings. To be successful, these agencies must first distance themselves from the superficial assessments of ignorant television commentators who accept at face value everything that emanates from CIS officials or TV channels. They should focus on developing reliable human intelligence on the real strategic intentions and actions of the CIS and should analyse developments in terms of the geopolitical strategies described above. The 'reformed' KGB is active and its intelligence offensive against the West continues as before. In fact, its political and operational capabilities have been broadened. Instead of the familiar unified KGB the West is now faced with fifteen KGBs which have not only changed their names, but have adopted a new *modus operandi* – or, to cite Lenin, a 'new way of working'. **The Central Intelligence Agency's analysts should ask themselves the question why, if Communism is really 'dead', if the USSR has really disintegrated and if the Communist ship of state is really sinking, there has not been a wave of high-level defectors comparable to and greater than the wave which occurred after the death of Stalin in 1953.** High-level defectors might have been expected not only from the intelligence and security services but from the armed forces, the Central Committee apparatus, the diplomatic service and Arbatov's Institute for the Study of the USA and Canada. **The absence of high-level defectors of such calibre to date indicates that the former Soviet machinery of state has been successfully transformed into the 'state of the whole people'**, as envisaged in the Party programme adopted by the 22nd Party Congress in October-November 1961. The armed services of the CIS remain a

formidable force with nuclear capability as well as political commissars. The United States should be on guard and should conserve its military strength because basic American assumptions about the military strategies of Russia and China will turn out to have been confused, if not totally erroneous. The United States should ignore Mr Nixon's advice and steer clear of deep economic and technological commitments to Russia, the CIS and China. It should warn its allies such as Japan, Germany and France against such commitments. It should concentrate on addressing the immediate problems which beset the country at home and undermine its strength. Abroad it should pursue an active foreign policy to maintain its position of world leadership, preserving and strengthening its alliances. But, for all this to be possible, it must first shed its naïve illusions about the nature of the changes that have occurred in the 'ex'-Soviet Union (CIS). It must recognise that democratisation there is false and that the fundamental nature of the adversary has not changed: only its strategy and tactics have changed, in that they have become more candid, more realistic and more dangerous. Only if the United States comprehends the calculated nature of the changes and the Leninist strategy which lies behind them, will it wake up to the realisation that financing the economic revival of the present Russian/CIS system will enable the strategists to pursue more effectively their objectives of engineering an irreversible shift in the world balance of power and eventual convergence with the West. **This 'convergence' is to take place not on the West's terms – as élite Western globalists surely imagine – but rather on the terms intended by the Leninist strategic planners. The resulting 'one world' will be Marxist-Leninist-Gramscian-Communist – hardly what unwitting Western collaborators truly want to see established."**

April 30, 1993 (pages 165, 166): "[...] Similarly, current and future Western aid for Russia will fail to deflect the Russian leaders from their long-term objectives of world hegemony which they will continue to pursue in concert with the Communist Chinese. **While US policymakers are mobilising massive Western support for Russia and building up optimistic expectations of the future for democracy there, the same Soviet strategists as before are quietly carrying out their strategy.** As this analyst has argued in previous Memoranda and publicly in '*New Lies for Old*', the late Academician Sakharov under the guise of a 'dissident' was used as an unofficial mouthpiece of the former Soviet régime before being officially 'rehabilitated' and lionised under Gorbachev's '*perestroika*'. In the late 1960s he went some way towards expressing publicly the essence of Soviet strategy, though without revealing that the developments he foresaw were deliberately planned. He predicted that in the period 1968 to 1980 'a growing ideological struggle in the socialist countries between Stalinist and Maoist forces on the one hand and the realistic forces of leftist Leninist Communists (and leftist Westerners) on the other will lead... in the Soviet Union... first to a multi-Party system and acute ideological struggle and discussions and then to the ideological victory of the (Leninist) realists, affirming the policy of increasing peaceful coexistence, strengthening democracy and expanding economic reforms'. The period 1972 to 1985 would be characterised by pressure from the progressive forces in the West combining with pressure from the example of the socialist countries to implement a programme of convergence with socialism, 'i.e. social progress, peaceful coexistence and collaboration with socialism on a world scale and changes in the structure of ownership. This phase includes an expanded role for the intelligentsia and an attack on the forces of racism and militarism'. In 1972 to 1990, 'the Soviet Union and the United States, having overcome their alienation, solve the problem of saving the poorer half of the world... At the same time disarmament

will proceed'. In 1980 to 2000, 'socialist convergence will reduce differences in social structure, promote intellectual freedom, science and economic progress, and lead to the creation of a World Government and the smoothing of national contradictions.' All Sakharov's main predictions have so far been fulfilled with the exception of Russian-American partnership in solving the problem of the poorer half of the world and the creation of a World Government. **What Sakharov, like the present Russian leaders, clearly had in mind was East-West convergence on socialist terms leading to World Government dominated by the Russians and the Chinese.** But ignoring the long-term strategy behind the developments in Russia, US policymakers have plunged into partnership with the so-called 'Russian reformers' without realising where this partnership is intended by them to lead. Sakharov foresaw World Government by the year 2000. The question may indeed be on the agenda within the next seven years. **Within that period, if present trends continue, Russia, with Western help, may well be on the road to a technological revolution surpassing the Chinese Communist 'economic miracle' without loss of political control by the present governing élite of 'realistic Leninists'.** A campaign for a new system of World Government will be launched at Summit level and will be accompanied by pressure from below, the active use of agents of influence and secret assassinations of leaders who are seen as obstacles. The campaign will come as a surprise to the US Administration. In the ensuing negotiations, the US President of the day will find himself facing combined pressure from the Russians and the Chinese. The Chinese will by then have adopted a 'reformed', pseudo-democratic system. In the course of the negotiations the Russians and the Chinese will begin to reveal their true colours, their fundamental antagonism to the free world and the threat they represent to it. The US policy of partnership with Russia will be exposed as bankrupt. Internally in the United States this will lead to divisions, recriminations and a search for scapegoats. Externally, the reputation of the United States as the leader of the free world will be irreparably damaged and its alliances, particularly with countries like Japan which have been pressured into helping the Russians out, will be jeopardised. **The US President will find himself without the finest armed services in the world. Reformed and cut back by budget reductions based on mistaken assessments of long-term threats, the services will be equipped for handling regional conflicts but will be unprepared for global confrontation.** US intelligence and counter-intelligence, if they survive, will have lost any remaining effectiveness from continuing financial pressure and a campaign of revisionist allegations like those that the CIA and the FBI were involved respectively in the assassinations of President Kennedy and Dr Martin Luther King. **Too late it will be realised that there have been no equivalent reductions in the power and effectiveness of the Russian and Chinese armed forces or their intelligence and security services.** A real swing in the balance of power in favour of a Sino-Soviet alliance vis-à-vis the free world will have taken place giving the Russian and Chinese a preponderant share in setting up the new World Government system and leaving the West with little choice but to compete with them in designing the New World Social Order. **If the Russian leaders continue to demonstrate to the Russian people that they can successfully extract Western aid and contribute to signs of economic progress, the Russian people will follow them and, like the Chinese, will end up laughing with their leaders at the folly of the West."**



III. YURI BEZMENOV (1939–1997?), another one of the very few authentic and genuine Soviet defectors; Bezmenov had worked as a disinformant with the Novosti Press Agency, and as a KGB-officer at the Soviet Embassy at New Delhi, where he was basically recruiting gullible intellectuals, politicians etc. for the cause of the world revolution. Bezmenov, the “conservative Soviet diplomat”, defected in 1970 by disappearing in the guise of a “very progressive American hippie” and flying out of India to Greece, where he called in at the US Embassy at Athens: *“Deception Was My Job” – On Soviet Disinformation and Overall Soviet Strategy towards winning their World Revolution*; an interview recorded in 1984; 82 minutes; host: G. Edward Griffin. – Extracts (check out the full interview as presented on this author’s Youtube channel www.youtube.com/user/Contemplatix under the title: “Yuri Bezmenov: Unlike Myself, You’ll Have Nowhere to Defect To!”)

Griffin: “[...] Mr. Bezmenov, I’d like to begin by having you tell us a little bit about your childhood memories.”

Bezmenov: “Well, the most vivid memory of my childhood was Second World War or, to be more precise, the end of the Second World War **when all of a sudden United States from a friendly nation, which helped us to defeat Nazism, turned overnight into a deadly enemy.** And it was very shocking because all newspapers were trying to present an image of belligerent, aggressive American imperialism. Most of the things that we were taught is that United States is aggressive power which is just about to invade our beautiful, free, socialist country, that American CIA is dropping Colorado beetles on our beautiful potatoe fields to eliminate our crops, and each schoolboy had a picture of Colorado bug on the back of his notebook, and we were instructed to go into collective fields to search for those little Colorado bugs. Of course, we couldn’t find any; neither we could find many potatoes, and that was explained again by the encroachments of the ‘decadent, imperialist power’. The anti-American paranoia, hysteria in the Soviet propaganda was of such a high degree that many less skeptical people, or less stubborn, would really believe that United States is just about to invade our beautiful motherland, and some secretly hoped that it *will* come true.”

G: “That’s interesting!”

B: “Yeees!”

G: “We are getting back to life inside the Soviet Union, or inside communist countries in general. In this country, at the university level primarily, we read and hear that the Soviet system is different from ours, but not that different and that there is a convergence developing between all of the systems of the world and that it really doesn’t make an awful lot of difference what system you live

under because you have corruption and dishonesty and tyranny and all that sort of thing. From your personal experience: what is the difference between life under communism and life in the United States?"

B: "Well, life is obviously very much different for the simple reason that the Soviet Union is a state-capitalist – economically -, **it's a state-capitalism where an individual has absolutely no rights, no value, his life is nothing, he is just an insect, he is disposable.**" [...]

G: "Mr. Bezmenov, we read a lot about the concentration camps and the slave labour camps under the Stalin regime. Now, the general impression in America is that those things are part of the past. Are they still going on today, or what is their status?"

B: "**Yes. – There is no qualitative change in the Soviet concentration camp system. There are changes in numbers of prisoners; again, this is unreliable Soviet statistics. We don't know how many political prisoners are there in the Soviet concentration camps. What we sure know from various sources that at each particular time there are close to 25 or 30 millions of Soviet citizens who are virtually kept as slaves in forced labour camp system; size of population of a country like Canada is serving terms as prisoners.**"

G: "Incredible!"

B: "So, I would say that those intellectuals who try to convince American public that concentration camp system is a thing of the past, are either consciously misleading public opinion, or they are not very intellectual people, they are selectively blind. They lack intellectual honesty when they say that."

G: "Well, we've spoken about the intellectuals in this country and also the intellectuals in the Soviet Union. What about down at the broad level? Do the people in general, the working people, the workers in general in the Soviet Union, do they support the system, do they tolerate it, what is their attitude?"

B: "**Well. Average Soviet citizen – if there is such an animal, of course – does not like the system because it hurts, it kills.** He may not understand the reasons, he may not have enough information or educational background to understand, but I doubt very much there are many people who are consciously supporting the Soviet system. There are not such people in USSR. Even those who have all the reasons to enjoy socialism, people like myself, who were members of journalistic elite, they also hate system for different reasons, not because they lack material affluence but because they are unfree to think, they are in constant fear: duplicity, split personality; this is the greatest tragedy for my nation."

G: "What do you think are the chances of the people actually overcoming their system or replacing it?"

B: "There is a great possibility that system will sooner or later be destroyed from within. There is a self-destructive mechanism built into any socialist or communist or fascist system because there is lack of feed-back, because the system does not rely upon loyalty of population. **But, until [i.e. as long as] the Soviet junta is being supported by the Western so-called imperialists, that is multinational companies, establishments, governments, and – let's face**

it – intellectuals (so-called *academia* in the United States is famous for supporting the Soviet system), as long as the Soviet junta will keep on receiving credits, money, technology, grain deals, and political recognition from all these traitors of democracy, or freedom, there is no hope, there is not much hope for changes in my country, and the system will not collapse by itself, simply because it's being nourished by so-called American imperialism. This is the greatest paradox in history of mankind when the capitalist world supports and actively nourishes its own destroyer, *destructor!*"

G: "Hmmm. I think you are trying to tell us something, in this country."

B: "**Oh yes, I'm trying to tell you that it has to be stopped, unless you want to end up in Gulag system and 'enjoy' all the 'advantages' of socialist equality: working for free, catching flees on your body, sleeping on planks of plywood – in Alaska this time, I guess -, that's where Americans will belong, unless they will wake up, of course, and force their government to stop aiding Soviet Fascism.**" [...]

B: "This picture shows the part of the building of USSR embassy, and my supervisor on the left is Comrade Mehdi, an Indian communist, on the right Comrade Mitrokhin, my supervisors in the secret Department of Research and Counter-Propaganda. It has nothing to do with either research or counter-propaganda. Most of the activity of that department was to compile huge amount, volume, of information on individuals who were instrumental in creating public opinion: publishers, editors, journalists, actors, educationalists, professors of political science, members of parliament, representatives of business circles. Most of these people were divided roughly in two groups: those who would toe the Soviet foreign policy, they would be promoted to the positions of power through media- and public opinion manipulation; those who refused the Soviet influence in their own country would be character-assassinated or executed physically; calm revolution. **Same way as in the small town of Huê in South Vietnam. Several thousands of Vietnamese were executed in one night when the city was captured by Vietcong for only two days. And American CIA could never figure out how could possibly communists know each individual, where he lives, where to get him, and would be arrested in one night, basically in some four hours before dawn, put on a van, taken out of the city limits, and shot. The answer is very simple: long before communists occupied the city, there was extensive network of informers, local Vietnamese citizens, who knew absolutely everything about people who were instrumental in public opinion, including barbers and taxidrivers. Everyone who was sympathetic to the United States, was executed.** Same thing was done under the guidance of the Soviet embassy in Hanoi, and same thing I was doing in New Delhi. **To my horror, I discovered that in the files where people were doomed to execution there were names of pro-Soviet journalists with whom I was personally friendly!"**

G: "**Pro-Soviet?**"

B: "**Yes! They were idealistically-minded leftists who made several visits to USSR, and yet the KGB decided that – calm revolution or drastic changes in political structure of India – they will have to go."**

G: "**Why is that?"**

B: “**Because [laughing] they know too much. Simply. Because, you see, the useful idiots, the leftists who are idealistically believing in the beauty of Soviet socialist, or communist, or whatever system, when they get disillusioned, they become the worst enemies.** That’s why my KGB instructors specifically made a point, ‘Never bother with leftists! Forget about these political prostitutes! Aim higher,’ this was my instruction, ‘try to get into large-circulation, established, conservative media! Reach filthy rich movie makers, intellectuals, so-called academic circles, cynical, egocentric people who can look into your eyes with angelic expression and tell you a lie!’ These are the most recruitable people, people who lack moral principles, who are either too greedy or suffer from self-importance, they feel that they matter a lot. These are the people who KGB wanted very much to recruit.”

G: “**But to eliminate the others, to execute the others: don’t they serve some purpose, wouldn’t they be the ones to rely on?**”

B: “**No, they serve purpose only at the stage of destabilisation of a nation. For example, your leftists in the United States, all these professors and all these beautiful civil rights defenders, they are instrumental in the process of the subversion only to destabilise a nation. When their job is completed, they are not needed any more, they know too much.** Some of them, when they get disillusioned, when they see that Marxist-Leninists come to power, obviously they get offended, they think that *they* will come to power; that will never happen, of course: they will be lined up against the wall and shot. But they may turn into the most bitter enemies of Marxist-Leninists when they come to power. And that’s what happened in Nicaragua, you remember: most of these former Marxist-Leninists were either put to prison, or one of them split and now he is working against Sandinistas. It happened in Grenada when Maurice Bishop was, he was already a Marxist, he was executed by a new Marxist who was more Marxist than this Marxist. Same happened in Afghanistan when first there was Taraki, he was killed by Amin, then Amin was killed by Babrak Kamal with the help of KGB. Same happened in Bangla Desh when Mujibur Rahman, very pro-Soviet leftist, was assassinated by his own Marxist-Leninist military comrades. It’s the same pattern everywhere: the moment they’ve served their purpose, all the useful idiots are used, either be executed entirely, all the idealistically-minded Marxists, or exiled or put in prisons like in Cuba, many former Marxists are in prison.” [...]

B: “[...] One of the reasons not to defect was, as you can see, I was living in relative affluence. **Who, the hell, in the normal mind, would defect and do what? To be abused by your media? To be called McCarthyist and fascist and paranoid? Or to drive a taxi in New York City? What for, what, the hell, for should I defect? To be abused by Americans? To be insulted in exchange for my effort to bring the truthful information about impending danger of subversion?**” [...]

G: “[...] Well, you spoke several times before about ideological subversion. That is a phrase that, I’m afraid, some Americans don’t fully understand. When the Soviets use the phrase “ideological subversion”, what do they mean by that?”

B: “**Ideological subversion is the process which is legitimate, overt, and open; you can see it with your own eyes. All you have to do, all American mass-media has to do is to unplug their bananas from their ears, open their**

eyes, and they can see it! There's no mystery, there is nothing to do with espionage. I know that espionage-intelligence-gathering looks more romantic, it sells more deodorants through the advertising, probably; that's why Hollywood producers are so crazy about James-Bond-type of thrillers, **but in reality the main emphasis of the KGB is not in the area of its intelligence at all!** According to my opinion, and opinion of many defectors of my calibre, only about 15% of time, money, and man-power is spent on espionage as such. The other 85% is a slow process which we call either "ideological subversion", or "active measures" (*aktivniye meropriyatiya*, in the language of the KGB), or "psychological warfare". What it basically means is to change the perception of reality, of every American, to such an extent that, despite their abundance of information, no one is able to come to sensible conclusions in the interests of defending themselves, their families, their community, and their country. It's a great brainwashing process which goes very slow, and it's divided in four basic stages. The first one being: demoralisation. It takes from 15 to 20 years to demoralise a nation. Why that many years? Because this is the minimum number of years which requires to educate one generation of students in the country of your enemy, exposed to the ideology of the enemy; in other words: **Marxism-Leninism ideology is being pumped into the softheads of at least three generations of American students, without being challenged or counter-balanced by the basic values of Americanism, American patriotism. The result?** The result you can see: Most of the people who graduated in the sixties, drop-outs or half-baked intellectuals, are now occupying the positions of power in the government, civil service, business, mass-media, educational system. You are stuck with them. You cannot get rid of them. They are contaminated, they are programmed to think and react to certain stimuli in a certain pattern. You cannot change their mind, even if you expose them to authentic information, even if you prove that white is white and black is black, you still cannot change the basic perception and the logical behaviour. In other words, these people – the process of demoralisation is complete and irreversible. To get rid society of these people, you have, you need another 20 or 15 years to educate a new generation of patriotically-minded and common-sense people who would be acting in favour and in the interests of the United States society."

G: "And yet, these people have been programmed and, as you say, in place and who are favorable to an opening with the Soviet concept. These are the very people who would be marked for extermination in this country?"

B: "Most of them, yes. Simply because the psychological shock when they will see in future what the "beautiful society of equality and social justice" means in practice, obviously they will revolt. They will be very unhappy, frustrated people. And the Marxist-Leninist regime does not tolerate these people. Obviously, they will join the links of dissenters, dissidents. Unlike in present United States, there will be no place for dissent in future Marxist-Leninist America. Here you can get popular like Daniel Ellsberg and filthy rich like Jane Fonda for being "dissident", for criticising your Pentagon. **In future, these people will be simply squashed like cock-croaches; nobody is going to pay them nothing for their beautiful, noble ideas of equality! This they don't understand, and it will be greatest shock for them, of course.** The demoralisation process in the United States is basically completed already. For the last 25 years – actually, it's overfulfilled because demoralisation now reaches such areas where previously not even Comrade Andropov and all his

experts would even dream of such a tremendous success. Most of it is done by Americans to Americans, thanks to lack of moral standards. **As I mentioned before, exposure to true information does not matter any more. A person who was demoralised, is unable to assess true information. The facts tell nothing to him. Even if I shower him with information, with authentic proof, with documents, with pictures, even if I take him by force to the Soviet Union and show him concentration camp, he will refuse to believe it - until he is going to receive a kick in his fat bottom. When the military-boot crashes his balls, then he will understand, but not before that. That's the tragic of the situation of demoralisation.** So, basically, America is stuck with demoralisation, and unless – even if you start right now, here, this minute you start educating a new generation of Americans: it will still take you 15 to 20 years to turn the tide of ideological perception of reality back to normalcy and patriotism. – The next stage is destabilisation. This time, subverter does not care about your ideas and the patterns of your consumption, whether you eat junk-food and get fat and flabby, doesn't matter any more. This time, and it takes only from 2 to 5 years to destabilise a nation, what matters is essentials: economy, foreign relations, defence systems. **And you can see it quite clearly that in some areas, in such sensitive areas as defence and economy, the influence of Marxist-Leninist ideas in the United States is absolutely fantastic. I could never believe it 14 years ago when I landed in this part of the world that the process will go that fast.** – The next stage, of course, is crisis. It may take only up to six weeks to bring a country to the verge of crisis, you can see it in Central America now. – **And after crisis, with a violent change of power structure and economy, you have, so-called, the period of "normalisation"; it may last indefinitely. "Normalisation" is a cynical expression borrowed from Soviet propaganda: when the Soviet tanks moved into Czechoslovakia in '68, Comrade Brezhnev said, "Now the situation in brotherly Czechoslovakia is normalised".** This is what will happen in the United States if you allow all these schmucks to bring the country to crisis, to promise people all kind of goodies and the paradise on earth, to destabilise your economy, to eliminate the principle of free market competition, and to put a **big-brother-government in Washington, DC**, with the neverland dictators like Walter Mondale who will promise loots of things, never mind whether the promises are fulfilled or not; he will go to Moscow to kiss the bottoms of new generation of Soviet assassins, never mind, he will create false illusions that the situation is under control. **Situation is not under control. Situation is disgustingly out of control!** Most of the American politicians, media, and educational system trains another generation of people who think they are living at a peace time. **False! United States is in a state of war! Undeclared, total war against the basic principles and the foundations of this system!** And the initiator of this war is not Comrade Andropov, of course. It's the system; however ridiculous it may sound: the **World Communist System, or the World Communist Conspiracy!** Whether I scare some people or not, I don't give a hoot; if you are not scared by now, nothing can scare you! – But you don't have to be paranoid about it. – What actually happens now that, unlike myself, you have literally several years to live on, unless the United States wake up. The time bomb is ticking. With every second – tick, tick – the disaster is coming closer and closer. **Unlike myself, you will have nowhere to defect to - unless you want to live in Antarctica with penguins. This is it; this is the last country of freedom and possibility."**

G: "Okay. So, what do we do? What is your recommendation to the American people?"

B: "Well, the immediate thing that comes to my mind, is of course: There must be a very strong national effort to educate people in the spirit of real patriotism, number one. Number two, to explain them the real danger of socialist-communist-whatever welfare state, big-brother-government. **If people will fail to grasp the impending danger of that development, nothing ever can help United States, you may kiss good-bye to your freedom, including freedoms to homosexuals, to prison-inmates, all these freedoms will vanish, will evaporate in 5 seconds, including your precious lives.** The second thing: at the moment at least part of the United States population is convinced that the danger *is real*, they have to force their government – and I'm not talking about sending letters, signing petitions and all these beautiful, noble activities -, **I'm talking about forcing United States government to stop aiding communism; because there is no other problem more burning and urgent than to stop the Soviet military-industrial complex from destroying whatever is left of the free world.** And this is very easy to do: no credits, no technology, no money, no political or diplomatic recognition, and, of course, no such idiocies as grain deals to USSR. **The Soviet people, 270 millions of Soviets will be eternally thankful to you if you stop aiding a bunch of murderers, who sit now in Kremlin and whom President Reagan respectfully calls "government".** They do not govern anything, least of all such complexity as the Soviet economy. So, basically, two very simple, maybe too simplistic answers or solutions. Nevertheless, they are *the only solutions!* **Educate yourself! Understand what's going on around you! You are not living at a time of peace; you are in the state of war! And you have precious little time to save yourselves.** You don't have much time, especially if we are talking about young generation, there's not much time left for convulsions and sexual masturbations to the beautiful disco-music. Very soon it will go [snapping] just, just overnight. **If we are talking about capitalists, or wealthy businessmen, they, I think, they are selling the rope on which they will hang very soon. If they don't stop, if they cannot curb their insatiable desire for profit and they will keep on trading with the monster of Soviet Communism, they are going to hang, very soon. And they will pray to be killed, but unfortunately they will be sent to Alaska, probably, to manage industry of slaves.** It's simplistic; I know it sounds unpleasant; I know Americans don't like to listen to things which are unpleasant, but I have defected not to tell you the stories about such idiocies as microfilm-James-Bond-type espionage, this is garbage, you don't need any espionage any more. **I have come to talk about: SURVIVAL! It's a question of survival of this system. You may ask me what is it then for me: survival, obviously, because, unlike – as I said: I am now in your boat! If we sink together, we will sink beautifully – together. THERE IS NO OTHER PLACE ON THIS PLANET TO DEFECT TO!"**

IV. "RENDEZVOUS WITH DEATH: WHY JOHN F. KENNEDY HAD TO DIE" – 2006 documentary film on the 'Cuban connection'; superb 88-minute documentary film by German filmmaker Wilfried Huismann, script contributions by American author Gus Russo ("Live by the Sword: The Secret War Against Castro and the Death of JFK", Bancroft Press, Baltimore 1998); English version apparently unavailable except for one copy at: <http://rutube.ru/tracks/5027380.html>. (There's a German copy on Google videos: 'Rendezvous mit dem Tod'; the official DVD, German version only, can be ordered via amazon.com). Filming took place from January till May 2005; first broadcast on German TV, ARD, on January 4, 2006. The film has been widely discussed in the media, German and other, e.g. in the German weekly 'Der Spiegel', on the websites of the BBC and The Telegraph, and certainly also in the United States. The political left in Germany went literally berserk over it. (The fact that Wilfried Huismann has a fairly distinct leftist background himself may appear as a paradox; on the other hand, without his contacts in Latin America this film most likely wouldn't have become what it is!)

In lieu of a summary: The Witnesses. The Deniers. Historical Audio Documents. Historical Film Sequences. Historical Written Documents.

1. THE WITNESSES

1.1. Americans

Alexander Haig († February 20, 2010), Army General; Military Advisor under President Kennedy; White House Chief of Staff under Presidents Nixon and Ford; Secretary of State under President Reagan; participated in 1963 as a young major in covert sabotage programmes against Cuba: there were "three raids a week" against mainland Cuba, demolition of bridges, sugar mills, and other Cuban infrastructure. Robert Kennedy conducted at least eight (!) attempts to assassinate Castro. Reports from Castro himself frequently communicated, "Stop! Stop!" In other words, Castro issued threats in return. – Back to Washington, the new President, Lyndon B. Johnson, immediately convened a meeting in Robert McNamara's office attended by the Cuban Coordinating Committee. In that meeting, according to Haig, Johnson said: "We simply must not allow the American people to believe that Fidel Castro could have killed our President!" Johnson feared a right-wing uprising that would keep the Democratic Party out of power for two generations. However, he was convinced it

had been Castro but took it to his grave. During that meeting, Alexander Haig received a message presumably from the CIA that meticulously described Lee Harvey Oswald's visits not only to Mexico but also to Cuba! Returning to the assembly, Haig was told this was a "non-message", "he had not seen it"!

Sam Halpern († March 2005), at the time a CIA agent; came up with the idea to assassinate Fidel Castro by sticking him with a poison-pen. Halpern explains that "the Kennedys were different". They couldn't understand why the CIA didn't have the capability of carrying out assassinations just like that. Halpern's bosses had a hard time convincing them that, "Look, hey, the world doesn't run that way! It just doesn't. And they expected, if they wanted somebody eliminated, that the CIA could easily eliminate them. And life isn't like that. They had to learn the hard way." Halpern's closing remarks at the end of the film: "Fidel is a nice guy, by the way. I met him two years ago in Havana. He is a smart boy. He is still where he is. And he has outlived how many Presidents now? I forget it, nine or ten (laughs). We ate together, we broke bread together. And he said, you know, I'm a professional, you're a professional. We are just talking business.' And that's the way it was. It was fun (laughs again). – He beat us. He bested us. He came out on top. And we lost."

Laurence Keenan (?), FBI chief investigator; was sent for a secret investigation to Mexico City immediately after the JFK assassination. Mexico City, even today, resembles a Pandora's box, full with dark secrets, Keenan says. However, his superiors hadn't sent him for a serious investigation into Lee Harvey Oswald's possible Cuban links at all. Instead of staying for three and a half days, short enough, he could have returned to the U.S. the same night, and it wouldn't have made any difference. Keenan says in the interview they had missed a moment in history. It was perhaps the worst investigation the FBI had ever been involved in. He realised he was used. In fact, already at 4:00 p.m. of November 22, three and a half hours after the murder, FBI Director J. Edgar Hoover, along with the new President Lyndon B. Johnson, had been aware of Oswald being the assassin and being a Cuban agent; however, they decided Oswald to be the 'lone psychopath'. The matter was closed. And never should the traces leading to Havana become known. Johnson, of course, saw the danger of war, possibly world war, and was determined to forestall such an outcome. In addition, as tells Keenan, Johnson sincerely feared for his own life. "We didn't know what he faced. We didn't know how wide the conspiracy was. President Johnson was determined that he did not want to go to war." "Johnson knew that Fidel knew what was going on and that Fidel had the capacity to carry out an assassination." Which is why also the covert operations against Cuba were henceforth ceased. The 'Cuban connection' became a state secret.

Joseph Califano (*1931). Worked for Robert Kennedy. When he accompanied Robert Kennedy on the day after the assassination to Arlington Cemetery to find a grave site for his brother, Califano realised how deeply shattered Robert Kennedy was. "The sadness was really deep. The depression, I think, was deep. And a part of it may well have been related to a sense of guilt, to a sense that his aggressive going after Castro may have led Castro to go after Kennedy."

1.2. Cubans

Oscar Marino (?), former elite officer in the Cuban secret service G2 and 'key witness' in this film documentary. Marino blows the whistle because he wants future generations to know the historical truth and because he wants to find calm for himself, which is very difficult as he says. Oswald had been contacted

by G2 in November 1962; he wasn't the best, but he was available; a dissident who hated his country; with certain skills; there was nobody else. Oswald had volunteered to kill President Kennedy. – Later, Marino identifies the mysterious black man with reddish hair as the G2 agent César Morales Messa; Marino had known him personally; Messa had been from the Santiago region and was working in Mexico as a Cuban spy and assisting the Mexican government in counter-intelligence. Asked about direct contacts of G2 General Fabián Escalante with Oswald, Marino says he cannot tell for sure but it should be strongly assumed; Fabián had been very important at the time; such a thing just couldn't have been done without his involvement. Had there been an order from G2 to Oswald to kill Kennedy? Marino's answer, with a shy smile: "Let's say, there was the desire." And Oswald fulfilled that desire? "Yes. He volunteered. Because of his hatred, he had the idea. But that's the part of the story I do not wish to go into. Let's put it this way: We used him. He made our plans his own. That doesn't mean he was subjected to brainwashing. He wanted it too. Is it so important whether or not it was his personal initiative? He was an instrument. It doesn't matter whether he volunteered or was used." Who could have given such an order? An agent? Or Fidel Castro? "No, this came from the leadership of the Cuban secret service G2. Of course." Or from Fidel Castro? „I do not want to touch upon this point, but in any case it came from the top of the G2. The question whether Castro had made the decision I cannot and will not answer, but with certainty I can say that it was an operation by the secret service G2." – Finally, Marino is asked who had recruited Oswald for the Cuban secret service. Marino's surprising reply: Rolando Cubela (the double agent who seemingly worked for Robert Kennedy to overthrow Fidel Castro but was under the control of Havana). Oswald had been to Mexico on two occasions. And Cubela oversaw Oswald's contacts. Question: Why Cubela, a Commandante of the revolution? Marino says, "Maybe because of it. He was very capable. And we trusted him at that time." Cubela made use of Oswald's left-wing fanaticism. Oswald was rootless, wanted to become a soldier of the revolution. And Cuba had supported him in carrying out the assassination. There was no plan to rescue him. The assurances he had been given blew with the wind. What was the motive to kill Kennedy? "He was an enemy of the Cuban Revolution. His enmity went very deep." – Whether he is afraid? No, there's just a feeling of uncertainty.

Antulio Ramírez (?), former G2 agent. Was caught when trying to infiltrate Cuban exile groups in the United States and escaped to Cuba by hijacking a passenger plane from Miami, and so on **May 1st**, 1961! By this unprecedented coup, he was henceforth granted the privileged status of a hero of the Cuban Revolution. Ramírez confirms that the G2 leadership spoke about an assassination of President Kennedy. He reads from his "Cuban Diary": Once, prior to November 22, 1963, in the intelligence headquarters, he stumbled upon a file 'Oswaldo-Kennedy'. The Soviet KGB had recommended to the Cuban G2 "an individual by name of Lee Harvey Oswald", an American married to a Soviet secret service agent, who had been ordered to settle in the United States. Oswald was described in that file as an emotional adventurer; the Cuban Embassy in Mexico should contact him. Caution! – Only a few days before the murder, Ramírez learns from his liaison officer in Havana, Martin, about 'Operacion Kennedy' planned for November 22, 1963. He has never spoken to anybody about this; again, he reads from his "Cuban Diary": Martin told him that, in terms of propaganda, they would now deal the Americans a fatal blow. "We'll kill their president, that 'burro de Kennedy', bet you? In this month of November!" Ramírez, in disbelief, "You are kidding me. No way you can do this. That's beyond your capabilities. Besides, the risk for Cuba would be much too great. In

every respect, counterproductive. That's impossible." Martin's relaxed reply: „That's how it will be done. And no one will believe it!"

„Reynoso“ (?), former officer of the Cuban secret service G2 and in the year 1963 archivist at the G2 headquarters in Havana. 'Reynoso' says around June 19 to 21, 1963, he once held the file on Lee Harvey Oswald in his hands. Although his duty was solely the codifying of files and by that he had no access to any file contents, nevertheless what he can say is that the Oswald file was in the section 'Foreign Collaborators In the Cuban Revolution'. Which means, of course, that Oswald had already been an active Cuban agent when he arrived in Mexico City in September 1963. 'Reynoso' does not know whether Oswald had also been directly to Cuba, and neither had he been in the position to learn whether Oswald had actually been commissioned with the JFK assassination. For sure, Oswald had met officers of the G2.

„Antonio“ (?). In the year 1963, officer of the Cuban secret service G2 responsible for the security of the compound of the Cuban Embassy in Mexico City. Does not want to show his face or reveal his real name. He says he is still afraid, even now. 'Antonio' could watch Oswald on three occasions, one time when Oswald came through the embassy's main entrance, the other two times when Oswald secretly met in the embassy's parking garage a tall black man with reddish hair, a G2 elite officer from very high up. They knew each other. He recalls the name of that officer to have been 'Carlos' (Oscar Marino finally identifies that agent as César Morales Messa; it was him, according to Marino, who gave Oswald the operative money).

Rafael Nuñez (?), former high-ranking Cuban diplomat. Has the information and remembers himself that then G2 chief, Fabián Escalante, had indeed been to Mexico in 1963, under the cloak of a 'Vice Consul' and on an unknown mission. According to Nuñez, it was Escalante who received Oswald in the Cuban Embassy in Mexico. This opens a dangerous door, says Nuñez, because when Fabián Escalante appeared on the scene, a G2 operation of the highest priority was under way.

Carlos Bringuer (?), part of a CIA-backed Cuban exile group in New Orleans. Bringuer describes how Oswald came and sought to be accepted in their ranks, which was denied, and how they later saw Oswald distributing Pro-Castro leaflets saying 'Long live Fidel!' and 'Hands off Cuba!'. Bringuer had a heavy argument with Oswald openly in the street; the police came, Oswald was briefly arrested, and later the two were invited to a local TV show to discuss their views in the short time frame of two minutes only (which to this day has served the argument that Oswald was 'made up' as a communist by the CIA.)

1.3. Mexicans

Helena Garru de Paz (?), daughter of Nobel Prize winning Mexican author, Octavio Paz. Was part of communist circles in Mexico and remembers a party at the home of a senior Mexican Communist Party official to which indeed Silvia Duran brought Lee Oswald. De Paz didn't like Oswald's face and experienced him as odd and dismissive. According to her, Oswald didn't speak to anyone.

1.4. Colombians

Daniel Harker (?), AP-correspondent of Colombian origin. Because of his being a native Spanish speaker, Fidel Castro used to feed him the news he wanted to get across unhampered to the West. At an evening reception on September 7, 1963

at the Brazilian Embassy in Havana – the very day double agent Cubela had received the order to kill Castro, which was immediately passed on to Havana – Fidel Castro shows up and tells Harker that if the US leaders won't bring their “attacks” against him (meaning: assassination attempts) to a halt, they themselves could be the targets of similar attacks.

1.5. Russians

„**Nikolai**“ (?), face not shown, original voice replaced. – High-ranking officer of the Russian secret service FSB (formerly KGB), with access to the encrypted KGB archives. Question: Was the Cuban secret service G2 informed by the KGB about Oswald? ‘Nikolai’ confirms. He holds in his hands (though not shown to the camera) a document from the archive: a telegram dated July 18, 1962, addressed to the Chief of the Cuban Secret Service, Ramiro Valdez, and signed by an officer by name of Klyuchkov on behalf of the Deputy Chief of the KGB. Oswald was now about to leave the Soviet Union together with his Russian wife; the Cuban secret service should take over the observation of this individual. Oswald was described in that document as ‘ideologically unsound and psychologically unstable’. The KGB should be kept informed.

2. THE DENIERS

Fabián Escalante (*1941), General of the Cuban secret service G2. Asked what he, according to the Underwood document, had to do in Dallas on the day John F. Kennedy was shot, Escalante denies outright and escapes into diffuse revolutionary rhetoric. Putting on an innocent face, he argues the Cuban Revolution never ever had sought to kill Kennedy; after all, there are still in existence the “ethical and moral values” of the revolution. – The KGB telegram regarding Oswald, Escalante qualifies as a falsification: “totalmente falsch!” The film crew should ask Ramiro Valdez, who still was the commander of the secret services at the time of the interview. The ironical question by Wilfried Huismann whether the telegram is false or the KGB, Escalante replies he'd like to know too and continues that the KGB had not been in total control of the archives all the time: In Post-Soviet times, a number of American researchers had been working in the KGB archives; such a fake document could have easily been planted in the archives; the CIA can do many things, says Escalante. He then again evades into propagandistic talk, questions the genuineness of the American moon landing and so forth. In between, his eyes reveal utmost aggressiveness, if not threat. – Asked about the mysterious black G2 officer with reddish hair, Escalante has no better excuse than to say there are no blacks with red hair; blacks are black; unless they dye their hair; and how could he have employed for intelligence work a black man who dyed his hair red; that would have been far too conspicuous. – Confronted with the issue of a possible personal contact with Lee Harvey Oswald, Escalante comes up with the romantic answer that he had always dreamed of travelling to Mexico, a country so rich in tradition [sic!!!], but unfortunately it never worked out; adding, with a grin: the film crew can do whatever research, they won't find a single witness.

Rolando Cubela (?), Cuban revolutionary of the first hour, later rival of Fidel Castro's; was hired by the CIA and commissioned on September 7, 1963 with the assassination of Castro, for which, he says, he demanded a personal confirmation from Robert Kennedy, which then was given to him. However, Cubela was in fact a double agent and under the control of Havana. Thus,

Castro immediately knew of Robert Kennedy's plot and directed a final warning towards Washington later that day. As a consequence, on precisely November 22, 1963, Castro emerged unharmed from a planned attempt on his life that never happened, while Kennedy was indeed killed by the Cuban-Soviet agent, Lee Harvey Oswald, along, probably, with others assisting him. The film crew finds Cubela in Madrid. In the interview that he gives out on the street, Cubela first recalls his work for the CIA, but denies any activity in the other direction. Confronted, finally, with the claim that it was him who hired Lee Harvey Oswald for G2, he reacts upset, calls it a monstrous lie. "I won't allow you to ask such a question any more!" He had only once been to Mexico, at Acapulco, at a meeting with Mexican student organisations. He doesn't know where he had been in November 1962. Maybe he just incidentally was in Mexico the same time as Oswald. Maybe even he saw him, no, that's too much. He wouldn't be alive any more. They would have killed him. And, as a melodramatic farewell, smiling: "Tell them they can kill me! Lay some flowers at my grave!" – And disappears in the entrance of an apartment building ...

Silvia Duran (*1937), a Mexican Communist, at the time working at the Cuban Embassy in Mexico. Refuses a personal interview and gives just a few answers over the phone. Duran denies to have had contact with Lee Harvey Oswald outside the embassy. Oswald had been denied a tourist visa for Cuba, and after he had made a scene he was thrown out of the embassy. In addition, she was married, and no way would she have engaged in a relationship with such a madman. However, it turns out that it was very much Duran who took Oswald to parties within the communist milieu of Mexico City. The question why she then had been arrested and brutally interrogated by the Mexican secret service if there had been no link with Oswald, marks the end of the telephone conversation. Her reaction: this had only happened to her because her telephone number had been found in Oswald's note book, the questions are insulting. And hangs up the phone. – There had been no FBI-interrogation whatsoever of Silvia Duran back in 1963.

3. HISTORICAL AUDIO DOCUMENTS

Tapped telephone call, Cuban Embassy in Mexico, November 22, 1963, 02:00 p.m. CST: Embassy staff Luisa picks up the phone. A lady friend of hers tells her of the recent assassination of John F. Kennedy. After a lot of cheering over the "good news", the talk abruptly ends with a technical "Three shots in the head." – "Perfect."

Tapped telephone call, Cuban Embassy in Mexico, November 22, 1963, 5:30 p.m. CST: Again, Luisa answers the phone. This time, it is a man calling. The same pattern of seemingly general conversation about the events in Dallas. Luisa even says, yes, she "almost had known it before Kennedy". The two exchange facts about Lee Harvey Oswald that had by then been reported over the media. In the end, again, a brief technical message from the man: "He hasn't confessed." [sic!!!]

Tapped telephone call, Cuban Embassy in Mexico. During the interrogations of Silvia Duran by the Mexican secret service, the Cuban Ambassador in Mexico receives a phone call from the Cuban State President Osvaldo Dorticós Torrado in person. Dorticós says he has in front of him a report that says Silvia Duran has testified that Oswald had received money from Cuba. The Ambassador

replies, no, Duran has only been questioned about whether or not she had had personal or intimate contact with Oswald. The State President then asks about the mode of the interrogation. The Ambassador explains she has been pinioned by her arms, and so to make sure she says everything she knows, she had been beaten. Abrupt end of phone call.

4. HISTORICAL FILM SEQUENCES

Lee Harvey Oswald's statement before journalists, famous anyway, in the night after the assassination. His left eye swollen, presumably as a result of the interrogations, Oswald has his little 'press conference'. He seizes upon the opportunity to present himself as completely innocent. Asked whether he has killed the President, he replies in 'statesmanly' fashion, "No, I've not been charged with that. In fact, nobody has said that to me yet. The first thing I heard about it was when the newspaper reporters in the hall asked me that question." Very calculated, and not mad at all.

Marina Oswald (*1941) interviewed at some point in time after the Kennedy assassination (approximate transcript): "... he would tell me his plans about Cuba because, I don't know why, the first time he wants to try to seize an aeroplane and go to Cuba, and first time he wanted [to do it by] himself. I told him, 'Lee, you can't do this. Anyway, I don't want you to do this.' But I told him 'Just don't do this' because he can't. He is not so strong [a] man to do this yourself. And he told me, 'Okay, you help me.' And, you know, and I said, 'How?' And he explained to me how he wanted me in an aeroplane with him, and to hold his gun, and I told him I would be just scared to death to hold his gun, it would be a very funny story, you know, a very funny picture for everybody who pay attention: a pregnant woman with one child, to hold his gun. And I left him; I don't take decisions [?]. And he was so upset about this." – Now, this is a classic example of Soviet disinformation. Marina Oswald, at the time of the assassination of John F. Kennedy only 22 years old, had left the Soviet Union more than a year earlier at the age of 21. Nevertheless, she was mentioned in one of the files as a Soviet secret agent (her uncle supposedly was a big shoot in the KGB)! Thus, we can follow it was far from a 'spontaneous' love marriage but a marriage arranged, as happened often in the Soviet Union, by the Soviet structures so to serve political purposes. She obviously had been trained or at least prepared for such a mission. And the mission was obviously to be Lee Oswald's 'handler' of sorts (plus, so we can assume, informer to the KGB). Certainly she was selected, and her extraordinary attractiveness (though, as one can see in the film documents, of a dark nature), certainly was part of her job: to keep Oswald permanently bewitched and under her control! Yet, the picture Marina Oswald paints of her marriage with Oswald appears to be completely misleading, and so in two ways. First, she presents herself as a shy and innocent housewife, never mind why she had come to the United States in the first place; and second, she presents Lee Harvey Oswald almost as a complete nut. The man was certainly, as described in the files, an emotional, 'idealistic' far-leftist; a political fanatic; but he wasn't a nut. Conveniently, that same version of Oswald the madman was presented by the United States Government so to hide further connections and a well-orchestrated assassination plot arranged by communist Cuba, and most likely with support of some sort from the Soviet Union, from where, lest we forget, Oswald had been sent. America has been manipulated into the miserable role of a co-liar, and once one lie goes unchallenged, a whole string of lies is going to follow. A poor and innocent

housewife from faraway Russia and a cross-culture political idealist who just couldn't get anything straight, and yet the world was shaken by the most prominent political murder in the 20th century! And, due to being caught up in the lie, the U.S. authorities had little to come up against all those mostly left-leaning conspiracies about the Kennedy assassination, that further undermined the very fundament of American patriotism. Marina Oswald, by the way, in later years adopted a firm position of denial regarding her late husband's guilt. In other words, the disinformation goes on and on and on!

5. HISTORICAL WRITTEN DOCUMENTS

Confidential message by Martin Underwood († March 25, 2003), advance man for both president Kennedy's and President Johnson's election campaigns, to the new President Johnson; handed out to Wilfried Huismann on the condition that it may only be published after Underwood's death. The note informs President Johnson that shortly after the JFK assassination an unregistered small aeroplane has taken off from a private Dallas airport, for Mexico. The only passenger: G2 General and intimate comrade of Fidel Castro, Fabián Escalante. He then changed planes in Mexico and returned to Cuba.

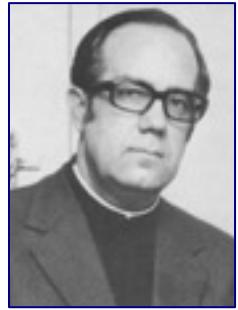
From Lee Harvey Oswald's „Ship Diary“, written in June 1962 on the trans-Atlantic crossing back to the United States after having lived in the Soviet Union for several years. "We have lived in a dark generation of tension and fear. I have lived under both systems. I have sought the answers, and although it would be very easy to dupe myself into believing one system is better than the other, I know they are not. The mass of survivors will be too disillusioned to support either the communists or the capitalist parties after the atomic catastrophe. They shall seek an alternative to those systems which have brought them misery. I intend to put forward just such an alternative."

KGB-telegram dated July 18, 1962, addressed to the Cuban secret service G2: see 'Nikolai'.

The Mexican Secret Service's file on Lee Harvey Oswald, kept strictly classified in the DFS's storage depot „Gallery 1“ of the Mexican General Archive. Out of the 4,000 pages (observations, photos, interrogation protocols), the film crew is shown merely 30. Nevertheless, it turns out that Silvia Duran was systematically questioned about the identities of those Cuban G2 officers "who were sent to prepare the assassination plot against John F. Kennedy"; the identity of the officer who was in contact with Oswald; the identity and role of the mysterious black man with reddish hair and scar on his cheek, who appeared in the Cuban Embassy. Furthermore, those 30 pages contain the testimony of a witness who observed Oswald receiving \$ 6,500.- from that black man with red hair; Silvia Duran was there too. Unfortunately, that witness, a young revolutionary, was arrested by the Mexican secret police and mistreated so badly that he withdrew his testimony. The FBI didn't even bother about questioning him. The whole Cuban connection was being swept under the rug, not the least because the United States would have feared WW III to be the inevitable outcome. Chief of the Mexican Secret Service Archive, Vicente Capello, presents to Wilfried Huismann, off-camera (for reasons of "personal privacy"), a photograph marked 'el pelirojo', that red-haired black man. Also, the Director of the General Archive, Señora Dulce María Lighul, says she has no access to the secret archives; she most readily would help the crew with everything in her power (and she says it with exaggerated, theatrical gestures) but – the

regulations...; not without adding that Huismann wouldn't find any golden thread of evidence here anyway, "just her personal opinion".

Confidential letter to President Johnson, sent immediately after the JFK assassination by Mexican credit intermediary Pedro Gutiérrez, who when having something to do at the Cuban Embassy saw Lee Harvey Oswald getting into the car of a Cuban functionary. The FBI took that witness for serious, yet passed him over to the Mexican secret police. At Gutiérrez's former living address, Wilfried Huismann, after some insistence, manages to talk to a granddaughter of Gutiérrez: obviously, someone had informed the Cubans, and Pedro Gutiérrez was then threatened with murder by Cuban agents, so that finally he fled to the United States and was given an assumed identity there.



KGB-document of 1966, according to which none other than indeed Rolando Cubela had recruited Lee Harvey Oswald for the Cuban secret service.

V. FR. HANS MILCH (1924–1987), German Traditionalist Catholic priest, founder of Actio spes unica, ally of Archbishop Marcel Lefebvre (Fr. Milch was suspended in 1979, and murdered in 1987): Sermon of October 7, 1979 given at Hattersheim near Frankfurt/Main: "*The Imminent Fall of Europe – The Church: Sole Authority for Possible Rescue*" – (Extracts. – Listen to the full sermon, with original German audio and English subtitles by this author at: <http://www.youtube.com/user/Contemplatix>)

"[...] But Christ hasn't come to correct 'mankind' as such. That is a common misconception. **Mankind, self-evidently, hasn't improved and hasn't worsened. It has remained, morally, just the same as ever.** And therefore also the argument is pointless that says, 'After meanwhile 2,000 years of Christendom, still men haven't become better.' Of course they haven't! And neither does Christ's work of redemption consist in this illusion to push men forward, across-the-board, and to orchestrate and initiate a 'grand progress for mankind'. **The 'human progress thing' is an illusion that comes from the wind direction of the prince of the world.** WE do not believe in the 'progress of mankind', but we believe in the Great Blessedness granted to us as we are able to say Yes to the magnificent offering of His Love. And that Yes can only be said by the individual. Free will is always the free will of the individual. **There is no such thing as 'group will' .**" [...] "I shall mention a second devastating historical date: 1945. – Not that the breakdown of National Socialism had been a misfortune, quite on the contrary: it was a blessing! And *no price* was too high to destroy National Socialism! And when I say, 'no price', I mean that without exaggeration, without rhetorical exuberance; quite soberly, very precisely: *no price* was too high to extinct National Socialism! – But, what took its place? [...] **Now, in stupid naïveté, it was thought that the farther left something was from National Socialism, the more securely it was anti-totalitarian and anti-National-Socialist.** Therefore – especially in our nation, but also throughout Europe – has the shaping of public opinion been taken over by the left, communist element, that continuously works towards the internal erosion of our society and prepares for totalitarianism. For example is ARD [Germany's first television channel] *crypto-communist!* Also this I say without exaggeration; this is a very precise statement. What is being presented via the whole of television, politically, is – apart from very few oases – deliberate, highly insidious communist propaganda! Our whole press, the whole of literature are infested

with it!” [...] “By human reckoning, there’s no rescue; we must see that very clearly. All waters are flowing towards doom.” [...] “May we still hope? Oh yes! Who is then the hope? YOU! Where is then the major power? YOU! **YOUR TRUST – contrary to all calculation, transcending all calculation, absolutely stubborn, mad – will rescue us!** Rescue *may* come. I’m convinced it *will* come. Just don’t give up! Keep standing! That is that what’s to be said now and here. After all, we know of the oases! But YOU are, first of all, that oasis that by yourself is to be preserved, looked after, and rescued. Amen.”

VI. FR. HANS MILCH: Speech of May 5, 1987, Mainz, Germany: “*Key Sentences of the So-Called Council: The Supreme Shepherd’s Antichristian Machinations*” (full speech at: <http://www.youtube.com/user/Contemplatix>)

“[...] Let me briefly say this, regarding the mass democracy we live in: It is not, *per se*, identical with democracy as such! Rather, mass democracy develops as democracy is being turned into an ideology, a world view, a value in itself! And this idea is being pressed ahead by ‘interested circles’. And in this mass democracy, in this *democratism*, rests the seed for totalitarianism. – Hitler would never have come other than through mass democracy, never! And we are in great danger that, because of this mass democracy, Bolshevism may come. Just look at it closely: The mass opines to opine and, yet, ‘is opined’. The mass opines and believes to be thinking and, yet, ‘is being thought’. There comes a cue, an order from somewhere: that’s the people in the background who are in control; one can’t find them out – but everything obeys. Obviously, they’re not to be named, these Mafiosi. The publishing media obey, and already some random people are being groomed. Millions believe in this and consider that person to be extraordinarily important. And newspapers far and wide – exceptions aside -, radio, and television agree: this person should be praised! And so he is praised. I’m thinking of the unfortunate Kennedy era; I’m thinking of Willy Brandt, also here was a worldwide consensus: ‘here is an extremely important man’ – which, of course, he wasn’t; or I’m thinking of a particular lady minister [obviously, Rita Süssmuth], who completely misses the true problems of the time, far away from the true values, cluelessly passing by the spiritual warning signs, of inferior talent, facing the real problems of nation and future with the greatest indifference; similar to a certain president [Richard von Weizsäcker], who stamps his shallow, liberal platitudes with emphatic ‘thoughtfulness’. All this being promoted and highlighted by the media, and behind it stands a certain prejudice of a ‘specifically democratic behaviour’. And this ‘specifically democratic behaviour’, that’s being commended and praised, prevents that true personages can emerge. Indeed, we no longer have personages in front of us. A personage is characterised by adamantly and irrevocably taking his standpoint, by asserting a position, and embracing his destiny. Entirely unconcerned about currents and fashionable opinions: such a personage stands like a rock; and ‘rock’ and ‘personage’ are synonyms. This ‘mass’ encompasses all socio-educational classes! Nobody should think ‘mass’ would be limited to a certain class of non-educated. Far from it! All so-called ‘educated’ classes are just as much affected by the phenomenon of the mass. In the very same way. And in this arranged mass democracy, that is a wide-open door to every

totalitarian destruction of the personality, there predominates this one maxim: ‘Just don’t drift apart!’ And from this derives the opportunity for the destroyers: they can easily rely on the mass. And, after all, who is this mass? – Certainly not ‘dull and primitive’ illiterates; illiterates often are the last carriers of what is left of the culture of the old days. Also this, yet another phantasma: as if illiteracy was the signature of spiritlessness; it just isn’t true. The greatest spirits of the world were widely illiterates. A phantasma: people think that if they are able to write, they’re going to be a few degrees smarter than the others who can’t write; a widespread error. **Who then is this mass? Exactly such people of intellectual self-importance; pseudo-objective people; people of ‘on-the-one-hand-on-the-other-hand’ who apply to everything that comes their way the convenient and self-delusive template of ‘objectivity’.** I’ve mentioned this several times before, but I would like to repeat it once again: who brought, for instance, Hitler to power and kept him in power? Was it the Nazis? No. They were too few. Was it the anti-Nazis? Of course not! But the mass of the NON-Nazis, they were the cement that bound, solidified, and held National Socialism. [...]



VII. FR. MALACHI MARTIN (1921–1999), Irish Jesuit Priest of encyclopedic knowledge and understanding, and prominent book author. Lecture of 1991 given at a Human Life International conference, entitled “*Global Conflict of Life and Anti-Life Forces*” (49 min.) – Exact complete transcript from the audio done by this author; question-marks in square brackets represent words or phrases this author just couldn’t pick up; sorry about this shortcoming. If anyone would like a perfect transcript, he or she can try and fill in the missing words by listening closely to the audio recording. (6 parts; presented on the Youtube channel “threehundredwords”)

“Personally, I’ve always thought that when it comes to talking and discussing human affairs such as marriage, divorce, contraception, abortion, sure, we priests should put in our two cents worth as pastors, but the ninety eight cents in the dollar of understanding should be contributed by women; after all, they know more about it than any man will ever know. Now, while I think that, I do think, I said that, I made that remark about women versus men because of my early experiences. I was back in my native village in Ireland, Ballylongford [northern County Kerry], two years ago, and there was a death there, and there was a requiem Mass celebrated by the parish priest, the Archdeacon Michael Culhane, he always pronounced it ‘Colhani’ to give it a distinctive Italian touch, he spoke with an Oxford accent because they’ve taken his letters out in Oxford, but anyway, the death was of a very notable local called Thaddeus Maloney, otherwise known as Teddy Maloney, the [?], and he had been married for 57 years, this is a very illustrative programme, I mean story, and does illustrate the point of my whole talk, he had been 57 years married to Katie, and it was a long history of beatings and drunkenness, and she gave him seventeen boys, children, and she earned her own living, she cooked for my Daddy, who was a doctor, the local gynaecologist. Anyway, he was found dead in a ditch, he had drowned coming home from a [?] over the weekend. And the Archdeacon was celebrating a requiem Mass the day I arrived, so I went to the Mass and sat beside Katie. And the Archdeacon rolled on about the undisputed glories of connubial bliss and the private paradise of sponsal partners, and when we came out later I turned to Katie, and I said, ‘Katie, what did you think of the Archdeacon’s talk?’ She said, ‘Well, Father Malachi, you know, he is a great priest, no doubt about it, he is a great man, but I wished to God I knew as little

about marriage as the Archdeacon does.' Which about sums it up! Sometimes it does apply. – Now, look here. Most people here know much more than I will ever know about the struggle against this Great Death Wish, with this demonic energy, that has ceased the nations; because, my friends, it has ceased the nations, as a community. And therefore, anything I say is said because it's second-hand; I have not been active as a human lifer; I wish I had been, but my superiors, and God has given me other work to do. I've done my best. And therefore I feel a little childish in talking to you about it, except to comment on the whole situation, and your situation, and your labours, and the almost impossible task for facing – as Dr. Ernst pointed out in his exposé – what we're up against. I have found, and my training has always taught me, that when you are facing an enemy, you examine the terrain very carefully, and you assess the forces against you. You reckon up what you can do and what you *can't* do, what you *may* do and what you *may not* do. And in the light of that, of exact intelligence of what you're facing, you draw up your plans. Because, otherwise you waste time and energy. Now, I do think that the basis of our view of this is – I'm sure you've all read that passage in the Book of Deuteronomy where God says, '*Look, this day there are two courses open to you, and I'm telling you which one to follow. On the one hand, you can choose life and goodness. On the other hand, you can choose death and evil.*' And then the text goes on to say, '*If you choose life, your bodies will be fruitful. If you choose death, then you will perish.*' And He ends up, in the Bible, saying, '*And therefore, if you do not choose to obey me, and therefore do not choose life, I denounce you as of this day,*' – this is the Word of God – '*you shall certainly perish, and your days on this earth will not be prolonged, and I will call heaven and earth to witness against you that indeed I did give you a choice of life over death, but that you did indeed refuse to obey me, choosing death over life.*' Now, those are terrifying words with which God, speaking from the advantage point of His Eternity, describes in blank terms our blood-stained guilt as a community of nations. Because, in fact, systemically, and you all probably know that or have suspected it or guessed it: systemically, our society of nations has opted for anti-life, for death, as an explicit principle of its socio-political organisation and of what we call now: '*progress*'. And God declares with almost brutal frankness why our present human community – as it is gathering together for a one-world-government, for the 'New World Order' – is not only totally irreconcilable with His Goodness and His Holiness but is professionally abominable to Him, and therefore totally rejected by Him, cannot have His Blessing or His Luck, and cannot last in His present course. Now, they are terrifying words by our Father in Heaven about our blood-stained guilt as a race, because we share it. Remember, there's a peculiar Law of God. I mean, Adam and Eve sinned in the Garden; I have a contention with that, when I meet him: I didn't do anything! None of us did. And yet, God has decreed we shared his death and his guilt. And we do share the blood-stained guilt of our contemporary community of nations; and when they are punished, we will be punished too. These are not the words of some baleful Odin North God or some frightful Voodoo demon. These are the Words of the Father in Heaven, Who creates little babies nesting in the womb of their mother, and Who paints the skies and the earth and the sea with hues no artist has ever reproduced, has ever invented, and the One Who sent His only Son to be conceived, born, to live and to die and to rise the third day so that we might also die and be resurrected with Him. On the lips of such a Father, these words are terrifying. And, I said deliberately 'blood-stained guilt' because, overall and everywhere, throughout our community of nations today numbering roughly about 5 billion, and chiefly by legalised abortion, but also by contraception, by euthanasia, by condoned infanticide, by deliberately fomented civil wars, by endemic hunger, by the floods

of refugees, never before in the history of man and in such short span of time has the life's blood of so many been shed so violently, so mercilessly wasted as in our day: we specialise in the death of masses, as a community of nations today, and we belong to that community, whether we like it or not! So, anti-life: surely! That's us, we are anti-life. And, blood-stained guilt: surely! Every 24 hours we widen that dark-red pool of human blood. We do. We do. Lastly, I said deliberately 'our present society of nations', [?] on which I wish to concentrate with you tonight and reflect upon it. Because, my friends: *we belong to them*. And the punishments that God will send on that community of nations will hit us. Remember Jesus, when He was walking to Calvary, dripping blood, and the women of Jerusalem wept, and He said to them, 'Look, don't weep for me! Weep for yourselves and your children!' And then he added a funny phrase, but people don't comment upon, he said, 'If they do this in the green wood, what do you think they are going to do in the dry wood?' If you ever have tried to kindle fires, in the country, with wood running with sap, you can't do it; you pick up some twigs that are dry. My friends, we are both the green wood and the dry. And if they did that to my Lord Jesus, what do you think they are going to do to us; both green wood and the dry. Now, the [?] and the tragedy of our position – and, by the way, I'm not a lugubrious character or very sad or a pessimist, so, these things I'm laying out to you I thought I should do because we've been talking for these three days intensely about details, and I want you to see the woods of the trees, having gone through all the details. The [?] and the tragedy of our situation is only heightened by our own apparent *helplessness*. And that becomes more saddening and frustrating when we realise that literally millions, possibly billions, of human beings – I sound like Carl Sagan: 'billions and billions' –, but, possibly billions of human beings, at the present moment, LOVE LIFE, are pro-life! But all of us are caught; we're in a systemic community of nations which is anti-life, which has elected to be pro-death, as a system. And we cannot get out of it. So, we're caught up in the demonic energy of 'The Great Death Wish'. That is precisely the terrain on which we are working. And this includes our beloved America, unfortunately, where in the short space of, what, 18 years [since abortion had been legalised in the U.S. in 1973], 25 million have been done to cruel death **by men and women self-righteously and blindly claiming to belong to the order of healers, but who ruthlessly and cheerfully and efficiently spend their time tearing little human limbs, cracking crania like walnuts on Thanksgiving night, scavaging the remains for 'commodification', what a horrible thought: commercial commodification of babies' bodies; and for 'export-import'!** And all this sophisticated skullduggery is sanctioned and condoned by two main blocs of people: first of all, our legislators, who are the representatives of the people, who most unconscionably and for the sake of their own advancement have literally abused and prostituted the power that God the Father gave them. 'You would have no power over me,' Jesus said to Pilate, this amoral coward, 'unless it were given to you from above.' And then Jesus immediately added the second bloc of people involved in condoning and sanctioning; and he said, 'You would have no power unless it were given to you from above; therefore, those who delivered me into your power have the greater sin.' And these, oh we know them, my friends, we know them all! Uncomfortably, embarrassingly, bewilderingly, we know them all! It's a seemingly endless list of 'cultured', established, educated people; you know, our 'supremely wise men', our [?], our sociologists, the leaders in both great major political parties, the party hacks and the ward heelers, and a numerous gaggle of social commentators and trend-setters; by the way: *respectable* and *respected* people; *trusted* people; people who are in good standing in the community; well-paid, well-fed, well-housed, well-dressed

people; all those who have made the slaughter of the innocents an integral element of our American life, of the ‘politically correct and socially acceptable American person’, the PCASSAP; politically correct and socially acceptable person. Just remember to add to that list, by the way, you know, the usual list of the politically correct and socially acceptable American person, you know: racial quotas reverse discrimination, [?], same-sex parents, homosexual marriages, fetal experimentation; add to that now: abortion, as an integral element to American life, as integral as the Bill of Rights, in the minds of those who are pro-abortion. And let’s [?], by the way – amongst ourselves, at least – to include in their establishment-list the eminent and sometimes reverent mugwumps, with their sitting on the fence of opportunity with their mug, their rumps on one side facing their oath of office to implement the solemn dogmatic doctrine of the Church, and their faces peering anxiously on the other side, while they temporise with anodyne nothings and dialogue amicably and consultations wisely, **because they will not keep their solemn oath for fear they might be called bigots and fanatics, for fear they might not be invited to the dinner [?] of the great and take their place at the green top tables of power.** **My friends, how they yearn to be politically acceptable and socially correct! How they yearn! God bless them.** To all of them, from the immunity of God’s Eternity, the greatest innocent, Jesus, and all the slaughtered innocents, say in unison: ‘You made this lethal legislation possible!’ What a terrible accusation. You made our murder legal! You continue to make this abomination viable! The greatest sin is yours! You are the authors of this abomination! You are collaborators and co-operators in the Great Death Wish! They won’t hear it until eternity. **But imagine being swamped in front of the Throne of Jesus, at your particular judgment, by oceans of babies claiming, ‘You killed us! You made it legal! God help them.** And please, let me ask you, en passant, not to assume, because sometimes we do (?)-ly assume that this Great Death Wish is aimed at the death of the body, of millions of bodies, that too, but its purpose is its authors and its chief author, that liar and murderer from the beginning, that Jesus contemned so much, Lucifer, **the purpose is to ensure the death in the soul of mankind.** The specific and ultimate aim of all death-dealing, including abortion and euthanasia and contraception, the abortifacients, **the specific aim is to eliminate the Holy Trinity from our midst in the family of man, by making fatherhood and motherhood just alternative life-styles, by trivialising that God-founded troika of husband, wife, and child, into just one more socially adjustable arrangement, by reducing sonhood to penis-possession and daughterhood to vaginal freedom, and married love to pleasurable mating habits.** By in total effect, that’s eliminating the prototypes that God set up: the Fatherhood of God in Heaven, the Sonhood of Jesus, the Motherhood and the Daughterhood of Mary, and the Godliness of the Holy Family in Nazareth. **That is the aim! Not just the killing of bodies! And with that comes the death of the supernatural life of God in our midst;** you know: ‘*I am come that you may have life and that more abundantly*’ [John 10:10], but you will not come to me that you may have life, [?] Jesus [?], in John’s Gospel. This is the real abomination! Now quickly add to America’s abomination, in this mad toll, add Europe’s toll of the abomination, the Soviet Union’s toll of the abomination, China’s toll of the abomination, India’s toll of the abomination, Asia’s and Africa’s toll of the abomination, Australia’s toll. What do you arrive at, as a bold park figure? I don’t know. 500 million? One billion? **It’s not the number of zeros in those dreadful statistics that defy our minds, it’s not that, it’s much more the horrible facts that paralyse our imaginations, and for the sake of our sanity we cannot allow ourselves watch it, look at it, consider it; we ourselves can’t. We can’t see**

the crushed crania, and the skewed limbs, and the twisted entrails. We [?] it all behind what the psychologists call the [?], this automatic close-out method by which we can [?] away a dreadful scene we've seen. It emerges in our nightmares, but in normal life we are free of it. In the context of our present rational discourse, though, we can look away from it, we can also neglect the insouciance of the establishment, **and when you consider these statistics, you are sure of one thing, my friends: that this is systemic, it's not by accident; it's within the system by which we live, by which governments make decisions, both local and national and international. You're dealing with something which is not a passing whim, an irregularity of nature, an accident that's going to be corrected over time. You're dealing with something now within the system of our government. It is systemic. And you and I, we are born, we live and die within that system. We are caught in it.** I want to examine the system with you slightly, and if – you know, all Irishmen, traditionally, since Saint Patrick came to Ireland, suffer from mental diarrhoea, so, when it gets too much, I know Father Marx will look at me with that marvellous French look he has. You know, if you get up in the morning – I want to study our present system by which we are living and what we are facing, especially the younger people, not us poor whiteheads perhaps, if you get up in the morning and head out the door to work, and you find the front gate is gone, and your mail-box is gone, and the lamp-post you used to walk by is gone, you say, 'Well, what the –', I mean 'Who has taken away my front gate? Where is the mail-box? And where is the lamp-post gone anyway?' In other words: we are used to small things; we are creatures of localised habits. And we see it immediately, the moment a thing has changed: 'Where are my cornflakes?' You know, 'Where is that lamp-post?' 'What did they do with the mail-box?' But, the other characteristic of our character is, i.e. the other characteristic of our mode of living is that any vast change, any all-embracing change not immediately affecting our localised habits - our home locale, our community, our job, our friends, our city, our state, our government even -, any such *sea-change*: we don't notice it - until it becomes an accomplished fact! And then we say, 'Oh! That's what it is!' We don't notice it because it doesn't affect us and affect our localised habits. And with very few exceptions, we are creatures of localised habits. **Now, the most choking element about a sea-change is that you are helpless when it comes. It's a fait accompli. It's done. And you have to live with it.** Towards the final stamping of that new change, bit by bit, piece by piece, element by element, you begin to have a queasy feeling that there is something happening you don't know. You know there is something big affecting everybody, affecting us all, it's a vast, encompassing change, and then you suddenly – everybody says, 'This is the way it is now. This is going to be the way it's going to be.' And then you're faced with that fait accompli. Sometimes it's not too choking because you like what's happening; sometimes you do like it. **The most egregious example of sea-change is the one that has affected my Roman Catholic Church. Now a community of 900 million souls nominally, in 25 years it has been shattered. It was a pyramidal structure with the Papal power at the apex, and everything arranged hierarchically between that, down to the smallest little parish, the smallest little person, with a flow of obedience, authority and moral enlightenment and dogmatic statement coming from the top down, and with obedience and zeal coming from the base up. That has gone! We are now shattered in pieces. The unity is gone. But did you notice it when it was happening in 25 years? No. No, it just happened, and here we are! And it is a sea-change! It's the most astounding sea-change we have. And, we still don't fully understand it. All we know is that that which gave us a Catholic community, nationwide, is**

gone. We now live in a completely different system, but about that perhaps later. It is a sea-change. Now, if you understand, if you can appraise the change, the sea-change that has affected this marvellous structure – I’m talking about the *structure* of the Roman Catholic Church, *not* the Mystical Body, *not* the spiritual entity of it –, if you can appraise the sea-change of that, that’s taken place in our life time: we didn’t notice it; until it became a fact. And now every day we have examples of it, *distressing* examples: disunity. If you appraise that properly, then you can appraise the sea-change that’s taking place in our world. This sea-change is societal. We unfortunately are the victims – as well as the beneficiaries, but in this case: the victims – of our media. And the media are there to entertain, *not* to inform; inspite of all protests on part of the media. Because entertainment is the idea. And, even the media people themselves will say, ‘We’re preparing a story for you tonight, on the 11 o’clock news.’ It’s a *story!* And we really haven’t got what we really call a free press. It’s always reflecting some point of view. Objectivity will be like a telegram or a computer read-out; we don’t get that in our newspapers or in our television. Now, the big change we have undergone without knowing it – and it is a fait accompli, my friends – is that ... Well, let’s start with the machine, or the mechanism, or the ‘deus ex machina’, which brought the change to our consciousness: **He was and is** a fifty-, oh no, he is now sixty, -year-old ethnic Russian, with a stain on his forehead which the more religious among us took as the mark of Cain the moment we saw it, and [?] just hastened to explain that this was the typical port-wine stain of a vascular birth mark: **Mikhail Sergeyevich Gorbachyov. Who suddenly appeared. He had no political solutions; he had no financial solutions, he wants to be financed; he didn’t break up his armies. But he suddenly appeared in the West and touched us, and we will never be the same again. There was a magic there. A vast magic. And the magic touched everybody. Even Maggie Thatcher met this man and said, ‘I sat down with this extraordinary man, and I assure you that every molecule of my body was affected by him.’ Maggie Thatcher!** [?]-power, with the Iron Lady! And then we had ‘Gorbi! Gorbi! Gorbi!’ throughout the world. Pressing the flesh in Washington [?]. Walking with well-creased trousers and Raisa, the queen of chique, in San Francisco’s golden sun light. Having tea with the Queen, in Windsor, at four o’clock. Chatting with the Pope. **And, every place, everybody was saying, ‘O Jesus, he’s great! The bear is not a grizzly bear at all, it’s a little teddy bear with dirty diapers, and it’s hungry, it needs us! It needs us! It needs us!** But it went for more than that, my friends. It went for more than that, and this is where the fait accompli, the sea-change, suddenly has dawned *slowly* on people. It is a matter of public record, and in the words of President George Herbert Walker Bush, Mikhail Sergeyevich Gorbachev, Francois Mitterand (he’s still French: Francois), of Chancellor Kohl of Germany, Mikhail Gorbachev of Russia, Kaifu of Japan, that their aim is to create a new structure for the world. And, Mr. Baker – James, the faithful – has outlined this in words, which you may read and look it up in the papers: **it’s three concentric circles. The first circle is the Western European Community, which is on its way, now that Maggie has departed. The second concentric circle is formed – and this is the big sea-change – by the union of the Western Economic Community AND the new Federation of Soviet states [!!!]. And the third circle, concentric with the other two, is to run from Vladivostok on the China Sea, across the Russian heartland, across Eastern Europe, across Western Europe, across the Atlantic, and reaching as far as the beaches of California.** That is the new economic union, which will be set up. In the meanwhile, the organs already set up, the International Monetary Fund, the World Bank, the GATT (which is not the name of a cat, by the way, it’s the General Agreement on Trades and Tariffs), which will create a nominally-nation, closed system of export-import, which we must join or die. All nations must trade today, or die – will be established by the end of April or the end

of September; but it's coming. And the crowning part of this was that Mr. Bush, whom I respect an awful lot, of course; and Mikhail Sergeyevich, to whom I give his respect due to him, whatever that is, and the others; and Francois Mitterrand; and Kohl: **they have now declared the USA 'a European power'.**

Opposite page: August 28, 2008, INVESCO Field at Mile High, Denver, Colorado: Final day of the 2008 Democratic National Convention. Motto of the day: "Change You Can Believe In". The date was also carefully chosen to coincide with the 45th anniversary of Martin Luther King's 1963 I-Have-A-Dream speech. – Note the floor, shaped as a step-cone and reminding of a sacrificial altar, carrying a design echoing the yellow stars on blue background on the flag of the European Union, that was initially introduced in the year 1955, at the time as the flag of the Council of Europe, and became in 1986 the flag of the then European Community. The fact the DNC 2008 prominently used this design confirms the process of 'convergence' that's being underway. The official interpretation of the design given by this godless political structure now known as the EU, that has stubbornly refused to make any mentioning of God in any of their treaties, talks merely of the twelve yellow stars as a symbol of completion and perfection, akin to the 12 signs of the zodiac (and perhaps reminding us of the name Adam Weishaupt had first in mind for his Illuminati secret society: Perfectibilis!!!). Which also leads directly to the Satanic hubris of these circles who claim for themselves an attribute, perfection, that is entirely reserved for God alone! At the same time, there has been an unofficial statement as well, possibly in an act of deliberate disinformation: one of the three men allegedly involved in the design, by name of Arsène Heitz, claimed in an interview given in 2004 to the Catholic magazine 'Lourdes' to have been inspired by the Book of Revelation, i.e. by Rev. 12:1. "And there appeared a great wonder in heaven; a woman clothed with the sun, and the moon under her feet, and upon her head a crown of twelve stars." Which is the way the Virgin Mary has been widely portrayed throughout the centuries. Also, the flag was adopted on December 8, 1955, which is the Marian feast day of the Immaculate Conception; according to official statements: mere coincidence: But maybe they try to mislead us by playing with religious motifs that are in fact completely foreign to them. But, although with absolute certainty the EU isn't a club of "Marianists" of sort, the pointer to the Book of Revelation appears rather striking for another reason: the Apocalypse of John mentions another woman as well, the one riding on the beast: this could well be none other than the Greek goddess Europa, the name-giver of the EU, being abducted on the back of a bull, that in reality is Zeus, to the shores of Crete. And, sure enough, the office building of the Council of Europe in Brussels has in front of it a bizarre-looking sculpture showing not so much the scene from Greek mythology, but that harlot riding on the back of the beast as described in Rev. 17, most obviously meaning the post-Conciliar modernist Church of today having fallen into apostasy! In other words; these seeming technocrats who at their core are occultists, no doubt, are aware that their political project is part of: the latter days; and them siding with the beast!





And, there is a thing called the Council of Security and Co-operation in Europe, the CSCE¹, which you may not know about, but it is assuming the governing functions of this new tri-circle, concentric structure. And the chosen president

¹ The “Conference on Security and Co-operation in Europe”, CSCE, had been founded in 1973; meanwhile it’s been renamed as the “Organization for Security and Co-operation in Europe”, OSCE, as of January 1, 1995.

of that CSCE is going to be: Mikhail Sergeyevich Gorbachyov ². This is a matter of public record. Now, if you want to know: is this fantasy or reality, just think about the Gulf. You know, we know 6,000 years of history very well. We know it in detail. We know what they ate 6,000 years ago, we know what the women put on as cosmetics, we know an awful lot. Never in that 6,000 years did the whole community of nations make one moral consensus. Never once! Until 1991. Saddam Hussein Tikriti, a butcher, and a pig, and a killer, marched into Kuwait, thinking he had our say-so. He was wrong. And between that and January 15, January 16, midnight, all the nations except three and his own [?], but including Red China and the USSR, agreed that we should stop him and we should fit an army out, a ‘coalition force’ as they call it. This was a moral consensus; I’m not saying it’s morally good or morally bad, but it was a moral consensus. It was the first time in history the community acted, with a community of power, and indeed we did get in, and we did root him out of Kuwait. What’s going to happen for the rest of it, is something else. That was the first moral consensus. There

² Which didn’t come to pass; the CSCE/OSCE has kept an annual rotational system of chairmanship to this day, with always the foreign minister of any given country in that presiding function. For 1991, it was German foreign minister, Hans-Dietrich Genscher; for 1992, the Czechs, Jiří Dienstbier and Jozef Moravčík; for 1993, the Swede, Margaretha af Ugglas; and so forth. However, Gorbachev – who immediately after the fake “dissolution” of the Soviet Union in late December 1991 founded his international platform of influence known as the “Gorbachev Foundation”, which according to analysts Hans Graf Huyn and Christopher Story is but the exteriorised International Department of the CPSU and thus in fact the COMINTERN!!! – *did* play a key role, along with ardent pro-Marxist oil industrialist and longtime UN figure, Maurice Strong, in the 1992 Rio de Janeiro UN Conference on Environment and Development (UNCED) a.k.a. the “Earth Summit”, that brought forth, among other documents with which it is closely interlinked, infamous Khmer-Rouge-style “Agenda 21”, i.e. the “sustainable development” action plan for global deindustrialisation, seeming redistribution of wealth, and, ultimately, impoverishment and depopulation; significantly, all of it greatly supported by the West’s Great and Good and blue-bloods. Gorbachev also developed, with Maurice Strong, the so-called Earth Charter, and founded in 1993 the all-Marxist pseudo-environmental and even quasi-religious organisation “Green Cross International”, pushing forward his unchanged Marxist-Leninist world revolutionary agenda through the deceptive vehicle of environmentalism and “climate protection”, that is now the basis of all “green” organisations across the board, which work, knowingly or unknowingly, the whole lot of them, for an egalitarian, fully collectivised, revolutionary Marxist-Leninist “world society” soon to be living a most miserable existence in an effectively crippled economy, Soviet-, if not North-Korean-style. – “Earth Day”, by the way, was first brought into being in the year 1970, by two different men on two different dates. One happened to be March 21, which was about the (northern) spring equinox; the other was April 22 and is meanwhile firmly established, since 2009 even as “International MOTHER EARTH Day”; no joke! The “small print” in this: April 22, 1970 was the 100th birthday of Comrade Vladimir Ilyich Lenin; an event celebrated by international communism in a manner bordering on religious adoration. Whether a direct communist connection of Democratic Senator Gaylord Nelson, who came up with this April 22 Earth Day event, can ever be proven or not, the fact is: “green” ideas and policies, the more outrageous the better, have indeed been most insidiously furthered and pushed by the very dark-red empire that has never cared whatsoever about the environment, not to speak of man, and would never ever have been able to afford environmental protection in its own sphere in the first place, given simply the disastrous economic failure of the Soviet central planning system. Rather, the objective clearly is to bring the Western economies down, as a lovely reward, one could even say, for their most generous as well as suicidally naïve support of Gorbachev’s “perestroika” and Yeltsin’s deceptive “New Russia”, all the way since the 1980s. – As for all other international forums and organisations, seen from today’s point of view, it’s meanwhile more than obvious that the unchanged Marxist-Leninist Soviet strategists, who merely orchestrated their “system failure” 20 years ago in order to finally prevail, did NOT sell out to the competing model of world hegemony as envisioned by Western power circles, but boldly used it as a vehicle, along the strategic lines of Sun Tzu of ‘peacefully’ entering the enemy’s camp, to further nothing but their own project of Leninist world revolution! They are in the business of defeating capitalism by capitalist means! (Maybe Father Malachi Martin had not read, or not read carefully enough, Anatoliy Golitsyn’s work on the Soviet long-range strategy, ‘New Lies for Old’, published in 1984. But, of course, in 1991, the “Bush model” of a New World Order seemed to have made it. In retrospect: a highly premature conclusion). **Thus, one could assess that this deadly ideology of communism, thought out centuries ago in Europe and financed and supported by subversive and secretive influential groups, may well have (akin to the story of the sorcerer’s apprentice) gained a life of its own and may well swallow even the very elites that brought it into power.** The Satanic reality of Soviet communism does indeed give such an outcome a fairly good chance. Seen, however, from a religious perspective, these communist thugs and assassins are going to be used by God as a whip, as a scythe, to punish a world fallen into utmost apostasy! We should never forget about this latter point.

are going to be other moral ‘consensuses’ by the community, the international community. It is here, and it is being installed. The sea-change is taking place. You can follow it very closely if you read between the lines or read those that write about it, who are insiders in it. But, it is a fact. Now, the difficulty arises for us in our mission about human life, it’s already hitting you in the face: This is being run on the demonic energy of the Great Death Wish! And, it’s worse than that. It’s more ominous than that. You know, in the history of man, the story of man, there are two major hinge moments, and you must reflect on them. The first hinge moment was in what is called: the Garden of Eden, when this man and this woman (whom I have to meet some day and talk with about what they did to me) made a decision which affected the whole human race. And when the Bible presents them, gravelling in their guilt, there are two other people present, besides Adam; you must blame Adam even though he said the woman gave him to eat, but: typical man grumbly placing the blame on the little woman. But, besides Adam (the author of my mystery), there was Lucifer represented as a serpent, but he was there: ‘You shall be as gods!’ [Gen. 3:5] And there was a third person, whom God referred to as the woman. ‘And you will lie in wait for her heel.’ [Gen. 3:15] She was there. – The second hinge moment was on an ugly knob of hill outside ancient Jerusalem at about 3 o’clock in the afternoon, one Friday 1,957 years ago, as we calculate time, on which a man hung dying, trying to breathe and ultimately, at one given moment, his lungs were so full of liquid he could give out one loud breath and he could never draw it back, and he was dead; in a few minutes, he was a cadaver, he was dead. It was Jesus. And, present at his death there was Lucifer. Christ himself, a week before his death, said, ‘You are the children of Lucifer, you want to kill me’, with that clarity Jesus had. And there was Mary, standing by the cross. And the decision Jesus made then affected the whole human race. A second hinge moment! Now, don’t you see this as clearly as the nose of my face – or the nose of anybody’s face, for that matter? Don’t you see that we are at a hinge moment? Why? Because, once the nations have agreed that they will use the pro-death, anti-life method of governing, because they have to, in their reckoning, that they are making a decision which affects the whole race of man! And, without talking out of court, I wish we could publish their documents we already possess on the codified plans for dealing with African populations, dealing with Eastern European populations, dealing with China’s population. These are not haphazard things; they are planned very carefully, backed by billions. But don’t you see that this attitude is again: man deciding about the fate of the human race? And, if it’s a hinge moment, truly, if it is a hinge moment, you’re going to have that gentleman we always refer to, in Ireland, as ‘Old Nick’, or ‘the Old Bastard’; quite respectfully, by the way, we have a great respect for the Old Bastard in Ireland. And there is Mary. It’s a hinge moment. Because they’re deciding the fate of the human race. And once we get onto that plain, once we start dealing with the whole of the human race, we are dealing with the family of man; and as the family of man, with the children of God. And God is directly implicated! It’s no longer the French killing the German, or the Irish killing the British, or vice versa. Or some colonial empire oppressing Blacks or Yellows or Reds or Pinks or Blues. No! This is the case where men have made a decision that affects the very family of man; and God is implicated immediately. And so is Jesus. And so is Lucifer. And so is Mary. That’s where you are! And that’s what you’re up against! And you’re not fighting merely Planned Parenthood, no, you’re fighting that liar, that murderer from the beginning whom Jesus contemned so much! Because Lucifer aimed at taking away from my Lord Jesus the souls He died to save.



Margaret Sanger, who founded in 1921 the forerunner of Planned Parenthood, which then was the American Birth Control League, was very much part of the general milieu of Theosophy, socialism and feminism that dominated her time. As one looks at the publications by the Theosophical Society, founded i.a. by spiritist swindler Helena Petrovna Blavatsky, one finds prominent references to Lucifer everywhere! Their monthly journal, founded in 1887 and continued after Blavatsky's death in 1891 by Annie Besant, was named "Lucifer" before it was renamed in 1897 to "The Theosophical Review". Note the sinistre phrase on the cover shown above, "Designed to bring to light the hidden things of darkness". They refused the Satanist label, however, using shallow arguments trying to explain 'Lucifer' not as an equivalent to the devil but as the "light-giver". Everyone familiar with Scripture, especially with the Book of Genesis, or e.g. with Goethe's Faust,

can easily see through this masquerade that tries, like the serpent in the Garden of Eden, to persuade us: 'Shed your childhood neurosis (Freud termed religion in such way), grow up, and at last become gods yourselves!' (These circles ADORE Nietzsche, by the way, just as the Nazis did, who too were an offspring of the occult stream of Theosophy; not to mention Lenin, who definitely was part of Satanist circles while he was in Western Europe). Also the head of the German section of their Theosophical Society, the Austrian Rudolf Steiner, used the name 'Lucifer' in his journal 'Lucifer Gnosis'. Alice Bailey then named her 1922-founded publishing house at first 'Lucifer Trust' before, shortly after, changing the name to 'Lucis Trust'. Lucifer still is a prominent factor in today's 'ecotericist' landscape (widely known as the 'New Age') as can be e.g. seen in the writings by New Age 'guru', David Spangler, whose 1977 book "Reflections on the Christ" is a horrifying case in point. Spangler writes on page 45: "Lucifer comes to give us the final gift of wholeness. If we accept it then he is free and we are free. That is the Luciferic initiation. It is one that many people now, in the days ahead, will be facing, for it is an initiation into the New Age. It is an initiation of leaving the past and moving into the new, shedding our guilts and fears, our anxieties, our needs, our temptations, and becoming whole and at peace because we have recognized our inner light that enfolds us, the light of God. In the new age consciousness there is no good and evil ..." - The official Theosophical and Anthroposophical Societies, in astounding harmony, still have a number of book titles in their programmes openly referring to Lucifer. - Another fact hardly looked at by analysts of Theosophy and the New Age: the subversive underground of the second half of the 19th century encompassed, as close allies in the spirit of evil, both so-called Theosophists AND the seemingly political movement of socialism/communism (and wasn't there the Chicago-based anarchist periodical, "Lucifer The Light-Bearer"???) And didn't Marxist strategist Saul Alinsky, a century later, make a reference to Lucifer in the foreword to his 'pragmatic primer', "Rules for Radicals"? They are birds of a feather. (Do read Richard Wurmbrand's superb analysis of the Satanist reality of the whole of communism, entitled "Marx and Satan"). They share the same Satanic mindset. They are both the descendants of Marx, Babeuf, Weishaupt, Voltaire, and all the way back to the forerunners of Freemasonry, i.e. the largely invisible movement of the Rosicrucians, who are assumed to be at the core of Satanist activity past and present, and the legendary Knights Templar, who had started out initially as a Christian order of knighthood and finally embraced questionable occult practices and outright Satanism, which brought about their enforced dissolution. 'Theosophy' isn't about spirituality just like socialism/communism isn't about politics!!! And, true, the decade of breakthrough for international socialism, i.e. the 1880s, was also the decade of breakthrough for so-called Theosophy. Every sphere was now facing a frontal attack: music, the arts, literature, language (think of the absurd progressivist undertaking of Esperanto!), even the mode of burial (remember the intense propaganda for cremation that started in the 1870s and 1880s), the revival of the ancient Olympic Games, and so on and so forth; not to forget the 'people of France's gift' to the United States of 1886 known as the Statue of Liberty placed on that little island in New York Harbor, that too continues the Luciferic theme: the correct title of the statue is "Liberty Enlightening the World", and her torch of light is the same as Lucifer's and Nimrod's, by the way (you see: they're BABYLONIANS!!!), and has been also adopted by Soviet-communist "iconography". It was an overall cultural shift from Christian tradition towards godless and God-hating utopianism, perfectly preparing for the toppling of most major monarchies in Europe and beyond, and for ruthless revolutions to take their places. - Following the orders of their evil master, Lucifer, Theosophists and socialists/communists alike have been seeking to destroy the God-given traditional order as a whole, first for the mere sake of destroying, and ultimately so to corrupt and do away with the human soul itself. The Abbé Augustin Barruel's famous work of 1797 entitled, "Memoirs Illustrating the History of Jacobinism", presented online by Google Books, provides a first-class insight into the devilish logic of the revolution, whether French, Russian, or present. Read it!

Now, if that is so, if that is so, then we have to find out, you have to examine carefully in your own mind why they're doing is. I mean, after all, you meet them, and they're very well dressed, and the women are educated, and, as I said, they are established, respected people, they're gentle with their dogs, and their daughters and sons, you know, and they play Golf, and they're respectable people in the community, they wouldn't hurt a fly, and they *cringe* at the idea of beating a child or a woman or a dog or anything like that, especially a dog. And they have great mercy for the snail darter, you know, the snail darter. And there's a thing then called the 'Blue-Eyed Falcon' we have discovered in the Persian Gulf: [?] really come off the blue-eyed falcon. The darn thing is vicious, it bites your hand! Well, the reporter has got blood-poisoning from it, but nevertheless it deserves great – you know, 'Saddam Hussein should not have dripped oil in that poor, that poor bird. To me, he must be a bad man.' Pardon the sardonic tone, but, you know. Now, what is happening to the world? What is

happening? Well, I tell you, my friends, it's very simple: You should realise this, and probably some of you know it better than I do: every day there is a movement of capital, a flow of capital and capital investment and capital goods throughout the world. It's trade. Without trade, we'll die, or we kill each other. Who does that? What's behind it? What's the vehicle? The vehicle is the international markets: Tokyo, Singapore, Paris, New York, Rome, and the others. And on those markets, there are gentlemen – some women, but it's rather a male club – who play with a minimum of 40 to 60 billion dollars a day on that market, on those markets. They decide if a government lives or dies, they decide on the flow of capital and investment and the creation of goods and their sales. They decide endemic hunger, they decide plenty, they decide recession, they decide depression, they decide prosperity. But it was alright until the end of the Second World War. Then, the moneymen who wield financial hegemony, because this is the real hegemony, found out that they had to move from individual capitalism to the managerial system; so they did. That, that didn't quite work. So they moved to then the multi-national capitalism, and that rapidly transformed to [?] trans-national capitalism. It still didn't work. Why didn't it work? Well, you know: money; money is a funny thing, including funny money. And money, they found, wasn't, it wasn't making it. You see, the thing about money is extraordinary: its fruitfulness is funny. There's no such thing as static money, by the way. It either multiplies and increases, or it decreases and disappears; even with our little few shillings, or dollars; you know that well. It must progress, it must have fruitfulness. They found it wasn't having that fruitfulness no matter what they did. And they found that before, when we went to war because we wanted to make the other guy die first before he did it to us, we still ended up with the same difficulties. And because we now have international trade of a very intense kind and every nation must trade and there is a new developmental stage in human society, something else had to be done, the situation had to change. The answer? The answer is the human community, the creation of a one-world-government. Because, it's very simple: we create the new omni-nation-multi-trading-party system; it must be supervised; supervision means rules; governmental rules; it means that therefore there is a government over it all, which has already been blueprinted and drawn up, and we know the members of it. It won't be American, it won't be European. It will be trans-national. And they hope to create a system of government, but in that, for that mentality, for this new community, there are two big blocks, and they both are being dealt with. The difficulty with the new system is this: they will have to deal with people's education. And this was achieved by George Shultz with the 1985 all-purpose-agreement between the USA and the USSR. You should read it. It's cultural agreement which implies that by a certain year all high-schoolers in Russia, and here, in China, will be learning the same curricula in different languages. The complete cultural exchange; because we seek homogeneity. **But there are two great blocks to homogeneity in this community of nations. One is the Roman Catholic Church, at least it was. It has been liquidated as regards any effective blockage of this, unfortunately. It has been infiltrated, and the life sapped out of it. The second one was Islam.** Islam, the arc of Islam runs from Algier over to Indonesia, almost one billion people. Among them is rampant fundamental Muslimism. That has to be changed. Because, they will not fit in their [?] compromises. How best to do that than to have an arrangement whereby over three quarters of a million infidels – that's you and me, by the way – are in their land. As they say, 'Onward, Christian Soldiers!' Which did happen with the Gulf War, and we are now irredeemably and inexorably within the Middle East, and I suppose, I'm only speculating here, our chief ally there will cease to be Israel and will be Saudi-Arabia, not

necessarily with the House of Saud, and not necessarily with the House of Al-Sabah, which were short-lived, but with those countries. Because Islam must be affected. Without Islam we cannot build this community. And therefore it must be permeated and changed. And the idea of the irredentist Islam which keeps all infidels out of its land, its sacred land: that must be got rid of. Now, I said that we are linked inexorably with the USSR in this, not so much with China for the present moment, it's in a developmental stage, but it's coming around; it's coming around, according to the calculations of the 'wise men'. The 'wise men' of the West and the Leninists are working on this, this is their aim. It's the only way their money can be fruitful. It's the only way they can avoid a war; even though Mr. Gorbachev has his SS-25s and SS-26s still directed at the United States and at Europe, but that's really a matter of habit with the Russians. The difficulty is that there's a third contender. There's a third member. The USA and the USSR are the contenders for hegemony, peaceful hegemony, as Mr. Gorbachev said in Helsinki, 'We are now peaceful competitors' in the rush for global power in our community of nations. Mr. Gorbachev. Gorbi. There is a third contender, and he is a lonely contender. He has no bombs, no armies, no planes. He has certain portfolios worth about a hundred and fifty billion dollars, I suppose. It's the Pope. Pope John Paul II. Who is a Pole. He is 72 years old. He sits at the tiller of the Bark of Peter, scanning the skies and watching the seas and knowing that he can do nothing about it at all. He is a Pope at bay in his own house. He hasn't got the support of his Catholics. What does he rely upon? Well, he is relying upon, and he always points to the sky, on the advent of our Lady, the Virgin, to come and change everything. And he predicts that it cannot go through; the plan for the new world community will collapse. But he predicts, as he always has and insists, that the resolution of this, and therefore the resolution of the main enemy we face as pro-lifers, will be done before the millennium, before the year 2000. My friends, it isn't very far away! Thank God, I'm 70! You know, it's selfish, but, you know, it's a thought. Pray for my soul! And there is going to be, definitely, a rough period ahead of us, and in that, if we know that we're facing a systemic arrangement, that it's not simply separate

groups, that there is a plan, it's not a conspiracy ³, but people just think like this, and they meet each other, and inter-marry, and they go to the same spas, and they go to bed together, they eat together, they are playing with the same money, and they've the same aims; **so they want the same thing: and they want us dead. And they want all pro-life out of the question. They want to have a free hand with the human frame.** That's what we're facing, and it's systemic, it's not single units. This is a plan we're up against. And anything we do is known to them, and we have to plan very carefully and find out what we *can* do and what we *can't* do. I would be unfair to you if I didn't tell you that if God acts as He has always acted, you know, the Bible says, 'The fathers ate sour grapes, and the children's teeth are blunted.' [Jer. 31:29] There is this God's terrible Law. Okay, the father and the mother are both on drugs, and the father's got AIDS. The children suffer. Why didn't God save them? No no; they are the children. Saddam Hussein is a butcher, he decided to take Kuwait, we went in and mobbed up the place and flung him out. Who suffered chiefly? The Iraqis. God's Law again. Why didn't He save the Iraqis from this one thug, this killer? He didn't. He has this funny Law. **And that's why we're involved. We will bear part of the punishment, even though we are innocent. And that's what Jesus said: 'Weep for yourselves and for your children.'** The present Pope, when he talks about this, will say that we can mitigate the sufferings ahead of us, we can't avert them. Which is a frightening summation of the situation. Nor would I be fair to you if I didn't say to you one more thing apropos the situation, and then I think mental diarrhoea may be [?] over, so I'll vacate this podium. God has a reaction we can't have: HE LOVES US! And He does punish us and will punish us, punish our generation and our children's children's generation, they will be punished. It always comes; because the abomination belongs to us as a race. We can mitigate it but not avert it. **BUT: He does love us! And He is not going to let the human race, nor us, fall to the hands of our enemy, Lucifer. He is not going to give him that victory.** Christ will conquer, but, you know, when you think about it seriously, see it as a

³ Or one could say it's a conspiracy firmly institutionalised. - Yet, the much more ruthless among these competing conspiracies is the one of world communism. Just remember John F. Kennedy's desperate address and request for assistance, "The President and the Press", that he gave on April 27, 1961 to the American Newspaper Publishers Association at the Waldorf Astoria in New York, regarding America's life-or-death struggle against the deadly threat of world communism. (This speech is now frequently being abused by taking quotes out of context that were mere side remarks concerning secret societies; yet, the whole topic of the speech was, of course, the communist danger, not the least in the light of the United States' Bay of Pigs debacle a week earlier and the questionable role in it of certain American publishing media.)

"[...] But I do ask every publisher, every editor, and every newsman in the nation to reexamine his own standards, and to recognize the nature of our country's peril. In time of war, the government and the press have customarily joined in an effort based largely on self-discipline, to prevent unauthorized disclosure to the enemy. In time of 'clear and present danger', the courts have held that even the privileged rights of the First Amendment must yield to the public's need for national security. Today no war has been declared – and however fierce the struggle may be, it may never be declared in the traditional fashion. Our way of life is under attack. Those who make themselves our enemy are advancing around the globe. The survival of our friends is in danger. And yet no war has been declared, no borders have been crossed by marching troops, no missiles have been fired. If the press is awaiting a declaration of war before it imposes the self-discipline of combat conditions, then I can only say that no war ever posed a greater threat to our security. If you are awaiting a finding of 'clear and present danger', then I can only say that the danger has never been more clear and its presence has never been more imminent. It requires a change in outlook, a change in tactics, a change in missions – by the government, by the people, by every businessman or labor leader, and by every newspaper. For we are opposed around the world by a **monolithic and ruthless conspiracy** that relies primarily on covert means for expanding its sphere of influence – on infiltration instead of invasion, on subversion instead of elections, on intimidation instead of free choice, on guerillas by night instead of armies by day. It is a system which has conscripted vast human and material resources into the building of a tightly knit, highly efficient machine that combines military, diplomatic, intelligence, economic, scientific, and political operations. Its preparations are concealed, not published. Its mistakes are buried, not headlined. Its dissenters are silenced, not praised. No expenditure is questioned, no rumor is printed, no secret is revealed. It conducts the Cold War, in short, with a war-time discipline no democracy would ever hope or wish to match. [...]"

hinge moment in the history where God's family is affected. Isn't it a local war, or a minor thing? No. Somebody has tried to take His family away from Him! When you think about that, then you realise that there is a Father in the family, He is in Heaven; there is a Son, and a Brother, and it's Jesus; there's a Mother. And, if we really want to have a guiding light in all we do, then we have to think of Her as the coordinator of this human family, the Mother of the living, whether they are in the body or in the spirit. And only, according to the sayings of the present Pope and to anybody I respect who examines human history in its transcendental meaning, only when She – as the Bible says: COMES, for this age, you know, with the twelve stars crowning her, with the crescent moon beneath her feet, Islam, and with Her Son in Her arms – will rule the nations with the scepter: only then we will be free; momentarily. Hallelujah.

What was almost impossible to predict at the height of George H. W. Bush's 'New World Order' frenzy back in 1991, unless one would have studied Anatoliy Golitsyn's book *New Lies for Old*, is the fact that the pan-communist bloc had in the late 1950s 'scientifically' developed an utterly complex long-range strategy to achieve communist world victory, by all means. The fall of the Berlin Wall was not the achievement of Ronald Reagan, but a coldly calculated chess move by Moscow. As was the whole seeming wave of 'democratisation' in Eastern Europe in that year of 1989 a tightly scheduled deception operation planned and coordinated by the Soviet strategists. The abolition of the Communist Party of the Soviet Union was a swindle; so was the alleged dissolution of the USSR in late December 1991; it wasn't dissolved but simply relabelled as, henceforth, the "Commonwealth of Independent States". Moscow still controls all "former" Soviet republics the same way as ever. But, as you could read in the excerpts from Golitsyn's two books further above, it was all part of the strategy. The communist bloc could massively modernise and improve both their economies and their military, and, just as important, sneak into all supranational structures, by a multitude of seemingly independent "Soviet Unions". All

objectives, as can easily be seen if one opens one's eyes, have been met. Former Western Europe is being gradually swallowed by the communist East, the key step of which was of course the EU-enlargement of 2004, which was set into force, MIND: on May 1st of that year: Labour Day!!! And the United States, indeed, in an ever more critical position of isolation. Monetaristic-Corporatist Globalism has been used, exploited, and hi-jacked for the purpose of the revolution. Capitalism (a communist term, by the way) is in the process of being defeated and crushed by the communists, ironically *via capitalist means!*

Let's once more recapitulate. 1989: Four years into the rule of Mikhail Gorbachev, two years after his proclamation of 'Perestroika', but nevertheless out of the blue sky, a series of collapses shook *all* communist regimes in Eastern Europe. In almost regular intervals, TV-viewers in the West could watch, like the falling of dominoes, the 'toppling' of one regime after the other. Strangely, both the Western media and politics took events at face value and bought in the deception. The fact is, however, that Poland's Solidarność had been but an artificial and controlled opposition movement, and Czechoslovakia's Charta 77, of which Václav Havel had been a member, but a fake dissident group. The 'collapse' of Honecker's regime in East Germany came as a complete surprise to both Helmut Kohl and even Erich Honecker himself; yet things went miraculously smooth. The same suspicious 'smoothness' could be seen in the 'transitions' within the other satellite states, with merely one single dramatic scene at the end: the lynching of Romanian dictator Nicolae Ceaușescu on Christmas Day 1989 (they seem to LOVE usurping Christmas Day for their insidious provocations: two years later, Gorbachev declared the Soviet Union abolished also on Christmas Day).

Within half a year, the geopolitical landscape of Europe had completely changed, so it appeared. The Berlin Wall was gone. The iron curtain, that had divided Europe for such a long time, was declared a thing of the past. Even the late Archduke of Austria, Otto von Habsburg, for decades head of the Pan Europa Movement, had on August 19, 1989 along with one the Gorbachevs of Hungary, Imre Pozsgay (who today is an advisor to present "nationalist" Hungarian Prime Minister Viktor Orbán), enthusiastically held a "Pan-Europian Picnic" near the Austrian-Hungarian border at the Hungarian town of Sopron (in German named Ödenburg), certain that now the peoples and cultures of Central Europe, that had been so dear to him, would finally come together. The event "quickened" the release of 600 to 700 East Germans into the West, although Hungarian border control had been simply instructed to look the other way and let them go. Everyone was cheering. And nowhere could be heard even the slightest expression of doubt about the genuineness of it all. However, tragically, the Archduke was cynically used by the communists to assist them in a duplicitous propaganda coup. They are masters in letting the hated "class enemy" do the work for them! Today, Otto von Habsburg's whole-hearted engagement isn't even a footnote in the history of the alleged "fall" of communism. Instead, twenty years later, on the spot where Austria politely – and as it thought: "heroically" – had opened its border and allowed everybody in, has meanwhile been erected one of those deadly socialist-realist propaganda monuments, tellingly entitled "Umbruch" (i.e. radical change): it was a brutal invasion, by "peaceful" means!



Referring to that event of August 1989, “former” East German communist and now Federal Chancellor of unified Germany, Angela Merkel, made in 2009 the following devious remark: “Hungary gave wings to the will of the Germans from the GDR.” No mentioning of Western Europe; no mentioning of Austria that, after all, had opened *its* borders; and no mentioning, certainly, of the heir of the last Kaiser of the Austro-Hungarian Monarchy, who had helped them so generously. Rather, the communists are merely congratulating each other for the accomplishment of this great historic task of overwhelming the West, without the West realising at all what was going on! Today, since the outside borders of the European Schengen Agreement were shifted away in late 2007 from the eastern borders of once Western Europe further towards the East, partly Finland, but

definitely Germany, Austria and Italy have practically no borders protecting them any more against the unchanged communist sphere!!! Borders have been taken away; except for Britain, Sweden and Denmark, national currencies; distinctive passport formats (they are now all of the same burgundy colour that had always been and still is the colour of (Soviet-)Russian passports, with the format of EU and Russian passports meanwhile perfectly “harmonised”); and soon will even vanish national tax hegemony and national militaries. The nation state in Western Europe is gone and is now being swallowed, via the EU's ever progressing convergence with the communist East and the unchanged Soviet Union, into an all-Eurasian communist bloc; and trains will again be deporting dissenters and “enemies of the people” all across Europe, this time into the new Eurasian-communist concentration camps of the future.

By October 1990, Germany was formally reunified. Helmut Kohl was convinced he had written world history. Yet, 10 years later he had been turned into a *persona non grata* ...

1991: Although the inspirer of this giant ‘liberalisation process’, the Soviet Union itself didn't take the decisive step before 1991. Again, events appeared dramatic (the bizarre ‘August coup’), but again were completely construed. Also the sequence of events wasn't logical but, for the trained eye, obviously a prepared script being acted out in typical Leninist boldness. Still, the West chose to most readily believe what it had been wishing for so desperately for so long.

As 1991 turned into 1992, the world as a whole was different. Within two and half years, communism in both Eastern Europe and the Soviet Union had abolished itself and had given way to a new, ‘post-communist’ and ‘democratic’ era, albeit under the very same personell ...

But, as we look closer, especially in the case of the “New Russia”, we see nothing but a change of labels. In everything. NOTHING was abolished; things merely took on a new mask more convenient to the gullible West.

- The Union of Socialist Soviet Republics became (except for the 3 Baltic republics that are now in the EU) the “Commonwealth of Independent States”, a theoretical construct rather than an entity recognised by International Law; yet, it shows the unchanged *internal union* of all supposed ‘post-Soviet’ and newly ‘independent’ republics. There has been no change!
- The RSFSR (Russian Socialist Federative Soviet Republic) was now the “Russian Federation”.
- The military alliance of the Warsaw Pact and the communist economic community COMECON were replaced by informal collaboration behind the scenes.
- The CPSU was transformed into a perfectly controlled seeming multi-party system, with unchanged communists playing their roles solely for Western consumption, whereas the communist youth organisation Komsomol, far from being dissolved, was transformed into a series of new “youth leagues”; with their newspaper “Komsomolskaya Pravda”, now a mainstream newspaper, still there!
- The secret services were renamed, not for the first time at all in Soviet history, this time from KGB to FSB. The ‘reforms’ were, at best, cosmetic. Military intelligence, however, kept its name, GRU (by the way, Putin is GRU, *not* KGB)!

- The classically Soviet central planning economy “matured” (in the Leninist sense of the word) into a display-only of a free market economy, complete with pompous company buildings, boards of directors, shareholders, and even a Moscow Stock Exchange; yet, all controlled, as ever, by the Party and intelligence apparatus. Like with the instant ‘democrats’, no one in the West seems to have wondered where the instant ‘marketeers’ and instant ‘entrepreneurs’ had suddenly come from, not to mention the question how they could have ever acquired their enormous starting capitals in a system that had rigorously made impossible any private accumulation of wealth whatsoever. (It is these instant-oligarchs, by the way, who effectively besiege nowadays, with all their unchanged revolutionary prolet behaviour, the top luxury resorts of Western Europe. The once so elegant French Côte d’Azur, for one example, is now at 30% in Bolshevik hands. Bourgeois exclusiveness is under attack.)
- On September 12, 2005, the Governor of Ulyanovsk introduced a henceforth annual “Day of Conception” (or merely “Procreation Day”), as part of the nationwide efforts to overcome the Russian Federation’s demographic crisis, which means that couples in the area are given a day off so to basically do their best to make a baby for which, should it then be born on June 12, the “post-Soviet era’s” so-called Russia Day, attractive monetary rewards are paid by the state. The peculiar thing about this, apart from the militaristic aspect of it, is the fact that Ulyanovsk is named after the “father” of the Bolshevik Revolution, Vladimir Ilyich Lenin, whose real surname was *Ulyanov*. Thus, this initiative and the babies it encourages to be brought into existence are very visibly dedicated to Lenin, and as such to the continuing cause of the communist revolution.
- All “formerly”-Soviet media- resp. propaganda outlets have remained perfectly intact: their “press agencies” (Ria) Novosti and (Itar) Tass; the flagship of Soviet newspapers and organ of the Communist Party, Pravda (i.e. “Truth”); Izvestia; Komsomolskaya Pravda, and so forth. How much criticism is really allowed, can be seen in the deaths of several journalists working for the “critical”, “post-Soviet” Novaya Gazeta (co-owned by Mikhail Gorbachev), among them most prominently Anna Politkovskaya, famous for her investigations of the Chechnya situation, who was shot dead by an unknown killer in the staircase of her house, execution-style, on October 7, 2006, and thus on Vladimir Putin’s birthday. In her well-known 2004 book, “Putin’s Russia: Life in a Failing Democracy”, far from revealing the full continuity of the Soviet system, she nevertheless made a fatal mistake, obviously crossing a red line: she ridiculed Putin, describing him as a pale secret service officer who now, instead of guarding the limousine convoys, strode up the ceremonial stairs of the Kremlin Palace like a new czar; and neither did she miss letting her readers know of the funny contortions by Putin and comrades when trying to perform, during Mass in Russian orthodox churches, the sign of the cross. Putin, by the way, took cynical revenge by commenting on her death saying, “she had brought more damage to Russia by her death, than by her work.” (Which perfectly sums it up: Politkovskaya, despite her courageous reporting on Chechnya, showed no signs of knowledge of overall Soviet strategy. Her tragic death, seen from the perspective of Soviet power, was nothing more than the crushing of an annoying insect).
- According to the late author and political analyst Christopher Story, there has also been no change in the cruel GULag system. Mr. Story said he was in the possession of lists giving the actual “street addresses” of 1,700 concentration camps throughout “Russia”. And let’s remember defector Yuri Bezmenov’s estimate made in 1984 that at any given time up to 30 million people were imprisoned in Gulag camps. As for the ‘luckier’ common citizens of Russia, they can’t move freely either, as they would possibly wish, because the old Soviet



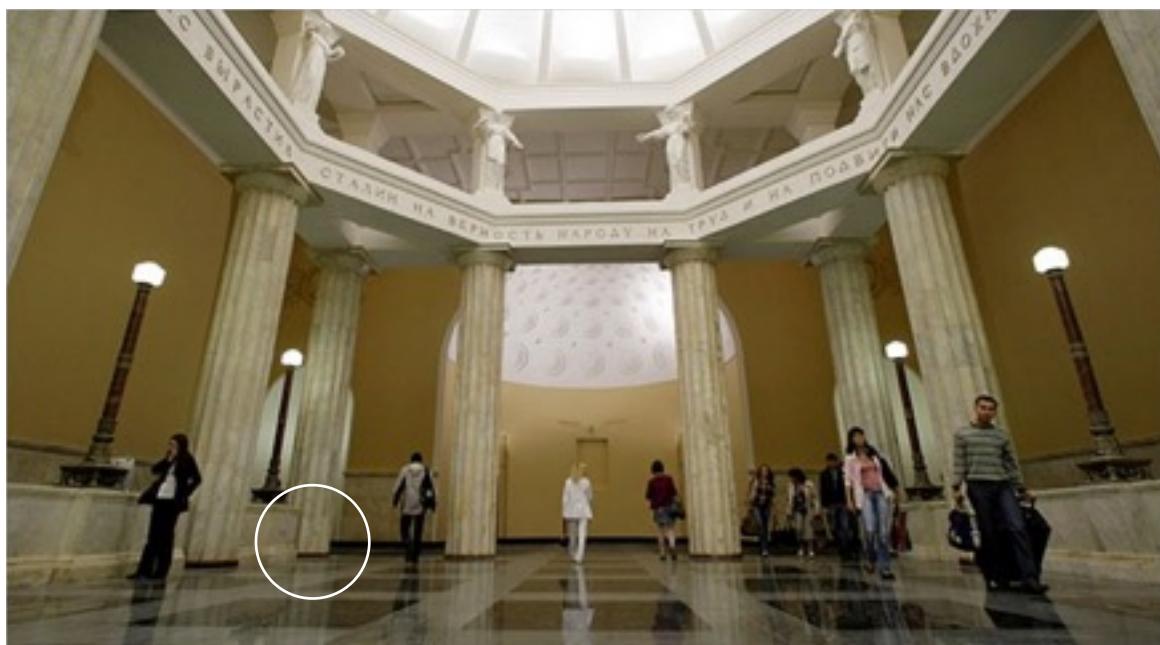
internal passport system known as “prapiska”, that regulates any movement through the country, is still in place. Regarding foreign tourists intending to travel Russia on an individual basis, they will have so many bureaucratic obstacles put in front of them that they will gladly give in and either join a guided (and controlled) travel-tour or won’t come to Russia in the first place.

- The ‘liberalisations’ have come to pass solely in “Russia”, and within Russia mainly in Moscow. The other ex-Soviet republics (except the Baltics and, for a while, Ukraine and Georgia) have maintained their open oppression. There wasn’t even a cosmetic change, apart from their alleged independence with new flags and new coats of arms. Their ‘independence’ is an illusion. They are unchangedly tied to Moscow, the same old centre of Soviet power. This means also that as for military- and intelligence capabilities these republics must be added to those of the “Russian Federation”. They are still ONE. As for alleged cultural re-nationalisation of these republics, at every opportunity (i.e. in TV documentaries on these republics as are shown at an amazing rate on German TV channels, obviously so to prepare people for the merger soon to come) one can see that always and everywhere officials and even ordinary people do *not* speak the national language but Russian! Also, a de-Russianisation in these republics, whether Kasakhstan or anywhere else, never happened. There still lives, as ever, a considerable portion of ethnic Russians in these territories (which one can easily see in sports: 3 out of 4 athletes, say from Kasakhstan, aren’t Kasakhs but ethnic Russians!).
- The old Soviet cadre training school for future Third-World revolutionaries, infamous Patrice-Lumumba University for Peoples’ Friendship, is now called “Russian University for Peoples’ Friendship”. It’s still there!
- The monstrous Red Stars on the Kremlin towers, installed by Stalin in the 1930s, haven’t been removed to date, and never will be. And they’re still lighted from within, day and night, 24/7, by thousands of Watts. Also, the Red Star in

fact has never vanished from “Russian” military vehicles, aircraft and ships and was in March 2010 also officially re-adopted as the emblem of the Russian Armed Forces, however with the more ‘sympathetic’ facelifting of having a fine blue margin around its edges: deception everywhere! – See on the following page a night view of the most grandiose of the Kremlin towers, Spasskaya Tower, with the bright shining Red Star on top of it (had the communist era been indeed been abandoned, the lightings for these Red Stars would certainly have been immediately switched off by the end of 1991 and finally the Stars themselves removed; none of which, of course, ever took place). In the foreground the ‘Holy of Holies’ not only of the unchanged Soviet Union, but indeed of world communism: the sinistre and demonic Lenin Mausoleum, that still hosts Lenin’s corpse like in the ‘old days’ of the Soviet Union; no change. And ‘pilgrimage’ – maybe on a lesser scale, but even that can’t be known for sure – still is going on today! Also, it’s funny to see them ‘hiding’ the Lenin Mausoleum for their May 9th Military Parades, but having it for the rest of the year prominently visible as always, and so well-kept and ever perfectly cleaned and polished!

- Whatever new orders and medals may have been introduced since 1992 to give the “change” credibility, most awards still show the same old Soviet esthetics and, in some cases, next to identical design. The Order of Lenin, the highest decoration in the Soviet era, couldn’t possibly be transformed, for obvious reasons. Yet, the award medal “Hero of the Soviet Union” is now, merely with a change in the colour of its ribbon, the award medal “Hero of the Russian Federation.” [!!!] The former “Order of Friendship of Peoples” is now the “Order of Friendship”, with the Soviet coat of arms in the centre replaced by a mere globe but otherwise the same. Furthermore, the design of the Medals for Distinction in Military Service, 1st and 2nd Class, hasn’t changed *at all!* – Everyone can check out these bold continuities on the Wikipedia pages on Soviet resp. Russian awards and medals.
- Officials and representatives of the “New Russia” still address each other, in unchanged revolutionary manner, by first plus patronymic names without family name, albeit without saying “Comrade” any longer, at least in front of Western cameras. Thus, Vladimir Putin is “Vladimir Vladimirovich”, and Mikhail Gorbachev is “Mikhail Sergeyevich”. Whereas the obligatory address in the military and the militia is *still*, e.g.: “Comrade General”! Nothing has changed!
- The old Soviet anthem, that had replaced the Internationale in 1944, commissioned by Stalin and written by Alexandrov, was again adopted in the year 2000, after a break of 8 years during which a traditional tune by Mikhail Glinka was in use but never really taken to heart by anyone.
- The unchanged communist ruling class in the unchanged Soviet Union’s unchanged “classless society” *loves* Vladimir Putin. He has managed to reintroduce the image of a benevolent, albeit rigid (and cruel if necessary) “father of the nation” not seen since the days of Yossif Stalin. His manifold public appearances serve this purpose: Putin, the statesman; Putin, the pilot; Putin, the navy man; Putin, the craftsman; Putin, the sportsman (in fact, he once was a very successful judoka); Putin, also, the half-naked partisan; Putin, the attender of church services; Putin, the traditional Russian; and so on and so forth. This has nothing to do with the behaviour of Western politicians especially before elections, but represents rather, once again, an all-powerful totalitarian “Beloved Leader” in the making! (And Golitsyn even foresaw this: after the calculated chaos under Yeltsin, possibly a change to a military leadership!)

- On August 25, 2009, Moscow's Kurskaya Metro station was solemnly re-opened after complete renovation. However, the renovation of this socialist-classicist 'underground palace' first opened on New Year's Day of 1950 under Stalin, with elegant marble floors and huge Red Stars on the stucco ceilings, also included the restoration of inscriptions on the vestibule in the entrance hall praising him, that had been removed in the course of Khrushchev's deceptive "de-Stalinisation" after the dictator's death in 1953: "Stalin raised us to be loyal to the people, inspired us to labor and deeds," derived from the second verse of the original text of the Soviet Union's Alexandrov anthem adopted in 1944, abolished in 1992, and again introduced, with again changed lyrics, under Putin in the year 2000. As can be seen in the picture below, the highly metaphysical niche of light in the background no more has the original statue of Stalin, that after its removal by Khrushchev went lost and was now finally decided not be put up again as a copy. Otherwise, the whole original Stalinist architecture is perfectly restored (as is being restored Stalinism itself, that was in fact merely a more square-headed variant of Leninism and *not* a deviation of it, and along with it the full militarisation of Soviet society akin to the 1930s and '40s; Putin, as a man of *military* intelligence and along with his friends, conducts this militaristic renaissance with great zeal and great ambition, as war might well be needed to finally reach complete communist victory throughout the world).



Kurskaya Metro Station in Moscow. The vestibule in the entrance hall now again carrying praises of Stalin!

Also, there are inscribed the maxims, "For the People, For Stalin" and "For the Defence of Stalingrad". Dmitri Gayev, chief of the Moscow Metro services, said in the opening ceremony, "Our task was to restore the station in its original style. This station is an architectural monument." – It's quite interesting to see, as one looks at the various 'art works' of socialist realism resp. socialist classicism, also known as 'Stalin Gothic', how closely it all resembles the type of architecture favoured by Stalin's rival dictator, Adolf Hitler. Well, the two totalitarianisms weren't too far from each other anyway and until 1941 indeed viewed each other not as enemies but as ideological cousins and friends.



Kurskaya Metro station, Moscow: socialist classicism ‘at its best’! Mind the devilish Red Stars within the chandeliers on the ceiling: they look almost like pentagrams although inside them are in fact circles and not pentagons. Also, the individual lamps making up these chandeliers are 15 in number. The 15 seems to be quite loved by communists, probably they see it as their sort of ‘trinity’, namely 3 times the ‘Hermetic’ number 5! (15 is also, at least officially, the number of the Grand Arcane card within the Kabbalistic Tarot system entitled “The Devil”, although some authors argue, the true number of the devil might rather be the 11 instead.)

- Virtually NO city in the whole of “Russia” has ever removed its inevitable Lenin monuments prominently placed in the main squares or in front of administrative buildings. There was removed only a little number of Lenin statues back in 1991/92, mainly in Moscow and solely for Western consumption.
- The Moscow railway station from which trains leave for what is supposed to be again St. Petersburg is still named “Leningradskaya”!!! How ist that?!
- The military parades on Victory Day, May 9th, are back, with full armory including even Topol-M nuclear missiles!
- “Russian” space-rockets are still known under “Soyus” (i.e. Union); the “Russian” resupply spacecrafts still under “Progress”!
- “Russian” football clubs – and also those in the “former” satellite states of Eastern Europe – are unchangedly named, in “good old” communist, revolutionary and militaristic fashion: Dynamo; Rubin; Lokomotiv; Spartak; Zenit; Rotor; Torpedo; Saturn; Salyut; Avangard; even there still is RED STAR Belgrade!
- The state airline Aeroflot (well, everything is still state-owned except small businesses) still has its old Soviet logo showing Hammer and Sickle.
- In March 2011, the “Russian Federation” for the last time changed its clocks to daylight saving; they didn’t set them back in autumn any more, but are henceforth having daylight saving time the year round. This marks a return to the old Soviet Decree Time. The step is highly symbolic. After two decades of

seeming rapprochement with Europe, they now turn the other way, expecting of course that the whole of Europe will follow in due time, whether by daylight saving regulation or by political standards. Indeed, the question of year-round daylight saving seems to have been vividly discussed in EU circles. Once that happens, it will almost certainly coincide with the final political merger of former Western Europe and the unchanged Soviet Union, needless to say: on Soviet terms!

- On March 29, 2012, it became known that soon again President Vladimir Putin is willing to renew an old Soviet workers' 'tradition' (the word 'tradition', in combination with revolutionary communism, should always be put under apostrophes), namely official competitions in five categories of professions: Big Brother again is looking for the 'best stonemason' in the country, the 'best welder', the 'best miner', the 'best electrician,' and the 'best truck driver.' The annual winner will be granted a prize of 300,000.- rubles, i.e. roughly \$ 6,000,-! The second gets 200,000,-, the third 100,000.-. But, it seems, the West remains fast asleep no matter what ...
- One last important point: Supposed Chechen sabotage and terror attacks in 'Russia': Whether the bloody attacks in the Moscow underground (mimicking London's 7/7), attacks against rail lines, and so forth, these should be carefully examined as for possibly being events staged by the Russian secret service so to keep their argument alive that 'Russia' too has a 'Muslim problem', by which they're able to continue to penetrate Western security structures on the basis of 'necessary cooperation' in the face of global problems ...

One could go on for pages and pages as, in fact, the continuity is all-pervading. It's much easier, and more effective, to 'list' what has not changed: namely, NOTHING.

The question, never asked in the West, should have been: Why wasn't there a violent uprising of the people and a witch-hunt after all communists (like in Hungary in 1956 before it was crushed)? Why wasn't that sinistre Lenin Mausoleum on Red Square blown up into pieces? Why weren't 74 years of Soviet history properly reviewed and the communists' rewriting of history corrected? Why wasn't there done any "grief work" so much needed after three generations of brutal oppression and unimaginable crimes? And why wasn't there a sort of Nuremberg trial, with thousands and tens or even hundreds of thousands of subsequent executions? Why was there this spooky change of labels without any change in substance whatsoever? The answer has already been given above: because the 'changes' were planned, coordinated, and controlled; and because it's still the same people now working still under the same old Soviet system, and so for their unchanged goal of worldwide communist victory!

Now, let's see what the communists themselves are saying about all of this. Because, indeed, they admit their aims rather frankly, although won't of course reveal their long-range strategy laid down under Khrushchev.

VIII. MIKHAIL GORBACHEV: *Perestroika: New Thinking for Our Country and the World; 1987/88* (German title, translated: "Perestroika: The Second Russian Revolution – New Thinking for Europe and the World" [NOT for the Soviet Union!!!]). Quotations, unless given otherwise, translated from the German edition by this author. Bold emphasis added.

"In the West, including the U.S., Perestroika is being interpreted in a variety of ways. There is the view that Perestroika has been recognised as inevitable due to the catastrophic state of the Soviet economy; it would mirror the frustration over socialism and a crisis of its ideals and highest goals. **Nothing could be further from the truth than such interpretations**, whatever motives may be behind them. Of course, the discontent about how things have developed in our country in recent years has been a major reason for us to launch Perestroika. However, to a far greater extent, it was the realisation that the potential of socialism had been made use of insufficiently. Now, **as we are celebrating the 70th birthday of our revolution**, we are becoming very much aware of this. We have at our disposal a sound material basis, rich experience, **and a clear world view**. With that foundation, we are able to focussedly and continuously improve our society and work on **making ever greater use** of all our activities, qualitatively and quantitatively."

"The works of Lenin and his ideals of socialism remained for us an inexhaustible source of dialectical creative thought, theoretical wealth and political sagacity... **Turning to Lenin has greatly stimulated the Party and society** in their search to find explanations and answers to the questions that have arisen... **The Leninist period is indeed very important. It is instructive that it proved the strength of Marxist-Leninist dialectics**, the conclusions of which are based on an analysis of the actual historical situation. Many of us realised even long before the [1985] Plenary Meeting that everything pertaining to the economy, culture, democracy, foreign policy – all spheres – had to be reappraised." (From the English edition, pages 11-12, via Christopher Story's "The European Union Collective", page 14)

"We are not going to change Soviet power, of course, or abandon its fundamental principles, but we acknowledge the need for changes **that will strengthen socialism**... The essence of 'perestroika' is **that it ... revives the Leninist concept of socialist construction** both in theory and in practice." (From the English edition, via Christopher Story's "The European Union Collective", page 14)

"They tell us that nothing will come of 'perestroika' within the framework of our system. They say we should change the system and borrow from the experience of another socio-political system. To this they add that, if the Soviet Union takes this path and gives up its socialist [i.e. Communist] choice, close links with the West will supposedly become possible. They go so far as to claim that the October 1917 Revolution was a mistake which almost certainly cut off our country from world social progress." – "To put an end to all the rumours and speculations that abound in the West about this, I would like to point out once again **that we are conducting all our reforms in accordance with the socialist [i.e. Communist] choice**. We are looking within socialism [i.e. within Communism!], rather than outside it, for the answers to all the questions that arise. We assess our successes and errors alike by socialist [i.e. Communist] standards. **Those who hope that we shall move away from the socialist [i.e. Communist] path will be greatly disappointed.** Every part of our programme of 'perestroika' – and the programme as a whole, for that matter – is fully based on the principle of more socialism [i.e. more Communism] and more democracy [i.e. more collectivisation]." (From the English edition, via Christopher Story's "The European Union Collective", page 37)

“Despite all contradictions in today’s world, despite the variety of societal and political systems, and despite the different paths nations have taken in history, this world remains an undividable whole. **We are all passengers on board of Ship Earth**, and we must not allow it to be destroyed. There won’t be a second Noah’s Ark.”

“We openly confess that we refuse the hegemonic endeavours and globalist claims of the United States. We are not pleased by some aspects of American policy and of the American Way of Life [!!!]. **But we respect the right of the American people, just as the right of all other peoples, to live along its own rules and laws, its own morals and inclinations [!!!!!!].**”

“We do not hold any evil intent towards the American people [an outright lie!]. We are ready and willing to cooperate with them in all fields. **Yet**, we want cooperation on the basis of equality, reciprocity, and mutual understanding. Sometimes we are more than disappointed, and even have serious doubts, when our country is termed by the United States [accurately] as an aggressor and ‘evil empire’. The most unbelievable stories and lies about us are being disseminated, mistrust and enmity are being shown towards our people, limitations are being used against us, and uncivilised behaviour blamed upon us. **This proofs intolerable shortsightedness** [a clear threat].”

“Time doesn’t stand still, and we must not let pass it in vain. **We need to act.** The world situation doesn’t allow us to wait for the most convenient moment: We need a constructive and comprehensive dialogue, and we need it now. Nothing else it is we are aiming at when we connect, via TV, Soviet and American cities, Soviet and American politicians and personalities of the public domain, as well as ordinary American and Soviet citizens. We let our media present the whole spectrum of Western positions, among them even the most conservative [how generous!]. We encourage contacts to people who represent other world views and other political convictions. In this way, we express our view that such practice is a step on the way **towards a world acceptable for both sides.**”

“The necessity for change was forming not only in the higher political circles but also, and visibly, in the public’s consciousness. People who had practical experience, a sense of justice, **and were committed to the ideals of Bolshevism**, were criticising the established practice and worriedly sensed indications of moral disintegration and weakening of **revolutionary ideals and socialist values**. Workers, farmers and intellectuals, party functionaries in the capital and in the various regions were thinking over the situation in the country. One was becoming increasingly aware that things couldn’t go on like this much longer. Consternation and unwillingness were building up as **the respected values of the October Revolution and of the heroic fight for socialism** were being trampled on. [!!!]”

“**Perestroika is a word with many meanings.** But if we want to pick from these synonyms the most important one that most aptly expresses its nature, we are saying: **Perestroika is a revolution.** And undoubtedly is the **decisive acceleration** of the socio-economic and cultural development of Soviet society along with drastic changes, that aim at a qualitatively new state, indeed a revolutionary task.”

“We need to endow the historical impulse of the October Revolution with a new dynamic, and push forward what our society has begun through it. That does not mean, of course, that we equate Perestroika to the October Revolution, an event that marked a turning point in the thousand years’ of our country and that was unique in its influence on the development of mankind.”

“Perestroika is a revolutionary process for it is a leap forward in the development of socialism, in the realisation of its crucial characteristics.”

“What is meant [by the term ‘revolution from above’] is profound and essentially revolutionary changes implemented on the initiative of the authorities themselves but necessitated by objective changes in the situation. It may seem that our current *perestroika* could be called ‘*revolution from above*’. True, the *perestroika* drive started on the Communist Party’s initiative, and the Party leads it. I spoke frankly about it at the meeting with Party activists in Khabarovsk [already!!!] in the summer of 1986. We began at the top of the pyramid and went down to its base, as it were. Yes, the Party leadership started it. The highest Party and state bodies elaborated and adopted the program. True, perestroika is not a spontaneous but a governed process.” (From the English edition, via Christopher Story’s “The European Union Collective”, page 83. – No further explanation needed, Gorbachev himself most openly reveals the facts all by himself: Plannedly and controlledly, the Party and State organs reshaped themselves into a ‘new form’ more suitable to carry out the final bit of the world revolution. That was all!)

It's rather stunning to see that "Perestroika" was sold in some 5 million copies in dozens of languages; AND YET, like in the case of Hitler's "Mein Kampf", hardly anybody seems to have read it, except those leftist circles whom Lenin once called "the interested".

its Member States: A Study in Russian and German Strategy to Complete Lenin's World Revolution", Edward Harle Ltd., London, New York 2002; and mainly from the book's first part that deals with the Soviet-Russian geopolitical strategy: 'Europe from the Atlantic to Vladivostok', pages 27-144)



SUN TZU (presumably 544-496 BC): The Ancient Chinese Master of Deception

It is, to a great extent, this famous military theorist who has inspired to this day the strategic methodology of the pan-Communist Bloc, especially since the 1950s after Mao Zedong had won his revolution in China. Sun Tzu's treatise "The Art of War" (that deals exclusively with questions of the *offensive*) represents the essence of overall deception and praises the highest form of warfare to be not having to go to battle in the first place but defeating the enemy *by other means* (it can be read online at <http://www.sonshi.com/learn.html>). Although the treatise, written 5 centuries BC, is also an example of the beauty and elegance of ancient China regarding form, it is nevertheless carried by the cold and cynical logic of the deceiver who "knows" he will succeed in defeating and conquering his target because he is in the possession of a precise and deadly methodology! From Chapter One, "Calculation":

"Warfare is the Way of deception.
Therefore, if able, appear unable,
If active, appear not active,
If near, appear far,
If far, appear near,
If they have advantage, entice them,
If they are confused, take them,

If they are substantial, prepare for them,
If they are strong, avoid them,
If they are angry, disturb them,
If they are humble, make them haughty,
If they are relaxed, toil them,
If they are united, separate them.
Attack where they are not prepared, go out to where they do not expect.
This specialized warfare leads to victory, and may not be transmitted beforehand.”

And from Chapter Six, “Weakness and Strength”:

“Subtle! Subtle!
They become formless.
Mysterious! Mysterious!
They become soundless.
Therefore, they are the masters of the enemy’s fate.”

1. 1917 ff: LENIN AND THE OCTOBER REVOLUTION

“All nations will come to socialism. This is unavoidable. But all will not come in the same way. Each of them will bring its own traits into one or another form of democracy, into one or another variety of dictatorship of the proletariat, into one or another rate of socialist transformation in various aspects of social life. But of course, there is no need to exaggerate the significance of these peculiarities.” (V.I. Lenin: cited in Anatoliy Golitsyn’s “The Perestroika Deception”, page 104; according to other sources, taken from: ‘A Caricature of Marxism and Imperialist Economism’, Collected Works, Volume XXIII;)

“A Communist must be prepared to make every sacrifice and, if necessary, even resort to all sorts of schemes and stratagems, employ illegitimate methods, conceal the truth, in order... to conduct revolutionary work within...” (page XXVII; from: V.I. Lenin: “Collected Works”, Volume XVII, pages 142-145)

“I was not only forced to confine myself strictly to an exclusively theoretical, mainly economic analysis of facts, but to formulate a few

necessary observations on politics with extreme caution, by hints, in that Aesopian language – in that cursed Aesopian language – to which Tsarism compelled all revolutionaries to have recourse whenever they took up their pens to write a ‘legal’ work.” (page XXXIX; Vladimir Ilyich Lenin: Preface to ‘Imperialism: The Highest Stage of Capitalism’, April 26, 1917)

“In form, such a strong revolutionary organisation... may also be described as a ‘conspiratorial organisation’, because the French word ‘conspiracy’ is the equivalent of the Russian word ‘zagovor’, and such an organisation must have the utmost secrecy. Secrecy is such a necessary condition for this kind of organisation that all other conditions (number and selection of members, functions, etc.) must be made to conform to it. It would be extremely naïve indeed, therefore, to fear the charge that we Social-Democrats desire to create a conspiratorial organisation.” (pages 50-51; V.I. Lenin: Collected Works: Vol. V, page 475; International Publishers, New York)

“Morality is that which serves [to create] a new Communist society.” (page 8; V. I. Lenin : Collected Works, Volume XVII, pages 321-323)

“No parliament can in any circumstances be for Communists an arena of struggle for reforms... The only question can be that of utilising bourgeois state institutions for their own destruction.” (page XIX; from: V.I. Lenin: “Collected Works”, Volume XVII, page 149)

“We set ourselves the ultimate aim of destroying the state.” (page 10; V. I. Lenin: State and Revolution [orig. 1917]; International Publishers, New York 1961 Ed., page 68)

“Our only strategy at present is to become stronger and, therefore, wiser, more reasonable, more opportunistic. The more opportunistic, the sooner will you again assemble the masses around you. When we have won over the masses by our reasonable approach, we shall then apply offensive tactics in the strictest sense of the word.” (page 50; V.I. Lenin, at the Comintern Congress in July 1921, referring to the newly introduced deception operation named ‘New Economic Policy’, the strategic forerunner of Gorbachev’s ‘perestroika’.)

2. 1924-1953: THE STALIN ERA

“It is only possible to speak of utilising the bourgeois organisations with the object of destroying them.” (page XIX; from: ‘Blueprint for World Conquest’, adopted at the 6th World Congress of the Comintern on 1st of September 1928)

“Communist society... recognises no form of state.” (page XXXI; from: ‘Blueprint for World Conquest’, 6th World Congress of the Comintern, 1928)

“The Soviet United States of Europe is the only correct slogan pointing the way out from European disunity.” (page XXXII; from: Leon Trotsky, in ‘The Bulletin of the Opposition’, Nr. 17-18, November-December 1930; page 53)

“The bourgeoisie will have to be put to sleep. So we shall begin by launching the most spectacular peace movement on record. There will be electrifying overtures and unheard-of concessions. The West, stupid and decadent, will rejoice to cooperate in their own destruction. As soon as their guard is down, we will smash them with our clenched fist.” (page 35; Dmitiri Manuilski, speaking to his students at the Lenin School in 1930)

“The socialist society will be forced to apply the most resolute measures for a long time – including the liquidation of people who are especially dangerous to the socialist system [most likely added by Christopher Story] – **against people who are harmful and deliberately destructive... i.e., those who seek to undermine the socialist state and to re-establish the capitalist system.”** (page 20: M. Rezunov: ‘Socialism or State Capitalism in the Soviet Union’, Leningrad 1934, pp 12-18)

“The withering away of the state, the precondition for the classless society, could not be entertained as a possibility until the encirclement of socialism by capitalism had been changed to the encirclement of capitalism by socialism. [!!!] That is to say, until those conditions had been established which would assure world-wide Soviet domination.” (page 20; Yossif Stalin: Report to the 18th Party Congress, CPSU, March 10, 1939; published in: *Communist International Magazine*, special issue, XIV, 520 ff, 1939; cited by Louis F. Budenz: *The Techniques of Communism*, 1954, page 12)

“Divide the world into regional groups as a transitional stage of world government. Populations will more readily abandon their national loyalties to a vague regional loyalty than they will for a world authority. Later, the regions can be brought together all the way into a single world dictatorship.” (page 23; Yossif Stalin: ‘Marxism and the National Question’; 1942)

“Parliaments can be helpful post-revolution vehicles for transforming democratic nations into fully-fledged Communist states.” (page 72; from a 1961 analysis by communist Czechoslovakia’s official historian, Jan Kozak, regarding the 1948 overthrow of Czech parliamentarism in favour of rigorous One-Party Stalinism by the use of the Czech parliament itself. Source: Jan Kozak: ‘How Parliament can play a Revolutionary part in the Transition to Socialism, and the Role of the Popular Masses’; American Edition by Long House Publishing Company, CT, 1962. – In the case of Hitler Germany, that phase of “post-revolutionary” latency lasted less than two months until Hitler and comrades, who had risen to power, lest we forget, by the legal means of democratic vote, crushed the parliament and introduced their One-Party dictatorship, based on the provocation of the Reichstag fire. In the case of present-day America, one could also speak already of a “post-revolutionary” situation given the fact that the United States have been governed for the last three years by a die-hard, albeit cleverly concealed Marxist, who might well soon show in the case of his re-election a quite different face from what he has shown so far! In the case of the European Union, it’s been a fait accompli already for a long time, with no chance for any of the member states even to envision leaving this political monstrosity, that too is on its way to totalitarianism, not the least in the light of an upcoming merger with the unchanged Soviet Union, which is the declared goal of the political forces involved, but will be to the detriment of the peoples of Western Europe who can expect to be fully subjected under the Communist yoke in the not-too-far-away future.)

“Morality is what brings about... a new society of Communists. Communist morality is that which serves this struggle... At the base of Communist morality lies the struggle for the strengthening and completion of Communism.” (page 20; *Sochineniya*, 4th Edition, Volume 31, Moscow 1950; pp. 266, 268, 269, 270.)

“Capitalism’s short-term view can never envisage the lengths across which we can plan.” (page 50; Lavrentii Beria, early 1950s; lecture to American Communists attending the Lenin School)

3. 1953-1964: ALLEGED DE-STALINISATION AND ‘PEACEFUL COEXISTENCE’

“The thing that exists [thesis], the opposite that grows out of it [antithesis], and the higher stage that develops from their interaction or conflict [synthesis], govern all correct thinking and the proper interpretation of life and society... That which retards socialism is ‘reactionary’ and is to be destroyed. That which advances socialism is ‘progressive’ and ‘liberating’ and is to be encouraged and forwarded.” (page 20; Louis F. Budenz (1891-1972), former prominent US Communist who renounced his communism in 1945, returned to Catholicism and became an ardent writer against the Communist conspiracy: *The Techniques of Communism*, Henry Regnery Company, Chicago 1954, pages 7-8)

“The struggle for the future will probably not be so much through engines of war, as through the continued penetration of the thought process of the world’s population.” (page 96; Louis F. Budenz: *The Bolshevik Invasion of the West: Account of the Great Political War for a Soviet America*, Bookmailer, 1966; from: *The West at Bay: How it got that way (In Lieu of a Preface)*, page 6)

“Communism is a movement directed against individualization and towards standardizing of all man’s activities. Steadily and persistently, the Soviet regime is driving towards its ultimate goal: control of human behavior.” (page 96; Dr. Boris Sokoloff, a Russian medical doctor heavily involved with the Russian Revolution itself, but who escaped from Russia and reached the United States, in his 1956 book “The White Nights”, The Devin-Adair Company, New York 1956, page 292. – This observation not only illustrates the prominent role of mass mind control as was contributed to Lenin’s considerations and plannings by Ivan Pavlov, and was given just as high credit in Nazi Germany, but also the true and quite frightening meaning of Gorbachev’s slogan “New Thinking”!!! Obviously, if it is possible to bring about a ‘new society’ where all individuals are of *one mind* (for which the introduction of perfidious ‘political correctness’, a Soviet invention anyway, is already a deadly harbinger), chances are considerably greater to accomplish the desired ‘irreversibility’ of things, and so with far less emphasis on oppression, just the way Aldous Huxley had foreseen resp. had blown the whistle about already in 1932 as an additional note to his novel *Brave New World*: “A really efficient totalitarian state would be one in which the all-powerful political bosses and their army of managers control a population of slaves who do not have to be coerced, because they love their servitude.”)

“The victory of Communism on the world scale will provide the necessary material and intellectual preconditions for the merging of [all] nations. A

Communist economic integration never known before will gradually be formed throughout the world. There will emerge a common moral code which will absorb all that is best in the character of each nation. Mankind will become one united, fraternal community completely free of antagonism.” (page 33; “Foundations of Marxist-Leninist Philosophy” resp. “Fundamentals of Marxism-Leninism”, 1960)

“There is no wall between socialism and Communism. These are not two divergent types of society, but merely two phases of one and the same social formation, distinguished the one from the other by the degree of their maturity. The transition from socialism to Communism consequently constitutes a gradual process. Communism grows up out of socialism as its direct prolongation. In the very bosom of socialist society its germs and roots spring up. These shoots of the future, developing on socialist soil, will lead... to a consolidation of Communism. Naturally, the entry into a higher phase of the new society cannot be pinned down to a specific calendar date, but it will be accomplished without abrupt change.” – From the fact that the transition from socialism to Communism will take place by degrees, it does not follow that this is a slow process. On the contrary, the transition is distinguished by a particularly high rate of development in all areas of social life... ending with the uplift of the culture and the conscious awareness of people.” (page 34; “Fundamentals of Marxism-Leninism”, 1960; page 656)

“In deciding other affairs, methods of public influence, the influence of public opinion, will be utilised.” – “Communism means new relations between the peoples. They will arise as a result of the further development of the principles of socialist internationalism, which today constitute the basis of relations between countries.” – “The cultures of different peoples, national in form, will be increasingly imbued with the same Communist content. Their drawing together on this basis will provide a mighty stimulus to the mutual enrichment and development of national cultures and in the long run will lead to the formation of a single, deeply international culture that will be truly the culture of all mankind. Under Communism, public opinion will become a mighty force, capable of bringing to reason those individuals who might not want to follow Communist customs and rules of behaviour in the community.” (pages 96-97; Ibid.)

“Individual choice would eventually be mastered by a central Soviet control of thought process.” (page 96; Soviet spy George Blake, as remembered by Kenneth de Courcy and cited by Chapman Pincher in ‘Traitors: The Labyrinths of Treason’, Sidgwick & Jackson, London 1987, page 157) –

4. 1964-1982: THE BREZHNEV ERA

The ‘kollektiv’ represents “the setting for group pressure [whose] task is to instil... habits of collectivism... to foster an acceptance of group control over values, attitudes and behaviour.” (page 97; Allen Kassof: ‘The Soviet Youth Program’, Harvard University Press, Cambridge 1965; page 45. Cited in: ‘Contemporary Soviet Politics: An Introduction’, Donald D. Barry and Carol Barner-Barry, Prentice Hall, Englewood Cliffs, NJ, 1978-91)

“Lenin’s inestimable service consists in that he furnished answers to the most acute questions raised by *Life* and indicated the most efficacious forms of struggle... for the victory of the socialist revolution and the triumph of Communism. To apply a consistent class line, firmly adhere to principles, be flexible in tactics, consider the concrete conditions from every angle, to undertake bold and at the same time well-conceived actions... this is what Lenin taught us, and what we learn from Lenin. His contribution to revolutionary theory was a major stage in the development of Marxist thought.” – “Communists will always be true to the creative spirit of Leninism... Study Lenin’s works! There you will find an inexhaustible fund of inspiration for struggle against reaction and oppression, for socialism and peace. Acquaintance with Lenin’s works will help the rising generation to see more clearly the revolutionary prospects of our era. Spread more widely the knowledge of the achievements of Leninism! Let us raise higher the banner of Leninism in the struggle for the revolutionary renewal of the world! Long live Leninism!” (page 39; Nota bene: NOT Gorbachev but: Leonid Brezhnev: statement at the International Meeting of Communist and Workers’ Parties held in Moscow from June 5 to 17, 1969: ‘Record of the International Meeting of Communist and Workers’ Parties’, Peace and Socialism Publishers, Prague 1969: page 172)

“The plan for economic and monetary union has *revolutionary longterm political implications, both economic and political. It could imply the creation of a European federal state, with a single currency...* It will arouse strong feelings about sovereignty.” (page 32; from a British Foreign Office document dated November 9, 1970; thus, the British political class was perfectly aware of the consequences of a British membership in the then EEC, but nevertheless embarked on that deadly road to national extinction).

5. 1985-1991: GORBACHEV’S ‘PERESTROIKA’ AND ‘GLASNOST’ CAMPAIGNS

(See herefore also Chapter VIII, starting on page 104: Mikhail Gorbachev: “Perestroika: The Second Russian Revolution - New Thinking for Europe and the World”; that was indeed the book’s full title, not in its English, but in the German edition!)

“Gentlemen, Comrades, do not be concerned about all that you hear about ‘glasnost’ and ‘perestroika’ and democracy in the coming years. These are primarily for outward consumption. There will be no significant change within the Soviet Union, other than for cosmetic purposes. Our purpose is to disarm the Americans, and to let them fall asleep.” (page 44; statement by Mikhail Gorbachev before the Politburo early in his tenure; from: ‘Relevance’ Special Report, September 1994: ‘The New Lies Strategy: The KGB’s Advance through Retreat’, under the section entitled ‘The Grand Illusion’)

“Let us imagine a rejuvenated Central Committee in Moscow decides to free the Soviet Union from its increasingly burdensome confederates. ‘Just understand, Comrades,’ says the barely 31-year-old General Secretary, ‘that these small eastern European states with their chaotic economic situation, with their incomprehensible inner contradictions and their harmful

ideologies will simply continue to hinder our Communist structure. In my view, it would be much more correct to leave these societies – while guaranteeing our military interests – to their own dynamism of development.” – “From the propagandist point of view, this would bring us only benefits... because we could then be hailed once again as liberators of these countries... Let us fantasise further: the First Secretary’s words are unanimously enacted, the Warsaw Pact is terminated, the Soviet troops stationed in the Eastern European region are disbanded amidst military music and flowers, and the former Eastern Bloc countries make a start on controlling their own problems. Through free elections, in which several parties may participate, they create their parliamentary institutions, they open their borders and guarantee freedom rights, *including sensible limited private ownership*. All other things – McDonald’s network, unemployment, peep-shows – will automatically follow.” (page 111; article by György Dalos; in: ‘Das Kursbuch’, Kursbuch Verlag/Rotbuch Verlag, Berlin, September **1985**: ,Die Befreiung der Sowjetunion von ihren Satelliten: Entwurf einer Mitteleuropäischen Konföderation’ (i.e. The Soviet Union’s ridding itself of its satellites: Draft of a Central European Confederation’). Apart from an inevitable element of disinformation regarding the ‘harmful ideologies’ of the East European satellite states etc. and with typical Leninist boldness and cynicism, this was a clear and detailed pointer to what the Soviets were up to, 2 years before the pompous proclamation of ‘perestroika’. Had these signals been properly perceived and analysed by the West, it would have been so much harder for the Communist bloc to surprise the West with their false ‘democratisation’ offensive in 1989; Western politicians would have been warned to stay away from any of their deceptive overtures. – Note that also here, like in the Soviet context, there’s a reference to *limited* privatisation only!!! The ‘new’ model would then be not a free market economy but state-controlled ‘capitalism’, in other words: the same old central planning economy ‘enriched’ by superficial capitalistic features so to dupe the West into convergence on the false premises of ‘collapsible communism’.)

“Already today we can say: the Congress has been held in an atmosphere of Party fidelity to principle, in a spirit of unity, exactingness, and Bolshevik truth.” – “It is in this way, in Lenin’s way, that we have acted here at our Congress. And that is the way we shall continue to act!” – “Comrades, our Congress has shown that at the present stage, which is a turning point in our country’s social development, the Leninist Party is equal to its historic tasks.” – “Adopting a bold, realistic, mobilising and inspiring strategy, one that is Leninist in spirit, the struggle for the triumph of Communist ideals, of peace and progress, the 27th Congress of the CPSU expresses the Party’s firm determination to honourably follow our great road, and open up new vistas for the creative energy and revolutionary initiative of the... people’s intelligentsia. The Congress calls on all Soviet people to dedicate all their strength, knowledge, ability, and creative enthusiasm to the great goals of Communist construction, and to worthily continue Lenin’s victorious revolutionary cause, the cause of the October Revolution!” (page 19; Mikhail Gorbachev’s closing address to the 27th CPSU Congress on March 6, 1986; from the Information Bulletin “XXVII Congress of the Communist Party of the Soviet Union: Documents of the Communist and Workers’ Parties, Articles and Speeches”, 9/1986, Volume 24; Peace and Socialism International Publishers, Prague 1986, pages 125-130)

The Party has made “specific decisions on how to update our political system”. – “Thus we shall give a fresh impetus to our revolutionary restructuring. We shall maintain our quiet [i.e. Leninist] creativity and daring in an efficient and responsible fashion in a Leninist Bolshevik manner.” (page 42; Mikhail Gorbachev at the 27th CPSU Congress, March 1986; from the 1988 Party document: ‘The Ideology of Renewal for Revolutionary Restructuring’, pages 60-61)

“At a Party Congress at which frank reports were delivered and sharp discussions held, after which the delegates expressed support for unity, Vladimir Ilyich Lenin, in defiance of sceptics, exclaimed enthusiastically: ‘Now this is something I really understand! This is Life!’ Many years have gone by since then. One can note with satisfaction that the atmosphere at our Congress is again marked by that Bolshevik spirit, that Leninist optimism, that call to struggle against the old and outmoded in the name of the new.” (page 40; at the same 27th Party Congress, February 1986: Boris Yeltsin; the supposed ‘anti-Communist’, who was in reality, like Gorbachev, a flawless Party and Politburo boss, and who merely enacted this dialectical ploy of displayed ‘rivalry’ with Gorbachev for the furtherance of Communist strategy.)

“The 27th Congress of the Communist Party of the Soviet Union notes that our Leninist party has come to its Congress enriched... At the present turning point, in a qualitatively new situation inside the country and on the world scene, the Party has again shown its loyalty to Marxism-Leninism.” (Page 19; Final Resolution on the Political Report of the Central Committee; Ibid, page 133)

“We are moving towards a new world, the world of Communism. We shall never turn off that road.” (page 19; Mikhail Gorbachev, November 1987)

“The new Soviet initiatives are in large part centred on Europe – which, should a sharp turn toward a policy of peace be achieved, would have a special role to play as the building site of détente.” (page 31; Fyodor Burlatsky: “From Geneva to Reykjavik”, Progress Publishers, Moscow 1987; page 97 – ‘Sharp turn’ is supposed to mean a U-turn away from an alliance with the United States towards a joint political, economic and military space with the Soviet Union! – And here is Christopher Story’s explanation of the Communist meaning of ‘peace’: “the cessation and absence of all opposition to Lenin’s World Communist Revolution”, in other words: the global implementation of an ‘eternal’ peace of the grave.)

“Our philosophy of peace [which always means a communist peace of the grave with all opposition crushed] **is frankly based on the conviction that socialism can win without war, without military competition.**” (page 42; Burlatsky: “From Geneva to Reykjavik”: page 155; the strategic theme ‘victory without war’ is mainly based on the theories by ancient Chinese military theorist Sun Tzu, laid out in his treatise “The Art of War” that says the highest form of war is not having to go war by instead gradually undermining and destroying the enemy country’s social and cultural fabric as well as spiritual values from within; that same approach is also well-known from the infamous “Prison Notebooks” by Italian communist Antonio Gramsci, who indeed inspired several generations of covert revolutionaries to embark on a highly efficient “March through the Institutions”, once ‘Daniel le Rouge’, leader of the May 1968 student riots in Paris and a.k.a. Daniel Cohn-Bendit; and Joschka Fischer, once far-left street activist, being

probably the most prominent examples; the former is today leader of the European Green parties in the European Parliament; the latter made it to the post of head of the German Greens and German Foreign Minister from 1998 to 2005 under socialist Chancellor Gerd Schröder, whose famous expression, “Yes, I am a Marxist” surprisingly hasn’t bothered anyone in Germany, which tells us all about the incredible progress of the revolution in Germany – and elsewhere.)

“Some progress, in fact considerable progress has been made in Europe towards détente and in New Thinking.” (page 42; Burlatsky: “From Geneva to Reykjavik”, page 159)

“The *image* of the enemy that is being eroded has been... absolutely vital for the foreign and military policy of the United States and its allies. The destruction of this stereotype... is Gorbachev’s weapon... Neither the arms race, nor power politics in the Third World, nor the military blocs, are thinkable without ‘the enemy’, and without the ‘Soviet threat’.” (page 23; Georgiy Arbatov, then close strategic advisor to Gorbachev and member of the Politburo; in: ‘Kommunist’, 1988. – This is what the alleged ‘end of the Cold War’ really was about: the bringing to an end of anti-Communism by deceptively creating the illusion that the Communist threat was over. This manipulation of the Western mind enabled the Soviet strategists to advance full steam towards a merger of the blinded West with the unchanged Communist East, naturally on Communist terms, and with the West not realising what’s going on until it’ll be too late!!!)

“The ‘image of the enemy’ which we are expending so much effort on debunking today emerged as a counterbalance to the real image of the Soviet people, contrary to its friendliness, valour, wisdom and self-sacrifice.” (page 42; July 25, 1988; Eduard Shevardnadze before the 19th All-Union CPSU Conference; that part of his speech was entitled ‘The Party’s Thought and Will geared to Perestroika’)

“We see that confusion has arisen in some people’s minds: aren’t we retreating from the positions of socialism, especially when we introduce new and unaccustomed forms of economic management and public life, and aren’t we subjecting the Marxist-Leninist teaching itself to revision? ... No, we are not retreating a single step from socialism, from Marxism-Leninism...” (page 14: Mikhail Gorbachev; in: ‘Current Digest of the Soviet Press’, 40, Number 7, 1988, pages 3-4)

“Hungary allowed 60,000 East Germans to leave for the West, and thousands more moved into Prague and Warsaw. Hungarian Foreign Minister Gyula Horn allowed East Germans to leave after talking by phone with Shevardnadze.” (page 111; the events of summer 1989 at the Hungarian-Austrian border, described in the otherwise completely uncritical book ‘The Wars of Eduard Shevardnadze’ by Carolyn Ekedahl and Melvin A. Goodman, The Pennsylvania State University Press, 1997; page 248. – This en passant mentioning of an exchange on the telephone between the Hungarian and the Soviet Foreign Minister immediately before go-ahead was given in the night from September 10 to September 11, 1989 for those 60,000 East Germans to leave into the West reveals that events were tightly coordinated with Moscow. There was no spontaneous element in any of this. It was all planned and carried out with military precision. – September 11, by the way, is the birthday of the founder of the Cheka and co-architect of Lenin’s Red Terror, Felix Dzerzhinsky, as well as the death-day of the father of the New Longrange Deception Strategy,

Nikita Khrushchev! A fact that seems to have had little effect on 9-11 researchers to consider the possibility, in one way or the other, of a Russian involvement in those terror attacks that led to the wars in Afghanistan and Iraq and gave birth to the new Soviet propaganda line of a common Islamic threat that would necessitate close security and intelligence cooperation between ‘Russia’ and the West. – Also, Gyula Horn, an *active supporter* of the Soviet crushing of the genuine Hungarian uprising of 1956 and *active participant* in the brutal ‘cleansing’ operations that accompanied it, was soon to be a ‘post-communist’ Prime Minister of ‘newly democratic’ Hungary during the years 1994 to 1998! He later was co-founder, with Mikhail Gorbachev, in 2003 of the ‘World Political Forum’, a platform that serves like the Gorbachev Foundation to influence and manipulate Western elites in the interests of communist revolutionary strategy.)

“We are for a Lenin who is alive! In building our future we are basing ourselves upon the gigantic intellectual and moral potential of the socialist idea linked with the theory of Marxism-Leninism. We see no rational grounds to give up the spiritual [sic!!!] richness contained in Marxism. Through restructuring [i.e. ‘perestroika’], **we want to give socialism a second wind** and unveil in all its plenitude [meaning: globally!] the vast humanist potential of the socialist system.” – “In order to achieve this, the Communist Party of the Soviet Union returns to the origins and principles of the Bolshevik Revolution, to the Leninist ideas about the construction of a new society... Our Party was and remains the Party of Lenin... In short, we are for a Lenin who is alive.” – “We must seek these answers **guided by the spirit of Leninism, the style of Lenin’s thinking, and the method of dialectical cognition.**” (Page 14; Mikhail Gorbachev speaking on November 15, 1989 to a group of Russian students. – Thus, these remarks represent a blatant real-time explanation of the true nature of the supposed ‘changes’ that were all-too-smoothly transforming in those months the Eastern European satellite states into ‘instant-democracies’!]

“In a democratic state, a changeover to a multiparty system is inevitable. Various political parties are gradually being formed [out of the CPSU] in our country. At the same time, a fundamental renewal of the CPSU is inevitable... First, it is necessary to organisationally codify all the platforms that exist in the CPSU **and to give every Communist time for political self-determination...** The Party should divest itself of all state functions. A parliamentary-type Party will emerge. Only this kind of Party, provided that there is a mighty renewal [of the CPSU]... will be able to be a leading Party and to win elections for one or another of its factions. With the development of democratic movements in the country and the further radicalisation of restructuring, it will be possible for this alliance to become the vanguard of society in actual fact. This will provide a broad social base for the renewal of society ... [and to] erect a barrier against attacks by the conservatives, and guarantee the irreversibility of restructuring.” (page 79-80; Boris Yeltsin speaking at the 28th CPSU Congress on July 6, 1990; from: Current Soviet Policies XI, Current Digest of the Soviet Press, Columbia University Press. – What Bolshevik heavyweight Boris Yeltsin lays out with considerable openness, the language being still slightly Leninistically coded, is precisely what prominent defector Anatoliy Golitsyn had been warning of for 30 years: the Party would free itself of its state functions, set up a tightly controlled, pseudo-democratic regime staffed with Communists posing under whatever political label they may have chosen to seemingly

represent, and would be able to engage undividedly and with all its resources in the furtherance of the world revolution and the total collectivisation of everything and everybody around the globe. The longterm aim of a fully revolutionary vanguard Party would establish itself as the dominant factor worldwide: Lenin's 'state of the whole people' and the Communist version of 'global democratic peace' would have become the deadly and all-encompassing reality for every human being anywhere in the world, with conservatives reduced to an endangered species and ultimately erased from the face of the earth. As of 2012, these objectives aren't too far from being finally fulfilled, as one looks around oneself.)

"Now, about the Party itself. Allow me to formulate three conditions necessary for the Party to fully demonstrate its viability and actually attain its vanguard potential. In the first place, to this end it must, resolutely and without delay, restructure all its work and reorganise all its structures on the basis of the new Statutes and the Congress's Programme Statement, so that under the new conditions, it can effectively perform its role as the vanguard party. We must do everything to firmly establish in the CPSU the power of the Party masses behind an all-encompassing democracy, comradeship, openness, glasnost and criticism. Secondly, when there are various views and even platforms on a number of questions of policy and practical activity, the majority must have respect for the minority. And thirdly, Comrades, we must study, learn, and improve our culture. If we embark on this path, it will be easier to interact and have contacts with other forces. The Central Committee and I will do all we can to help the Republic Communist Parties gain their new independent status as soon as possible, a status that will lead *not* to a fragmentation of Communists and nations *but to a new internationalist unity of the CPSU on a common ideological basis*. Let us prove that the CPSU, *as it restructures itself*, is capable of living up to these expectations... and then it will become a truly vanguard party whose power lies not in giving orders *but in influencing people.*" (page 82; Mikhail Gorbachev speaking on July 13, 1990 to the 28th CPSU Congress. – These remarks leave no room for doubt whatsoever that all the pressing 'changes' were about a tactical re-organisation and re-formation of Party and State in the interest of strategy! Ideology wasn't abandoned, the Communist Party wasn't abandoned, and neither was the USSR abandoned in its previous borders. It was all, and still is, a giant deception operation that succeeded, by playing with false, seemingly Western labels, to hoodwink the Free World and ultimately achieve worldwide communist victory.)

"The 28th CPSU Congress attaches fundamental importance to defining the principles of the Party's policy at the present stage, with a view to... renewing those principles and making progress towards a humane, democratic socialism. Distortions of the principles of socialism from the 1930s into the 1950s [meaning, during the Stalin period] engendered complicated problems..." (page 42; Statement of the July 1990 28th CPSU Congress, as published on July 15, 1990 in Pravda)

"Stalinist socialism, which our country developed for many years, has shown itself to be fully bankrupt, having exhausted its resources for growth." (page 36; Vladimir Shastitko, Director of the Institute of the Economy of the World Socialist System in the August 1990 issue of the Soviet journal 'Sputnik'. – Meaning solely that the Stalinist model of socialism had outlived itself, not socialism (resp. Communism, to be precise) as such!)

6. 1991: THE YEAR THE CPSU WAS ‘ABOLISHED’ AND THE USSR ‘DISSOLVED’

“The New Economic Policy introduces a number of important changes due to the fact that in their entire policy of transition from capitalism to socialism the Communist Party and the Soviet Government are now adopting special [i.e. secret] methods to implement this transition and in many respects are operating differently from the way they operated before; they are capturing a number of positions by a ‘new flanking movement’, so to speak; they are drawing back in order to make better preparations for a new offensive against capitalism. In particular, a free market and capitalism, both subject to state control, are now being permitted...” (page 62: V.I. Lenin: ‘Draft Thesis on the Role and Function of Trade Unions Under the New Economic Policy’, prepared on December 28, 1921 and approved two weeks later by the Party’s Political Bureau; Collected Works, Vol, XXXXII, page 375; this Lenin quote was used by Carl Bloice, a member of the National Committee of the Communist Party USA and Moscow-based correspondent of the CPUSA’s ‘People’s Weekly World’, a man obviously with excellent personal contacts to Mikhail Gorbachev, in: Political Affairs (the theoretical journal of the CPUSA), May 1991, Vol. LXX, Nr. 5, pages 14-16: ‘An Observation on Economic Changes in the Soviet Union’. The parallel drawn by Bloice officially confirms the identical pattern in both Lenin’s NEP and Gorbachev’s ‘Perestroika’: a tactical retreat to prepare for an even stronger offensive.)

“The dangers lie in the fact that someone, analysing at some private moment or other, this or that instance or episode, or even event, including a dramatic event, should not make hasty conclusions and cast doubt on all that has been acquired and what we have created in putting international relations onto new channels, onto new rails, entering, as all of us have said, a period of peaceful development.” (page 7; Mikhail Gorbachev in a joint press conference with French President of the day, socialist Francois Mitterand, in Paris on May 6, 1991; the coded statement reveals the permanent fears of the professional liars, which the Marxists-Leninists are, that their inverted pyramid of lies, that out of necessity grows bigger and bigger, could be exposed. Gorbachev even gave a cryptic pointer, by the phrase ‘including a dramatic event’, to the staged ‘August coup’ three months later. The image of ‘new rails’ of course suggests the intended irreversibility of their revolutionary progress. And what communists mean by ‘peace’ should be sufficiently known after all crime and tragedy committed by communism ever since 1917: it’s a peace of the grave, with all opposition crushed and liquidated once and for all.)

“The challenge for us Europeans is to draw the Soviet Union into our common endeavour, to dispel any temptations to isolate it... From the viewpoint of security policy, our reference system reaches from the shores of the Pacific to Vladivostok.” (page 12: what a surprise: former Secretary General of NATO, Manfred Wörner, Germany, addressing the *Conference on the Future of European Security* organised by the Czechoslovak Ministry of Foreign Affairs held on April 25/26, 1991 in Prague. – Unless this is a citation mistake by Christopher Story, ‘from the Pacific to Vladivostok’, which itself is situated on the Pacific, can only mean: the whole Northern hemisphere! Otherwise it would be ‘From the Atlantic to Vladivostok’, enclosing the present-day EU and the

perfectly intact USSR, that is already overlapping with EU territory through the 3 Baltic Soviet Republics.)

“He isn’t a Leninist any more.” – “I don’t think we have been deceived; at least, I hope we haven’t.” (Page 19; Margaret Thatcher in a July 1991 conversation with Christopher Story, who had done his best to correct Lady Thatcher’s erroneous view, but failed. Gorbachev’s powerful sexual charisma, that was described by several time witnesses as extremely sinistre and demonic, had served its purpose and literally bewitched Margaret Thatcher so that she believed Gorbachev was somebody she could do business with...)

“GORBACHEV OFFERS PARTY A CHARTER THAT DROPS ICONS – HARD-LINERS CRITICIZED – Opening a 2-Day Meeting, He Challenges Even Sanctity of Marxism-Leninism” (Headline of The New York Times, July 26, 1991)

“LENIN ABANDONS STATE OWNERSHIP AS SOVIET POLICY – Official Decree Retains Control of Only a Few of the Big National Industries – TO LEASE TO INDIVIDUALS – Payments for Postal, Railroads and Other Public Services Are Re-established” (Headline of The New York Times, August 13, 1921)

(page 55; Christopher Story even gives photocopies in his book of these two almost identical headlines of The New York Times: proof that Gorbachev’s Perestroika deception was indeed modelled after Lenin’s NEP deception, and it worked out in the Western mind in the very same successful way! Thus, as Christopher Story ironically puts it: “Communism collapses twice.”)

“There was a brilliantly planned and executed, large-scale, unprecedented provocation in which the roles were scripted for the intelligent and the stupid, all of whom consciously or unconsciously played their parts.” (page 52; Lt-General Aleksandr Lebed, commenting in retrospect, three years after, on the fake August coup of August 1991, as was published by ITAR-TASS on August 19, 1994. – Now, this is an absolutely outrageous confession as it provides first-hand confirmation, beside all other proof against the official version, that the whole events of August 1991, from the ‘arrestation’ of Gorbachev at his Crimea holiday resort to the supposed coup d’etat by ‘neo-Stalinists’ to the mysterious failure of their ‘coup’ was all nothing but a theatrical play staged for Western consumption and designed to prepare for the fake dissolution of the CPSU and the final fake dissolution of the Soviet Union so to transform, for the furtherance of strategy, overt Communism into covert Communism with a pseudo-democratic and pseudo-‘capitalist’ mask. Interestingly, this 3-day provocation was code-named ‘Golgotha’, which wonderfully illustrates the Satanic dimension of Communism that so much enjoys ridiculing and mocking religion in general and Christianity in particular.)

“I think that the idea of a Common European Home, the building of a united Europe, and I would like to underline today, of Great Europe, the building of Great Europe, great, united Europe, from the Atlantic to the Urals, from the Atlantic to Vladivostok, including all our territory, most probably a European-American space, a united humanitarian space: this project is *inevitable*. I am sure that we will come to building a united military space, as well. To say more precisely: we will build a united Europe, whose security will be based on the principles of collective security. Precisely, collective security.” (page XXXII: Soviet foreign secretary

of the day, Eduard Shevardnadze, on November 19, 1991, interviewed on a Moscow television programme along with NATO Secretary General of the day, Lord Robertson)

"If we had not freed our foreign policy from ideologised or, as we used to say at that time, class interests etc., we would have found it difficult to find a common language with our partners, and it would have been difficult to overcome the military confrontation." (page 61; Eduard Shevardnadze in that same television programme, November 19, 1991, 19:40 GMT; interview conducted by Valentin Zorin: 'Undiplomatic Conversations', Central Television, First All-Union Programme. – This is a highly revealing statement as it shows that ideology was strategically 'abandoned' in order to reach common ground with the West, and not common ground was naturally made possible because ideology had frankly disappeared! Sometimes they do make mistakes...)

7. 1992: YEAR ONE OF THE POST-SOVIET, NEW RUSSIA' AND, AT THE SAME TIME, THE BEGINNING OF THE 'NEW DYNAMICS' IN THE SO-CALLED EUROPEAN INTEGRATION PROCESS (WHICH WAS NO COINCIDENCE!)

"I look forward to the day when Russia is a fully-fledged member of the European Community." (page 13: Believe it or not: British Prime Minister of the day, John Major!!! So uttered on New Year's Day 1992 in the Prime Minister's New Year's Day broadcast on BBC Radio 4)

"Our vision of the European space from the Atlantic to the Urals is not that of a closed system. Since it includes the Soviet Union, which reaches to the shores of the Pacific, it goes beyond nominal geographical boundaries." (page XXXIII: Mikhail Gorbachev in his prepared Nobel Peace Prize speech in Oslo in **June 1992**, when the Soviet Union had already been 'abandoned' by him half a year earlier!!!)

"I dare say that the European process has already acquired elements of irreversibility. In such a context, in the process of creating a new Europe... self-determination of sovereign nations will be realised in a completely different manner." (page XXXIII: Mikhail Gorbachev, in the same speech in June 1992; nota bene: speaking for the Yeltsin regime to which, allegedly, he was in opposition!)

"We are talking about... a principled choice for Russia's course and consequently, to a considerable extent for the course to be pursued by the other states not only of the Commonwealth of Independent States, not only of the former Soviet Union, but also of the whole so-called socialist camp... because of the reality which consists of the fact that the Russian Federation has been at the centre of that configuration and is today economically, culturally and in many other senses certainly the locomotive which by the direction and speed of its movement determines the direction and speed of movement of other states." (page 124; Russian Foreign Minister of the day, Andrei Kozyrev, in the course of an interview on **December 4, 1992** on Mayak Radio. – However, one year after the alleged dissolution of the Soviet Union and 3 years after the alleged collapse of communism in the Eastern European satellites, there was, in official terms, no

‘socialist camp’ in existence any more. But, in reality, of course, it still was, and so with the unchanged Soviet Union still in the driving seat...)

8. 1992-1999: THE YELTSIN YEARS'

“The point is that the Communist goal is fixed and changeless – it never varies one iota from their objective of world domination, but if we judge them only by the direction in which they seem to be going, we shall be deceived.” (Page 19; Yelena Bonner, wife of controlled ‘dissident’, Andrei Sakharov)

Answering a naïve question from the audience, in late 1993, whether he would ‘return to politics’, Gorbachev replied, “**I’m not hiding in the woodwork. I’m involved in a different political role... I have not abandoned links with the past.**” And asked, ‘What are you doing right now?’, Gorbachev gave back, “**I’m working on the same problems as before – on New Thinking and international relations.**” (pages 19; 40; Mikhail Gorbachev, November 6, 1993, on CNN’s *Larry King Live*. – What this meant was and is of course Gorbachev’s vanguard role for the world revolution via his newly founded Moscow/Amsterdam/San Francisco-based *Gorbachev Foundation*, his supposed environmental organisation *Green Cross International*, and his very active support of ‘Interfaith’ organisations such as the *United Religions Initiative*, all designed to bring the once Free and faithful world over to the deadly standards of Marxism-Leninism.)

“The Organisation for Security and Co-operation in Europe [OSCE] is a net we have thrown over the West.” (page 90; Russian Foreign Minister of the day, Andrei Kozyrev, as reported in the German newspaper ‘Frankfurter Allgemeine Zeitung’ on January 8, 1994)

“Prague? Let us give it to Germany.” – “The Czech Republic should go to Germany.” (page 52; Vladimir Zhirinovskiy, ‘caricature of a Russian nationalist’, as Anatoliy Golitsyn termed him, but of course high-ranking GRU officer, making on two occasions a highly interesting point; one time in the Italian newspaper *L’Espresso* on January 21, 1994, the other time in the German newspaper *Die Welt* just ten days later, on January 31, 1994. The statements refer to the secret German-Russian accord reached by Kohl and Gorbachev at their September 1990 meeting in Geneva that foresaw the Czech Republic to be merged with Germany within 15 years; and indeed, right on time, 14 years after that accord, the German-dominated European Union took in not only the Czech Republic but most of ‘formerly communist’ Eastern Europe. It can only be speculated whether even the time difference of 10 days between these two statements by Zhirinovskiy could have secretly indicated the actual time range in years until the EU’s eastwards-enlargement, which came to pass indeed 10 years after Zhirinovskiy’s pointer, and so on a May 1st, i.e. on Labour Day!)

Vladimir Zhirinovskiy is “just the probe they use to measure the depth of dissatisfaction in [and obviously also with] Russia.” (page 52; Mikhail Poltoranin, then head of the ‘Federal Information Centre’, January 13, 1994, ITAR-TASS; but Zhirinovskiy also acts as a ‘probe’ to test whether Soviet strategy has possibly been understood by Western observers, which to the satisfaction of the

strategists just never happens to be the case: the West continues to be sound asleep.)

Russian Foreign Minister of the day, Andrei Kozyrev, when in Iran in April 1994, explained his visit as “not a turn away from the West; we shall not turn away from the West anywhere, but a mere consideration of the fact that Russia is a great power and it must, and is, playing on all chessboards of world politics abiding by corresponding rules. We are Christians where it is appropriate, we are Europeans in Europe and Muslims in the orient;” adding that this was “not hypocrisy, but Russia’s multi-faced image.” (page 127; as was reported via ITAR-TASS. – The ultimate objective of such ‘multi-facedness’ of course being moulding the whole world into one and erecting on top of this global hegemony, then by the use of brute force like in the Revolution of 1917, a final Satanic kingdom on Earth; as Christopher Story reminds us, this statement by Kozyrev shows again the close similarity, *if not identity*, in the objectives of Freemasons, historical Illuminati, and Communists.)

“... The Moscow City Committee of the CPSU [i.e. Communist Party of the Soviet Union!!!] congratulate you on the 75th anniversary of the founding of the Communist Party, USA and on the 70th anniversary of the Communist press in the United States.” (page 76; September-October 1994 issue of the CPUSA’s journal ‘Political Affairs’ giving this note of congratulations indeed from the Communist Party of the Soviet Union, 3 years after the alleged dissolution of the CPSU and the Soviet Union!!!)

Interview with an Ukrainian government official by name of Boris Tarasiuk on the BBC programme, ‘Disputed Borderlands’, broadcast on Nov. 5, 1994:

TARASIUK: **“We have to design a new approach, a new concept of all-European security, which will be freed from the division of the Continent into military blocs.”**

ALLAN LITTLE, reporter of the BBC: **“Where would the centre of gravity in such a system be, where would the real decision-making power lie?”**

TARASIUK [according to Christopher Story: ‘unable to prevent himself from breaking into a broad smile on-camera’]: **“Very interesting question. It’s a question for... to be a subject for a special conference. Well, I could tell you that I know the answer to this question, but I would prefer rather not to answer it.”**

LITTLE: **“What’s your... well, what are your doubts about it?”**

TARASIUK [according to Christopher Story: ‘still looking uncomfortable at having been asked a pertinent question by a Western journalist, probably for the first time in his life’]: **“Well, I think that the time hasn’t come yet for giving an answer.”**

(page 119. – One certainly needn’t be a genius to guess what that “already-decided-upon” political centre of gravity is meant to be ...)

“Also attending were other components of the Communist movement in Russia. The most prominent was the COMMUNIST PARTY OF THE SOVIET UNION, which acts as a coordinating structure of the parties of the former USSR. Eventually, its aim is to become a fully-fledged party.” (page 76; April 1995: American Communist Sam Webb reporting in the April 1995 issue of the

Communist Party USA's journal 'Political Affairs' on his recent visit to Moscow where he had attended in January 1995 the Third Congress of the Communist Party of the Russian Federation (CPRF) led by Gennadiy Zyuganov, one of the many splinters, from far-left to 'far-right', that had emerged in 1991/92 from the supposedly defunct CPSU and that are in fact controlled by the same old CPSU that merely had gone in the hiding so to enable the illusion of a New Democratic Russia. By that phrase, obviously trusting that 'Political Affairs' is only read by 'the interested' and not by anyone else, Sam Webb revealed the truth about the very factual continuity of the CPSU and even explained that it is the 'coordinating structure' of all those new parties!!! Nothing has changed except for a new modus operandi! – Quite tellingly, no big festivities of any kind took place in late 2011 to celebrate the 20th anniversary of the 'end of the Soviet Union' - because there had been no end to the USSR, plain and simple. Certainly, they do not want to encourage any genuine expression of anti-Communism that could get out of hand. – The last sentence of the above-given quote clearly expresses the likelihood of the CPSU to officially re-emerge from its present hiding as soon as the convergence with the West on their communist terms would have so far progressed that wide-spread acceptance of this reality as well as absence of any considerable opposition would be guaranteed.)

"They write that I am the mafia's godfather. [But] it was Vladimir Lenin who was the real organiser of the mafia and who set up the criminal state." (page 69; Otari Kvantrishvili, a Georgian mafia 'leader', who was later murdered; published in April 1994 in Komsomolskaya Pravda.)

"One tries to make Westerners believe that the mafiya is the product of post-Communism, whereas in reality it is organised, controlled and staffed by the KGB." (page 69; Algirdas Katkus, then Vice-President of 'newly independent' Lithuania in an interview for the French publication *Libre Journal*: 'Un pays sacrifice'; Number 26, page 29; Paris 1995. – These two statements show with horrifying clarity what Anatoliy Golitsyn, as well as e.g. Joseph D. Douglass (author of 'Red Cocaine'), had warned of all along: that the 'Eastern Mafiya' isn't a criminal phenomenon in the conventional sense but a giant political operation designed to serve world-revolutionary strategy and aimed at exporting Lenin's 'criminal state' model to the whole world!)

"We should not forget that the representatives of the former political system have all adapted beautifully to the new economic situation. They are in banking. They were the first to understand all the positive sides of a system of government-controlled capitalism. They were very good organisers, and they were pioneers in commercialising the country." (page 63; Oleg Poptsov, Director of the Second National TV Channel, in June 1995. - What a frank admission of who really is the 'oligarchy' of the 'New Russia': they are trusted secret service personnel posing as 'private entrepreneurs' in the interest of the deception strategy and to involve foreign investors in 'joint ventures' with 'Russia'; meanwhile, the Soviet manager-apparatchiks have effectively turned the scales and walk around in the West, buying whatever they can and whatever suits Soviet economic strategy; which is predominantly the energy sector so to guarantee an ever greater energy dependence of Europe on Russian natural gas, to a lesser degree oil, and other natural resources.)

"It will become possible to create a Euroatlantic security area or, in other words, the comprehensive collective security system which has long been discussed in our country as the highest goal of our foreign and defence

policy.” (page 9; Sergei Rogov; then Director of the Russian Academy of Sciences’ Institute of the United States and Canada; in: ‘International Affairs’ (the journal of the Russian Foreign Ministry); Vol. 41, Nr. 7, 1995, page 6)

“The collective security model... should pave the way for a gradual evolutionary synthesis of several processes: integration within the CIS and the EU, strengthening and increasing the role of the Organisation for Security and Cooperation in Europe, transforming NATO [and] working together to prevent or resolve conflicts.” (page 93; Yuriy Ushakov, Director of the Directorate for European Cooperation at the Russian Foreign Ministry, in International Affairs, Volume 4, #5 (1995): ‘Europe: Towards a New Security Model’)

“Russian membership of the Council of Europe will open up intensified new cooperation between Russia and Europe and will assist us in reaching our objectives of achieving membership of the European Union and of NATO.” (page 98; then Russian Foreign Minister, Andrei Kozyrev, after Russia’s admission to the Council of Europe by February 8, 1996)

“Vladimir Zhirinovskiy also did his work well. He was in good shape and did his best to show everybody present [at the Council of Europe, in Strasbourg] what a wild and horrible person he is. Russia, he said, is the most democratic state in the world, unlike any member of the Council of Europe – for instance, the Germans, who are harming the Turks, the Turks who are suppressing the Kurds, and so on. Having succeeded in frightening the gentle Europeans [indicating how much the Leninists despise the compliant European ‘useful idiots’; Christopher Story] he concluded by saying that he personally would be happy if Russia were refused admission – as, in that case, he (Zhirinovskiy) would win the Presidential elections by a still larger margin.” (page 103; Vladimir Lukin, formerly Russia’s Ambassador to the United States and Chairman of the State Duma Committee of Foreign Affairs: International Affairs, Volume 42, Number 2, 1996: “Russia’s Entry to the Council of Europe”. – Official confirmation of how the unchanged Leninists stage dialectical plays to reach their objectives: Zhirinovskiy, posing as the ‘great threat’ of a back-fall of the ‘new, democratic’ Russia into another dark age of tyranny, merely acted out his role so to convince the West that it has no alternative to taking ‘Russia’ into their Western structures!!! The ploy, as also in the case of NATO’s eastwards-expansion, worked out most wonderfully: The ‘Russian Federation’ was finally welcomed as the 39th member of the Council of Europe on February 28, 1996, marking a major stepping stone in the process of peacefully and deceptively ‘entering the enemy’s camp’. The outcome then, of course, is to be what Christopher Story terms cuckoo’s egg diplomacy: once admitted to Western structures, the new members start to dominate the nest...)

“Ukrainian Comrades [should] not be involved in political infighting in their country [but] strengthen their ranks [and] set up primary organisations based on the CPSU platform [!!!].” – “The most powerful branches of the **Union of USSR Officers** operate in the units of the 43rd Missile Army, in Crimea, Dnepropetrovsk, Odessa, Kharkov, and Kiev.” (page 79; from a 1996 secret resolution addressing the work in the Ukrainian Armed Forces, published

on March 19, 1996 by the US Foreign Broadcast Information Service, FBIS: FBIS-SOV-96-054; page 44)

“It is very important that Russia is integrated into a new European security architecture.” (page 13: Klaus Kinkel, German Foreign Minister of the day, in May 1996)

Russia should join the European Union “in order to end its Cold War-era isolation for good.” Russia needed to be recognised, at last, as a “full European state... We are also prepared to join the European Union.” (page 13: Boris Yeltsin on March 22, 1997 in Helsinki during a two-day Summit Meeting with President Clinton; in: The Daily Telegraph, March 23, 1997: “Yeltsin wants Russia in EU”)

“During the 1990s, the neo-liberal economic model has been implemented on a global scale. As a result, the IMF and the World Bank have begun to play approximately the same role on a global scale as the Central Committee of the Communist Party of the Soviet Union once played for the Communist Bloc. IMF and World Bank experts decide what to do with the coal industry in Russia, how to reorganise companies in South Korea and how to manage entrepreneurs in Mexico. Despite all that is said about the free market, world practice has never before known such centralisation. Even Western Governments are forced to reckon with this parallel authority.” (page XXXVIII; Boris Kagarlitsky, Senior Research Fellow at the Institute for Comparative Political Studies of the Russian Academy of Sciences, in: ‘Socialism and Democracy’, Vol. 12, Nrs. 1-2, 1998, published by ‘The Committees of Correspondence’, an offspring of the Communist Party USA, that has its office at 10th Floor, 122 W.27th Street, New York 100001-6281, which is also the office of the far-left Gramsci operation calling itself ‘The Brecht Forum’, and of the ‘New York Marxist School’. The telling Marxist-Leninist titles of some of Boris Kagarlitski’s writings: ‘The Dialectic of Change’; ‘Disintegration of the Monolith’; De-revising Marx’; ‘Restoration in Russia’; ‘Why Capitalism Failed’; and ‘The Mirage of Modernisation’; info by Christopher Story)

“The two pillars of the nation state are the sword and the currency, and we have changed that.” (page 73; Romano Prodi, Financial Times interview of April 9, 1999. Mind this bold and arrogant admission by this key revolutionary basically saying that they go ahead anyway, whether with or without the European peoples’ consent! If one contemplates for a moment on this self-assured and dictatorial statement, one is inevitably reminded of another overly self-assured revolutionary dictator with pan-European ambitions: Adolf Hitler!)

9. 2000 onwards: THE RE-EMERGENCE OF THE STALINIST MODEL UNDER PUTIN – THE EU’S 2004/2007 EASTWARDS-ENLARGEMENT DEEP INTO THE COMMUNIST SPHERE – THE OVERALL FINALISATION TOWARDS ‘GLOBAL GOVERNANCE’ (As for the EU, at present, 2012, 10 of the 27 EU member states are “formerly” communist, notwithstanding the EU’s dominant power, Germany, which through its reunification in 1990 was effectively turned into an all-communist greater Germany rather than the other way round. These 10, if not 11, out of 27 “formerly” communist EU member states are: the 3 Baltic states, that were actually Soviet Republics until 1991; Poland; Czechia; Slovakia; Hungary; Slovenia, as the first of former Yugoslavia, which had been officially

out of the communist bloc but in fact part of it; Romania; Bulgaria; with Croatia due to join on July 1, 2013. Thus, apart from Switzerland, Norway and Iceland, a handful of principalities such as Liechtenstein, Monaco, or Andorra, and of course the Vatican, all that then remains are the 3 other former Yugoslav states, Serbia, Bosnia-Herzegovina and Macedonia, as well as once-ultra-Stalinist Albania. Other than that, the stage is set for the real thing yet to come: the merger with the unchanged Soviet Union, of course and tragically on Soviet-communist terms. – Regarding the global level, the IMF and World Bank, along with the G-8 and G-20 forums, have acquired, notably by 2010, the status of an unannounced world government anyway.)

“Over the next decade we will complete our economic integration and, even more importantly, give shape to a new, political Europe. The next five years will be decisive.” – “We are already pushing forward with political integration by establishing an area of freedom, security and justice, and by developing common foreign, security and defence policies. Our common interests and objectives are best served by a common approach and common means.” – “Political integration will become a reality as political leaders and citizens come to realise that their shared values of liberty, peace and stability, democracy, human rights, tolerance, gender equality, solidarity and non-discrimination can best be promoted through shared policies and institutions. Political integration must be pursued...” – “What we are aiming for, therefore, is a new kind of global governance to manage the global economy and environment.” – “The truth is that ‘Brussels’ is all of us.” – “We must sustain the pace of change to the very fabric of the European Union itself.” – “It will need further integration backed by a systematic policy of reform, transforming both our economy and our social systems.” (page 11; Romano Prodi, then President of the European Commission, February 9, 2000: *Strategic Objectives 2000-2005: ‘Shaping the New Europe’*. – Romano Prodi, although officially a left-of-centre Christian Democrat, but having led a number of left- and far-left coalition governments in Italy, was investigated from 2002 to 2006 by an Italian parliamentary commission, named the ‘Mitrokhin Commission’, about the possibility of his being a communist agent, i.e. a man of Moscow. The investigations met severe political obstacles, were themselves accused to serve an intrigue by then Italian Prime Minister Silvio Berlusconi, and finally were terminated after four years without having been able to verify or falsify the claims made in the archives of KGB Major Vasili Mitrokhin that Romano Prodi was their man. Interestingly, also former FSB-agent Alexander Litvinenko, who was assassinated in 2006, made the same claims, albeit based on hearsay. – Despite the outrageous implications of these claims, but quite tellingly, no investigation of Mr. Prodi was ordered by the EU institutions. His successor, by the way, the Portuguese José Manuel Barroso, was in his time as a university student back in the early 1970s a Maoist student leader; has he remained a communist, despite his conservative party affiliation?)

Then Italian Prime Minister and former President of the European Commission, Romano Prodi, meeting in 2007 Russian President, Vladimir Putin: conspiratorial comrades fighting hand in glove for the triumph of Lenin’s world revolution?

A planned ‘merger’ between President Putin’s so-called ‘Unity’ Party and two other large ‘factions’ in the Duma represented “a movement, a front, a

league – the CPSU, in effect.” (page 77; an Izvestia quote in The New York Times on November 6, 2001)

The purpose of this intended ‘merger’ was “to unite all healthy [i.e. Communist] political forces and all of society, for the sake of a single purpose.” (page 77; Sergei Shoigu, the Kremlin’s Emergencies Minister; the emphasis on ‘all of society’ and ‘a single purpose’ shows their revolutionary optimism to be able to build their long-desired Leninist ‘State of the Whole People.’)

The European currency union isn’t about economics. “This is a purely political process.” (page 29; then President of the European Commission and almost certainly Soviet agent, Romano Prodi, January 2, 2002; as Christopher Story brilliantly puts it: “With previously unremarked honesty, Sig. Prodi thereby destroyed with that single comment all the myriad spurious economic and monetary pretensions that had accompanied the prolonged gestation of the Euro – making retrospective fools of finance and economy ministers, central bank governors, Prime Ministers, Presidents and others who had contended publicly that the introduction of the Euro was ‘necessary’ in order to make it easier for tourists and businessmen to conduct trans-European transactions.”)

“Post-war Germany had never believed in the nation state at all, and has been working for a European federation all along.” (page 29; German Finance Minister of the day, Hans Eichel; The Daily Telegraph, January 17, 2002; Christopher Story comments: “Although deception remains the European Union’s familiar modus operandi – nothing will ever change that – it has recently become fashionable for senior Euro-ideologues to throw caution to the winds and to reveal what was previously hidden from the captive populations of the EU Member States by their leaders.” Hans Eichel’s statements were made only days after Sig. Prodi’s outrageous admission! Christopher Story continues: “But for a senior German ideologue to admit this openly in 2002, suggests that Berlin has concluded that the Leninist attack on the nation state, which Herr Eichel confirms that it is pursuing in tandem with Moscow, has progressed so far in Europe that the true purpose of the EU Collective need no longer be withheld. It is now acceptable to speak openly in Europe about the redundancy of the nation state – the revolutionary expectation being that, given the Revolution’s triumph in the cultural war that has been waged since the 1960s to undermine loyalties and respect for all institutions, the nation state means nothing to the younger generation.” – Meanwhile, a decade later, even TV-correspondents unashamedly demand the building of a European federal state; ironically, the deadly crisis of the European Monetary Union is being used, instead of admitting its complete failure, for even further centralisation under the maxim of all-European ‘solidarity’. More than ever, the EU displays the Kafkaesque reality of being literally a ‘revolutionary’ perpetuum mobile!)

Quote: Christopher Story, political analyst, author, publisher:

“Given this tradition [referring to Communist strategy being based on the old Mongol methods of subversion, subterfuge and deception], the blindness of Western defence and foreign policy establishments is breathtaking. This author’s three-volume copy of the Oxford University Press edition of the documents of the Communist International, 1919-1943, selected and edited by Jane Degras (1956), contains, inside each

cover, a stamp which reads: ‘MINISTRY OF DEFENCE LIBRARY: WITHDRAWN’. To establish definitely whether the British Ministry of Defence owns a set of these indispensable volumes, the Author telephoned the MOD Library, posing as an army officer, and enquired whether the Library possessed a set of these books; *the answer was in the negative*. Likewise, Mrs Christine Stone, the wife of Professor Norman Stone, has confirmed to the author that her husband bought a number of books on Communism which had been discarded by the Foreign and Commonwealth Office. The message is that these key British Departments of State *have shredded their institutional memories and have unreservedly accepted the false Leninist ‘Break with the Past’ as genuine* – a reckless abrogation of responsibility which could have been avoided by maintaining at least a skeleton analytical staff devoted to interpreting events in terms of Leninist deception theory (which those departments do not understand: as a consequence, British foreign policy has remained rudderless and confused).” – (Christopher Story: “The European Union Collective”, page 52)

“The European Union’s member governments and the political collective’s structures have failed to detect, or else have chosen to ignore, one fundamentally unfriendly hidden strategic purpose of the ‘liberation’ of Central and Eastern Europe, and of the ‘former’ Soviet Union’s apparent fragmentation – which was to create the conditions for the intended adherence, in due course, of the ‘former’ East European satellites and of the ‘former’ Soviet Republics, to the eastwards-expanding European Union collective. By this means, the unified (Communist) political space ‘from the Atlantic to Vladivostok’ will gradually be established. – By encouraging the illusion that the European Union has an ‘historic opportunity’ and a moral duty to entice and welcome all the East European countries and then the Republics and Russia itself into the orbit of the West, the strategists have bamboozled the socialist European Union Collective into active cooperation with them in furthering the creative implementation of the Leninist strategy to establish a single (eventually Communist) European space in accordance with the unchanging objective enunciated by Gorbachev, Shevardnadze and their successors. The trick has been to encourage the Europeans at national and collective levels in the mistaken view that the way to deal with Russia is ‘not to isolate it’, but rather to ‘draw’ it into the West’s structures so that Moscow is not ‘left out in the cold.’ This is comparable to the psychological pressure routinely used on the reluctant British, to persuade them to abandon the pound sterling and their residual sovereignty. *In reality, it is not the West which is enticing the East into its orbit, but the East which is covertly enticing the West into its enlarging sphere of control through ‘convergence’ on its own terms.*” (Christopher Story: “The European Union Collective”, page 92)

X. NOVEMBER 9TH, 2009: THE 20TH ANNIVERSARY OF THE FALL OF THE BERLIN WALL (“20 Jahre Mauerfall”): A *special* celebration for the Communists.

November 9, 2009, in front of the German Embassy in London: Note the banner in the background: Underneath the motto “2009: 20 Years Fall of the Wall”, one can read the stranger-than-strange maxim, “Work in Progress”, all kept in communism’s favourite colours red and black resp. grey. This is clearly yet another display of utmost Leninist boldness: first, both ‘work’ and ‘progress’ are key words in the communist vocabulary. Second, ‘work in progress’ reveals the objective (as well as outcome) of the events of 1989: the furtherance of the world revolution, that truly is – the word ‘revolution’ expresses it anyway – a never-ending ‘work in progress’ indeed. Berlin: the launching base of the long-prepared-for offensive, that gained tremendous momentum through the reunification of Germany. The whole world: the building-site for overall communist victory! The symbolism of the wall made of ice-bricks in the foreground of the picture (created by the English/German artist couple Manon Awst and Benjamin Walther) is rather striking as well: this wall doesn’t need tearing down, it simply melts away and dissolves into the air, just like the communist strategists accurately foresaw the ‘magical’ removal, in the perception of the West, of the *image* of the enemy. The unchanged Leninists are true adepts in deception and psychological warfare! – Also, this wall of ice bricks seems to contain an additional connotation: it was Gorbachev’s demonic ‘heat’ that so wonderfully broke the Iron Lady’s ice!

The 20th anniversary celebrations of the fall of the Berlin Wall had been planned, with German precision and renewed German self-esteem, both as an impressive spectacle for the world and a colourful party for the people of Germany. And statesmen and elder statesmen, liars and liees (or co-liars) alike, attended the commemoration at the Brandenburg Gate. Not among them, ironically, were the two who so greatly but erroneously had taken pride in ‘having faced down communism’ and ‘having won the Cold War’, Ronald Reagan and Margaret Thatcher. Former President Reagan was no more alive; Baroness Thatcher had not come to Berlin, probably due to bad health. The third conservative of 1989, former German Chancellor Kohl, did cover a tight schedule during the whole day, but too was now very weak, notwithstanding his being widely forgotten if not *persona non grata* in Germany since the so-called CDU donation affair of 1999. In other words, and this is symbolic, those who were triumphing then, were either dead or appeared beaten today. Which left the scene almost completely for Gorbachev, who seems to be acting with even greater vigour and resoluteness now than as General Secretary back in the 1980s, so obviously looking forward to the nearing completion of the world revolution. Among the old guard that did attend, however, were Henry Kissinger and Hans-Dietrich Genscher, who according to Christopher Story had been working through their entire careers as Soviet moles within their respective political surroundings.

Yet, still hours ahead of the main festivities at night, there was set up i.a. a highly questionable ‘celebration’ at the former checkpoint “Bornholmer Straße”, the first border crossing to be opened in the events of November 9, 1989. In a re-enactment of sorts of the ‘Trabant invasion’ of 1989, Angela Merkel and some 100 former ‘dissidents’ and ‘democratic activists’ of the communist German Democratic Republic were solemnly if not triumphantly marching across that bridge known as Bornholmer Brücke but correctly named *Bösebrücke*, and they did so, of course, starting from their old communist East into what once was the French sector of West Berlin (and *not* the American or British sector!). Among them were the East-West-communist chansonnier Wolf Biermann (who was also the stepfather and artistic mentor of East German punk diva and certainly agent of influence once she arrived in the West, Nina Hagen) and the plain East-German Joachim Gauck, a GDR-church-politico who claims to have been suffering political persecution, but in fact was friendly with the communist regime and enjoyed privileges unknown to the ordinary East-German (ironically

it was him who oversaw the agency responsible for processing the archives of the former East-German state security, MfS, a.k.a. “Stasi”); today, he defines himself, in classical Leninist fashion, as a ‘left-liberal conservative’ (sic!); his candidacy for the German State Presidency in 2010 was indeed supported, albeit not by the successor of the East-German SED, “Die Linke”, but nevertheless by both Social Democrats and (Red-)Greens; much worse: after a suspiciously hyped corruption scandal against recent German State President Christian Wulff, which led Hr. Wulff to step down from office on February 17, 2012, within two days, CDU-CSU, SPD, Free Democrats, and Greens (in other words, all parts except for “Die Linke”) agreed that Joachim Gauck should be Germany’s next State President; he was then elected on March 18 and inaugurated on March 23, 2012; the change in the highest office of Germany will certainly move the country by yet another great leap towards becoming a full-fledged communist state. Never mind that Hr. Gauck *stubbornly refuses* to bring his family life in order so to suit his new position: though once having been a Protestant pastor, he lives in separation from his wife and instead in a “wild marriage” with another woman: you see, *they are communists*, and they *spit on everything of old!* – Back to checkpoint “Bornholmerstraße”. Now, why did the ‘collapsing’ GDR decide to first open a border crossing named by *them* in 1948, and *still* named today, after a German communist by name of Wilhelm *Böse* (the surname translates to ‘evil’), who had been sentenced to death by the Nazi regime in 1944, a communist ‘martyr’? And why, subsequently, was there this odd 2009 all-communist demonstration, this jolly and optimistic ‘Mayday Parade’, again over this bridge named ‘Böse Brücke’, i.e. the ‘EVIL BRIDGE’? Communism – which represents pure, concentrated evil and very much knows that it is evil – *loves* such insidious in-your-face audacity, especially when hardly anyone sees the forest for the trees anymore. Quite conveniently as well, this bridge had been initially opened in 1916, as Hindenburg Bridge, *on a September 11th*, the birthday of their highly revered founder of the Soviet Cheka, Felix Dzerzhinsky, and later-to-be death-day of the father of the new deception strategy, Nikita Khrushchev!



German Chancellor Merkel, flanked by (meanwhile new State President of Germany) Joachim Gauck (left) and leftist chansonnier Wolf Biermann (right): “for communists only”. All that was missing in this eery, complete-with-red-shawls, hardcore-communist manifestation (and let’s keep in mind that Angela Merkel once was a Secretary for Agitation and Propaganda in the East German communist youth organisation ‘Freie Deutsche Jugend’) would have been the intonation of the old communist East German anthem: “Auferstanden aus Ruinen, und der Zukunft zugewandt...” (“From the ruins risen newly, to the future turned, we stand ...”). Poet Johannes R. Becher and composer Hanns Eisler knew, back in the year 1949, why they created an anthem metrically identical to the ancient Austrian “Kaisermusik” in use as the national anthem of West Germany: For, the East-German (and pan-communist) political objective over all those decades, whatever ridiculed in the West, had been a re-unification of the two German states *on communist terms*. And they accomplished it, not by the use of tanks, but by the most perfidious deception ever in the history of mankind. And soon, all the mindless partying and cheering will give way in the former West to a solid sense of defeat.



Previous page: A commemorating tablet at Bösebrücke (Böse Bridge), applied in 1998, reminding of the events of November 9th, 1989. The simple fact that – say, the ‘changes’ had indeed been genuine, which they weren’t – this so important site still carries the name of the communist Wilhelm Böse (instead of, for example, again that of Reichspräsident Hindenburg after whom it had initially been named), doesn’t make any sense at all – *unless*, of course, the whole ‘collapse’ of communism was a hoax (which it was) and the subsequent reunification of Germany not a matter accomplished on the terms of the West *but on communist terms!* – Indicators indeed confirming this grim reality, even on the surface of things, are plenty. A quick check via Google Earth of the street names of East German cities and towns shows that all their ‘former’ revolutionary/socialist/communist idols are still being held in high regard: Voltaire, Alexander Pushkin, Karl Marx, Friedrich Engels, (they did away with Lenin), Maxim Gorki, Ferdinand Lasalle, August Bebel, Émile Zola, Rosa Luxemburg, Wilhelm and Karl Liebknecht, Clara Zetkin, Ernst Thälmann, Bertolt Brecht, Sergey Prokoviev, Yuri Gagarin, even Walter Ulbricht. Also, they still have streets, scattered across the country, with such ‘colourful’ ideological names as “Straße der Pariser Kommune” (Street of the Paris Commune), “Straße des Friedens” (Street of Peace), “Straße der Demokratie” (Street of Democracy), “Straße der Freiheit” (Street of Liberty), “Straße des Fortschritts” (Street of Progress), “Straße der Werktaatigen” (Street of the Workers), “Straße der Zukunft” (Street of the Future), “Straße der Solidarität” (Street of Solidarity), “Straße der Opfer des Faschismus” (Street of the Victims of Fascism), “Straße des 8. Mai” (Street of the 8th of May), “Straße der Befreiung” (Street of the Liberation), “Straße der Republik” (Street of the Republic), “Straße der Arbeit” (Street of Labour), “Straße der Einheit” (Street of Unity), “Straße der Völkerfreundschaft” (Street of Peoples’ Friendship), “Weg der Freundschaft” (Way of Friendship), “Straße der Nationen” (Street of the Nations), “Straße der Jugend” (Street of the Youth), “Straße des Bergmanns” (Street of the Miner), “Spartakusstraße” (Spartacus Street; ‘Spartacus’, a name so widely popular in communism since its beginning, had been the codename of the forerunner, as we go back in history, of Marx and Babeuf: **Adam Weishaupt**, founder of the ultra-radical and hyper-Utopian Illuminati network, that indeed held those very same sick views and ideas of a completely egalitarian and collectivised society!), “Allee der Kosmonauten” (Alley of the Cosmonauts), “Platz der Vereinten Nationen” (United Nations Square), and so forth; you get the picture...

Fake ‘conservative’ Chancellor Angela Merkel with fake ‘reformer’ Mikhail Gorbachev and fake ‘independent trade union leader’ and ‘first democratic Polish President’ Lech Wałęsa at Bösebrücke. What a display of all-communist harmony and friendship! (This photograph also provides, maybe, a good opportunity to look behind Angela Merkel’s ‘democratic’ mask: concentrate on her eyes, and you might sense pure Leninist evil...)



Mind the uniformly black clothes of these people (including those of Angela Merkel), the dark red here and there, the ‘workers’ caps’ of Gorbachev and Walesa, the triumphant face of Gorbachev (he is wearing a leather jacket!), and the somewhat conspiratorial mood that lies over the scene. The message couldn’t be much clearer: WE won the Cold War, it is *us* who are now in control, and *we* are now building our world communist empire.

Reality upside down: Although the German reunification opened the door for West Germany to become a fully-fledged Communist society, these people “thank God” for it ...



There took place a number of other high-profile events over the whole day. In the morning, there was held an (of course:) *Ecumenical church service* at Berlin's

Gethsemane Church, where Archbishop Robert Zollitsch, head of the German Bishops' Conference, warned of "potential wall-builders" who still existed today, they shouldn't be in charge, whether in society or in the churches (thus, he argued not only in favour of the post-Conciliar Catholic Church's general theme of all-embracing inclusion, but also in favour of the essence of overall totalitarian intolerance *masked as politically correct tolerance*: all have to be one, or else...).

Left to right: Head of the German Conference of Catholic Bishops, Archbishop Robert Zollitsch; with former Chairman of the Council of the Evangelical Church in Germany, Bishop Wolfgang Huber; German Chancellor Angela Merkel; and then Federal President of Germany, Horst Köhler, presumably after the service at Gethsemane Church, Berlin.

Shortly after, Gorbachev – who, given the tight schedule of successive events, hardly could have attended that church service – was honoured at the headquarters of the publishing house Axel Springer (once utterly hated by the extreme left). The doyenne of the mighty company, Friede Springer, along with German Foreign Minister of 1989, Hans-Dietrich Genscher, praised Gorbachev and unveiled a newly-made bronze bust of his. (There were no such honours for the late President Ronald Reagan, though!)



Chancellor Merkel then received U.S. Secretary of State Hillary Clinton at the Kanzleramt: kissy-kissy between a declared American feminist and a childless ‘former’ communist from ‘once-communist’ East-Germany. They afterwards met with German Foreign Minister Guido Westerwelle (like Berlin’s Mayor, Klaus Wowereit, a confessing homosexual) for a lunch of the dysfunctional, one could say.

In the afternoon, the politicos gathered at the annual *Falling Walls Conference* (International Conference on Future Breakthroughs in Science and Society), a somewhat socialistic ‘brain-exchange’ platform, where Angela Merkel spoke on ‘Breaking the Walls of the 21st Century’.

In the early evening, finally, German State President of the day, ever politically correct Horst Köhler (who had once been Director of the IMF), received the lot of international state leaders at Bellevue Castle, quite a many of them from the ‘former’ communist satellite states of Eastern Europe (Switzerland, on the other hand, had *not* been invited to the celebrations, on the formal grounds that it is



not a member of the European Union...)

Note the almost abnormal body posture of Russian President Dmitri Medvedev standing left of Silvio Berlusconi at the righthand end of the semicircle! Although they now have a splendidly renovated Kremlin Palace, meanwhile also a brandnew Bolshoi Theatre, beautifully restored churches and monasteries throughout the country, nevertheless they themselves have remained the same old proletarian Bolsheviks and dry, technocratic apparatchiks. The new fassades shine brightly, but the content behind them is still as unpolished as ever (which is the more understandable the more one is aware of their unchanged communist despise for Western “bourgeois” etiquette).



As one can see, Secretary of State Hillary Clinton perfectly met the communistic 'dress code' of the day!

Concluding the series of solemn New World Order speeches by the state leaders and -representatives present, also the "New Tutankhamun", via direct video-link from the White House in Washington, spoke to Germany and the world, whatever his wise-as-ever remarks may have been in detail (take note of his light-blue tie, a

gesture of reverence towards the United Nations that has become a veritable fashion among politicians in recent years; also mind the frequent emphasis on blue in the light-shows of popular events nowadays, so clearly celebrating the “cold light of the Enlightenment”, or to be more specific: the cold light of Lucifer!).

Following the official part of the celebration, entertainment, though just as political (resp. ideological), had its way. Bon Jovi sang their pathetic “We aren’t born to follow”, which couldn’t have been further from the historical truth of 1989, but revealed another key characteristic of communism: neglect and rebellion, the root of which is nothing else but Satan’s rebellion against God; communism isn’t about politics, or society, or economy, it is about complete destruction of the God-given order. Period! – Then came a soft and cosy tune entitled “We Are One” by East-German DJ Paul van Dyk alias Matthias Paul and sung by Irishman Johnny McDaid. Let’s remember that in that same month of November 2009 the newly designated President of the European Union, Herman van Rompuy, declared the year 2009 as the “first year of global governance.” Following so much “Oneness”, also the German TV-channel ARD added from early 2010 to its usual ARD-logo the maxim “Wir sind eins”, thus: “We are one”. At the exact same time, also the Austrian Broadcasting Corporation, ORF, changed the logo for its first channel from “ORF1” to “ORFeins” (thus: “ORFone”), without however changing “ORF2” into “ORFtwo”, of course. What a wonderful era of overall merging and coming together we’re living in, aren’t we...

Yet, the final culmination of the evening was yet to come. And it was, again, quite an insidious spectacle indeed. As one can see on the previous photograph, there was prepared, along the line where once the Wall had divided Berlin, a row of one thousand “wall segments” made of polystyrene foam, painted on mostly by school children, and patronised over by such larger-than-life “icons” such as Mikhail Gorbachev, Lech Wałęsa, or Nelson Mandela (also the latter: a communist!). These elements, however, were set up as dominoes, and the idea was to let them solemnly fall, one after the other, at the end of the celebration. Yet, think about it: why this symbolism using dominoes? There once had been discussed in Western political circles a so-called “domino theory”, the term coined by President Eisenhower in 1954 and mainly referring to the situation at the time in South-East-Asia. What it meant was the imminent danger of a step-by-step expansion of the communist sphere, threatening every new country bordering its sphere of influence to be swallowed by it. The subsequent strategy of the United States and the West, if one can call it that, was a strict policy of containment. *That* is what American soldiers fought for in Korea, in Vietnam, and in so many other war theatres (unless, as some hold, the whole Cold War





W
D
A
co
of
th
w
pr
ab
re
un
bl

The evening was then crowned by magnificent fireworks, but again there appears a fairly disturbing element: The scene shows the Brandenburg Gate from the West, that's where the celebrations mainly took place. As one contemplates on this firework, one almost inevitably is reminded of missiles, **missiles fired from the East towards the West!** We do not know whether this was the intention, but if it was it would mean indeed that WW III is just around the corner!



means 'Friendship!' and is well-known to be the all-socialist/communist greeting around the world, whether in Russian or in any other language. What boldness, what cynicism: On the night when the 75 plus % ignorant Germans naïvely celebrated the supposed fall of communism and the subsequent reunification of Germany, Gorbachev brutally nullified that illusion of 'collapsible communism'

by that single word, that single communist greeting! The merger of East and West Germany indeed had been, at last, on communist terms, just as the whole world is now in the process of being merged, too, on no one else's terms but on those of the communists.



Showmaster and moderator, Thomas Gottschalk, well-protected on this evening against the rain by a huge umbrella. Thomas Gottschalk, as the most successful and popular TV-showmaster of Germany, isn't that easily baffled. But in that moment, when Mikhail Gorbachev forced communist friendship upon him, he visibly was!

XI. SERGEY PETROVICH MELGOUNOV: *The Red Terror in Russia* [orig. 1924]; (Eyewitness reports from the revolution and civil war); Edward Harle Ltd., London, New York 2008

For those who still have difficulty to imagine what a communist takeover would mean, here are excerpts from a compilation of eyewitness reports from the 1917 October Revolution and the subsequent years of Lenin's/Dzerzhinsky's Red Terror (that slew an estimated 2.5 million Russians per annum!), which may give you a more "vivid" picture of what's to be expected.



A local eye witness report from the Kuban region said, “We were led forth from the cells in batches of ten, but were quite calm, for, on the first batch being removed elsewhere, we were told that the reason for their removal was that they might be questioned only. But when the second batch was removed we realised that the purpose of the removal was *execution*, and sure enough, those who were taken away were butchered like cattle.” (page 39)

A correspondent of the Crimea newspaper *Dielo* wrote on the purges in Sebastopol, “The city is like a city of the dead, with the population lying in cellars and lofts, and every fence and wall and telegraph post and telephone standard and shop front and signboard plastered over with posters saying ‘Death to the Traitors’.” (page 43)

A refugee from Tiflis reported, “The town was wholly given up to pillage and rapine... One night a friend of mine saw a huge pile of corpses – 300 or so of them – lying in the Cathedral Square. All the house walls around them were bespattered with blood, and evidently a very large number of executions had taken place. In the pile were men and women, were old and young, were military and civilian, were Georgian and Russian, were rich and poor.” (page 48)

And another description of the Bolshevik takeover of the Crimea: “When usurped Bolshevik rule was established in the Crimea, it was established in the most bloodthirsty, cruel, and ruffianly forms possible, as a rule based solely upon crude, tyrannical authority. And whole rivers of blood began to flow in the towns, and Bolshevik sailors to rage everywhere, and robberies to occur, until there had become formed a general, permanent atmosphere of plunder and pillage of the citizens.” (page 64)

Melgounov gives a quote from another book published in 1918, “*Seventy-four Days of Bolshevik Rule*” by A. Lokerman dealing with the massacres at Rostov: “After being divested of their clothing at Sivers’ headquarters (save that a few were allowed to retain their trousers and boots, and a few even their shirts as well, since those garments could, of course, be removed after execution), the prisoners, men naked and barefooted, were, in this twentieth century, marched along a snow-covered street to the churchyard, and shot. And though most of them died praying and crossing themselves, it need hardly be said that such concessions to ‘bourgeois prejudice’ as a blind-folding of the prisoners, or a permitting of a priest to be present, were ignored.” (page 65)

From Voronezh Province became known the following: “In Kerensk victims usually were tortured with subjection to sudden changes of temperature. First they were put into a steaming bathhouse, and then led forth, naked, into the snow. And at Alexievskoe and other villages in Voronezh Province the victims would similarly be taken naked into the winter-bound street, and soused with cold water until they became living statues of ice. And at Armavir the ‘death wreath’ was the implement most used. That is to say, the victim would have his head encircled with a leather strap fitted at the ends with an iron nut and a screw, and the nut and the screw be joined together, and the head increasingly compressed. Lastly, the Che-Ka of a Caucasian stanitsya used an iron-studded ‘glove’ that was made to be worn on the executioner’s hand.” (page 96)

Quoting from a scene of Steinberg’s “*The Moral Aspect of Revolution*” depicting events in Tambov Province, “In this district the peasants had a particular veneration for an ikon of the Vishinskaya Madonna; and when influenza broke

out in the district, a solemn procession was held in the ikon's honour, and a celebrating of Mass. And, on the Bolsheviks seizing both ikon and clergy, and the peasants learning later that the Che-Ka had insulted the ikon, and 'dragged it about the floor', they set forth to 'rescue Our Lady', with women and children and the aged and everyone else joining the throng. And then the Che-Ka turned machine-guns upon them, and mowed them down in rows as, 'with terrible eyes which saw nothing', they moved forward over the bodies of dying and dead, and mothers, flinging themselves before their children, cried: 'O Holy Virgin and Defender, bless us gladly we lay down our lives for thee!' " (page 74)

Melgounov explains, "In fact, each Che-Ka seems to have had its speciality in torture. Kharkov, for instance, under Saenko, went in primarily for scalpings and hand flayings; and in Voronezh the person to be tortured was first stripped naked, and then thrust into a nail-studded barrel, and rolled about in it, or else branded on the forehead with a five-pointed star, or, if a member of the clergy, 'crowned' with barbed wire. As for the Che-Kas of Tasritisin and Kamishin, it was their custom to saw their victims' bones apart, whilst Poltava and Kremenchoug made it their special rule to impale clergy (once, in the latter place, where a ruffian named Grishka was in command, eighteen monks were transfixed in a single day). Also, inhabitants have testified that Grishka would burn at the stake any peasant who had been prominent in a rebellion, and sit on a chair to enjoy the spectacle. The Che-Ka of Ekaterionslav, again, went in for crucifixion and death by stoning, and the Che-Ka of Odessa for putting officers to death by chaining them to planks, and slowly, very slowly, pushing them into furnaces, or else tearing their bodies on a capstan wheel, or else immersing them in a boiler of water heated to simmering point, and then flinging them into the sea, before finally consigning them to the flames again." (page 95)

Finally, a brutal note of April 1919 published by the Izvestia of Odessa and revealing the evil psychology behind this nightmare: "The carp enjoys being seethed in cream, and the bourgeois being slain by a Power which is stern, and ready to kill him ... Even though our souls may revolt from the task, let us use strong measures, and bring the bourgeoisie to their senses, seeing that we need but shoot a few dozen of the fools, of the wastrels, and make the rest clean the streets, and set their womenfolk to scour out Red Guard barracks (though even this is too great an honour for them!), for the bourgeoisie to realise **that our Government is a Government come to stay, and that it is useless to look for help from Englishmen or Hottentots.**" (page 27)

It wasn't "a few dozens". It was millions and tens of millions! And that same Soviet system, with its unchanged revolutionary "zeal", is still in place today and eager and ready to throw the whole world into a new Leninist madness!

XII. EDUARD LIMONOV (born 1943): *The Other Russia: Outlines for the Future*; 2003; presented online at <http://www.nazbol.ru/rubr23/2477.html> - Eduard Veniaminovich Limonov, born E. V. Savenko, represents beside Vladimir Zhirinovskiy the second "howling beast" of a "nationalist opposition politician" in contemporary "Russia". A wild and anarchist poet, who had even been expelled from the Soviet Union as a "dissident" in the 1970s, Limonov as a politician is generally labelled as "far-right". Yet, his former party was named the "National Bolshevik Party" (he now collaborates with Garry Kasparov and the other "democratic opposition" under the coalition "The Other Russia"). And, his views are perfectly in line with the Soviet Union's early days of cold, Satanic

revolutionary fire and frantic social experimentation, although garnished with strong overtones borrowed from Bolshevism's totalitarian cousin, German National Socialism (reading Limonov can be helpful for all who still think Hitler's National Socialism belongs to the Right; the Nazis were no less utopian revolutionaries than the Bolsheviks; the label "Right" should have been preserved, as had been the initial meaning, for the Monarchy; study the origins of the left-right dualism, and you'll reach at the early stages of the French Revolution, i.e. the French National Assembly of 1789: to the 'left' sat the revolutionaries; to the 'right', the Royalists; the religious connotation is no coincidence; thus, how in the world could have Hitler been "right"; he and his fellow occultists were as left in the sense of "sinistre", to use the Latin word, and literally 'left-handed' as one can ever be; and they didn't name themselves "socialists" for no reason). Thus, Limonov's aims match precisely what Anatoliy Golitsyn predicted decades ago regarding the final outcome of it all: a general, global adoption of "a uniform, rigorous brand of Leninism". – Of course, at the moment such theories appear far-fetched (unless one lives in Europe) – and, no doubt, Limonov and Zhirinovskiy chiefly play their roles as the "bad boys" so to let the official rulers of Russia shine the more brightly. Nevertheless, such extreme Bolshevik radicalism, even full-blown Satanic madness (the National Bolshevik Party's website shows under <http://www.nbp-info.ru/nbart/index.html> an index of "National Bolshevik Art": there one can see a thumbnail depicting an obviously ritualistic-Satanic drawing of a seminude with horns on her head and the eye of Horus descending onto her; by clicking it, one reaches at a set of 11 drawings by one Vitaliy Katkov that remind of Tarot cards, yet are extremely sexually and Cabbalistically-Satanically charged, some of them even with pointers to Freemasonry), is where the whole of world communism, including the strongly interlinked "Green" and occultist-esotericist movements, are headed: Lenin's ultimate "state of the whole people", with the growing global phenomenon of Khmer-Rouge-like tribalism, e.g. as "National-Anarchism", likely to be its main vehicle. This is extremely dangerous as, indeed, it seems as if international communism would soon come up against the West through both the so-called 'Left' and, if not more so, through the so-called 'Right'. By deliberately confusing labels but nevertheless pushing forward their Leninist totalitarian programme, hardly anyone would be able to see through what is happening – until it's too late. Again, if one keeps in mind that the "New Russia's" political arena is populated solely by like-minded Leninists who, each of them, play their respective individual parts like the diverse instruments in a large symphonic orchestra (an allegory frequently used by Lenin), one should listen more closely to the seemingly mad outbursts by Zhirinovskiy or Limonov. These outbursts might well reveal very serious political messages as for what's possibly building up far away, or maybe not so far away, on the horizon. – *The Other Russia* is, naturally, packed with lies, confused references, and bold re-writing of history. But, there are passages in the midst of all cursing and swearing that truly should ring our alarm bells. These passages are presented as follows (bold print emphasis by this author; orthography has been left unchanged).

Foreword: I have a dream

"[...] **We need to rebel.** We have to invent, to reckon for us, for our group, for the people that we consider ours, another life model and to impose it. But first of all we need to build a new nation. Everybody keeps saying around here: "Russians",

“We are Russians”, “I am Russian”, “for Russians”. But under this label there are a lot of different people hiding. It turns out that Yeltsin is Russian too, and the blue-gray drunkard, and the dirty bum and the active spermatozoid Kirienko. And if they are Russians then I am not Russian. So what do we have to do? We have to select the people for a new nation. It should be called something else, not Russians **but say, “Eurasians” or “scythes”**. It is not that important but the new nation should be built on other principles, not by the color of hair or eyes but the courage, the loyalty to the belonging to our community. We will need children from the new people. Many children will be needed for the nation to grow fast. This is why we should allow many kinds of families: those that lead to an unusual multiplication. **Permit polygamy, free associations.**⁴ Women should get pregnant continuously and to bear fruits. **As for the children they will be provided for and raised by the community.** They will live and be raised among adults. And already from the age of, say, ten years old. Today children are rotted in boring schools and their brains and memory are forcibly supplied with dust that nobody gives a shit about. **Education will become short and will be different. Boys and girls will be taught to shoot from grenade throwers, to jump from helicopters, to besiege villages and cities, to skin sheep and pigs [maybe also people, as part of a revived Red Terror], to cook good hot food and to write poetry.** There will be sportive competitions, fighting, a free combat without rules, running, jumping. They will read Nikolai Gumilev’s poetry and Lev Gumilev’s books, entire generations will be, according to the precepts of Constantine Leontiev, taught to love the East. To understand the beauty of the blue steppe and the red mountains. And all the vileness of concrete barracks in snow, the vileness of Moscow suburbs. Will we produce weapons? Of course, we will. **We will wage wars. But not like those before, not front on front. Ours**

⁴ As if one man having many women would make the slightest demographic difference! As long as people marry and have babies instead of avoiding them or aborting them, there won’t be any problem. Again one can see the dialectical principle at work: destroy the traditional way of life by making the family look ‘unattractive’, ‘burdensome’, and ‘boring’; in addition, bring the general standard of living down so people feel overwhelmed by the perspective of having to carry parental responsibility. And finally come up with a new, completely revolutionary society model in which people are encouraged and ‘empowered’ to have children, yet not to have them for themselves, but to hand them over to the societal collective! – The same debate, though seemingly more civilised, has been going on in a number of traditionally “Western” countries. Germany, for one example, too has a problem with its birth rate. Yet, the announcements from the side of politics that the country again needs more babies do not have in mind a restoration of the family at all (and the nominal Christian Democrats in government since 2005 have continued, under East German apparatchik Merkel, the radical policies of the preceding Red-Green experiment, having merely attached to that same Marxist programme a deceptive fig leaf of “Christian conservatism”). Rather, there is an ever stronger drive towards a socialistic managing of the individual and, along with it, an aggressive increase in state-run day-care institutions, even and especially for under-3-year-olds, in combination with cuts in direct family subsidies – all of it quite obviously intended to supplant the family on the long run. In this situation, the then Bishop of Augsburg, Walter Mixa (born 1941), otherwise a fairly seamless co-traveller in the post-Conciliar modernist Catholic Church and even a member of the Rotary Club, which is known to be a front and recruiting organisation for Freemasonry, nevertheless in February 2007 raised his voice and openly attacked this insidious policy. Bishop Mixa very accurately drew a comparison with the system in former communist East Germany: By giving preference to day-care institutions as opposed to the traditional way with mothers staying at home with their children, all under the pretext of ‘equal career opportunities for women’ (the UN calls it ‘gender equality’), the German Christian Democrats would not only sacrifice the traditional family values but moreover degrade women to the status of “birthing machines”. This critique of his catapulted the Bishop, more than ever, to the front line of the ongoing cultural war, and, sure enough, after 3 years of all sorts of ungrounded accusations and defamations, he was most cowardly betrayed and abandoned by his confrères, fellow priests, and finally the Pope; in April 2010, Bishop Mixa resigned; given the circumstances, one should rather say he was suspended. End of story. The affair shows that by now no one can stand up for the truth any longer, and that’s certainly the case also outside Germany, unless he wants to be criminalised, character-assassinated, and declared, for the rest of his life, persona non grata and a fascist fundamentalist! And this is only the beginning. The persecution sooner or later will turn very bloody, like with the French and Russian revolutions. Priests, monks, and nuns (even the ones dedicated to progressivism), and certainly all believers and lovers of tradition in general, might soon be in the greatest danger to their very lives (let’s remember Anatoli Golitsyn’s prediction of a “McCarthyism of the Left” and a “new holocaust” based on class, not race, and directed against the Western political, military, religious and managerial elites).

will infiltrate their territories, familiarize their people with our way of living and ideas and the healthiest and strongest ones among them will become ours, our nation. And then our forces will invade and finish off those who don't agree. We will need land. The frozen Russia is caught in the clutches of uncreative, stupid administrators, poor in spirit. **We will have to leave Russia, to build a nest on the fresh central lands, to conquer them there and to give rise to a new, unseen civilization of free warriors united in an armed community.** Roaming the steppes and the mountains, fighting in southern nations. **Many types of people will have to disappear.** Alcoholic uncles Vasilis, cops, functionaries **and other defective material** will die out, having lost their roots in society. **The armed community could be called "Government of Eurasia". Thus the dreams of the Eurasians of the 30s will be realized.** **Many people will want to join us. Possibly we will conquer the whole world.** People will die young but it will be fun. We will burn the corpses of the heroes. And what is the sense of making a revolution if the objective is just to seize the ministerial posts, the vulgar cabinets. **We will have to change everything. And to invent us a New God, possibly some Tungusian meteorite or an iron planet in the cold universe. Our god will be the one who gave us death. Maybe our god will be death.** So, like Martin Luther King, I have a dream. But his dream was poor, wretched..."

Lecture 1. The Red Eyed Monster: The Family

"[...] The family in Russia is the strongest social institution. They say that in China it is even stronger. The majority of embezzling of public funds acts, acts of corruption, stealing are committed for the sake of the family. The Russian functionary steals government money, as a rule, not for wasting it in the "Yar" restaurant, but for the building of a spacious country-house, acquiring of an apartment for the family members, for children and grandchildren. The newly arrived Russian businessmen are banal in the area of taste and preferences: a Mercedes for himself, a Mercedes for his daughter, a country-house for himself, a country-house for the son and the family. **Of course the revolution should end all this bullshit, but for a successful, deep, irrevocable revolution, for irrevocable transformations to happen in society, we need to destroy its strongest molecule: the family. It is possible to do. Far from always in history of mankind did society exist in its present form. It can also exist without a family.**" [...]

Lecture 2. Schooling: They Stole Your Childhood

"School is needed to society for suppression. It was created for that. It is a governmental institution. And this is why not only it is not guiltless but also just as guilty as courts and prisons in the suppression of man." [...] "Right after the enthronement of the Soviet Power the revolutionary-Bolsheviks freely experimented with school to the utmost. Judging by 'The SHKID Republic' there were teachers' elections, school self-government. The future was planned to be interesting. **They understood that if they wanted to cultivate a new man they also needed new schools.**" [...] "Returning to Stalin's attempt of the Restauration of the classical education I will note once again that it was realized in the late period before his death when Stalin had come to imperialicity, having rejected the heritage of the 1917 revolution. It is unknown what he himself thought about his school but a hedgehog can understand that the new man

could not have come out of a school where were taught Latin and Russian history, composed by the German Miller and other Germans on orders of the German dynasty of the Romanovs.” [...] “We needed more and more revolutionary spirit! My reproach to the revolution of 1917 is that it was not enough radical. It did not kill the ancient world but just muffled it for a time.” [...] **“We have to begin from five years old and to teach for no more than five years.”** [...] **“So as it begins to walk the child leaves his mother and comes to live in the House of Youth. The House is necessarily located in a picturesque environment with beautiful nature, outside the city.”** [...] “Only in exceptional cases will the teaching take place in classrooms. The details of the new educational system have to be elaborated in the future. The basic principle: the teacher, the Master with a capital letter, man of experience and knowledge will personally teach the group of students. Like the eastern teacher of wisdom and martial arts.”

Lecture 3. The Most Oppressed Class

[...] “The problem of fathers and children becomes a problem just after the child gets 14 (well, a bit earlier, a bit later, not everybody, as it was already mentioned, has an exact biological age). To that time the child is mature: that has been a while that the girls are menstruating, the boys look manly, their voice is deep and they feel a direct urge for a girlfriend, the sexual maturing has taken place, the parents have before them a formed individual – a man, a woman. And the parents, by order of the government have to still consider them as children. Notice that up until this age there is no father and children problem, everything is more or less perfect – the child needs protection until he has not grown up. But here he is grown up – no need to keep him as a child. **One should begin life earlier and instantly throw the youth in a vigorous rhythm – To hurry to live!”** [...] “As far as I know, historians did not study revolutions as a phenomenon of war between generations, contenting myself with only facts, without their analysis; Yes, Bolsheviks or national-socialists were very young people, only Lenin (47) and Hitler (44) were far more older than their comrades.”

Lecture 10. The Great Dream

“Right from the start a shocking declaration. Both capitalism and communism originated in the sects of the Middle Ages. Capitalism developed from puritan asceticism. **Communism from orgiastic sects that preached the communalism of property and women.”** [...]

Lecture 12. The Unradicalism of the 1917 Revolution

[...] “They were not able to create the soviet man. Some amount of individuals was subjected to a powerful suggestion, that they are soviet people. But the influence did not last for long.” [...] “They did not understand that the small people are slowed-detonation mines, put under the Soviet civilization. Already from the 20s they allowed to every significant tribe to cherish its ‘adats’, its ancestors’ customs. Thus the center in Moscow even helped them! The all-

Russian budget gave money for the existence of newspapers, journals, books, typographies on the languages of the USSR peoples. For those, the shabbiest ones who didn't even had writing, our scientists even developed the writing and wrote down their oral legends. By this, broadening the isolation of these peoples, intensifying their difference, giving rise to international conflicts. When for a hundred years they should have relentlessly physically mixed the USSR peoples, creating a single, ethnically soviet people. They had to, like it is done in Saudi Arabia to conduct single demonstrative many thousands' marriages of northern peoples with the southern, western with the eastern or even select couples at random, or to draw the grooms and the brides in a daily All-Union lottery. To change their names and families on Ivanovs, Petrovs and Sidorovs. They had to starve all languages except Russian. They had to do everything in order that the Latvians, Lithuanians, Kazaks, Kamchadals and others forget their history, if they had one. It was not necessarily to burn historical books and dictionaries. It would have sufficed not to republish them. If the Bolsheviks had started to do this from the first year of the revolution – they would have done the job in 70 years!" [...] "The Germans, actually also did not create a new man. Although they set to work vigorously. The SS incubators did not last long. The millenary Reich was allowed only for 12 years. There were, actually, good ideas, like for instance two women for a fool-blooded German."

Lecture 13. What To Fight For?

[...] "So for what would now the passionate individual, the misfit move from his place, will rebel? What he will fight for? A part of these objectives is already defined in this book. – 1. **He will fight for the destruction of the family and for a new sexual and social collective – the communes. For a high sexual comfort in life. For two, three and as many as you want hours of affection per day. One should not underestimate the revolutionism of the striving of man for sexual comfort. It is more important than the right for labor. For sexual comfort his girls went into the family of Manson. And he attached them for years. Sexual comfort rises the quality of life immediately.** – 2. He will fight for a faster and more substantial life, for the reevaluation of the roles of the ages and their displacement of favor of youth, aged from 14 to 35. He will fight against the dictatorship of the middle age." [...]

Lecture 14. Socialism and Capitalism: Siamese Twins

[...] "Why did communist and socialist parties degenerate? Because they function with the same categories as the liberals, call for the same goals. But if our ideological enemies preach the productivity of labor, then it is stupid to preach a still larger productivity of labor. Besides, knowing for certain that it works better for them, with mechanical labor and productivity. One needs to preach something different, totally-totally different. **The fraternity of people, freedom of man from mechanical labor. Sexual comfort. Right for war.**"

Lecture 15. Sexual comfort

"Charles Manson – a talented psychologist, insightful playboy with a prison experience caught the souls of his girls in this way: 'Charlie undressed me and led me to the mirror. 'Look at you, how beautiful you are, what stout, straight legs you have, what an oval, white belly... You were called to offer joy, any man has to feel happiness, immersing into you...' This is told by one of his girls, I

think ‘Squeaky’. Charlie quickly assembled his harem, his commune. He was joined by difficult children of bourgeois families. Those who couldn’t get their lives straight, for whom it was hard to talk with their parents and even more so with the opposite sex. Charles Manson, although nobody taught him that, knew from God what to say to each one, to the most plain, how to greet her. They were all loved by him. ‘Charlie is love’ they said about him. They are still saying it now, 32 years later.” [...] “**In a healthy society sex has to begin not later than at 13 years old, as already indicated, and in case of lateness one should be get ridded of virginity ceremoniously, in one’s birth day. The new civilization will allow all forms of sexual communal living, including the family (until the partners are joined by love) but will not encourage family.**”

Lecture 16. The City Is An Enemy

[...] “In cities it is possible to live only by the rules of the past, in cities the past is collected and showed to all to see: churches, architectural constructions of the XIX century – all suggests inequality and unfreedom. And the suburbs – monstrous in their ant-bee essence, these kinds of concrete-honeycombs, in the mornings vomiting their human stuffing and in the evening taking it back inside – this is a completely unceremonious modern manner of slavery, the new serfdom. **Apparently, the Red Khmers understood this, possibly, they did an awkward and bloody attempt, but at a time they liquidated the city of Phnom Penh.**” [...] “As for cities they are quickly overgrown with grass. I saw the demolished Vukovar, the smoking Sarajevo, Benders where on public places mines splashed like vomit, I saw the burned down Gagri where on a speedway, after ripping it open from inside, grass had grown to the waist of a man, I saw beaches of once elegant resorts, overgrown with grass to the very edge of the tide. Nature quickly conquers abandoned cities. **I realize that I love destroyed cities more than living ones. And your generation will have to realize that destroyed cities are more beautiful than living ones.**” [...]

Lecture 17. Fighting Instinct

[...] “On the basis of this knowledge, after thousands of man-hours spent with war people, a firm conviction had developed in me, that war is not the sin of human kind, not a vestige of the past, not a shameful instinct, but a legitimate powerful instinct of aggression, the instinct of heroism. I developed this theme in the book ‘The Sentinel’s Murder’. Referring to the work of the Austrian biologist Konrad Lorenz, I explained in that book (and later in the article ‘Dogs of War’) that a part of the man population of any country takes delight in war. Moreover military instinct is discovered often by accident, in people very remote in normal life from war, if they suddenly end up in a war.” [...]

Lecture 18. The Tunguska Meteorite and Human Semen

[...] “However the fact that church constructions, return of the treasures, temples’ living spaces and icons are not at all accompanied by the religious activity of the population. The pike of such activity had passed in the beginning of the 90s, that’s been ten years that it had passed. Well, sure that on Easter

and Christmas crowds of commoners flow to the Cathedral of Christ the Savior (not so many: according to police data 250-270 thousands in all Moscow churches), however the custom of Easter and Christmas goes beyond the limits of a religious behaviour and belongs to the genre of entertainment activities together with concerts and soccer games.” [...] “People thought so much about Christianity, fanatized so much around it, pondered so much about it, they spun it, turned, interpreted texts and analyzed so much that they exhausted it, wore it to holes. **Only maybe the works of Karl Marx are comparable with the Gospels by the intensity of the interpretations to which they are submitted.** Christ came to the world to expiate our sins – that is the base of the Christian building, the foundations. But we really don’t have any sins, what sins can have a whitish, kissel-like, composed of 80% from water, soft being, covered with a thin skin and sparse hair? Even if there are sins, let’s assume, (only before whom?) then we are all condemned to expiate them by our death. Death is our judge. And we wouldn’t avoid it. What has to do with that a yellow-skinned, bearded man in a loincloth on a cross? Why did he suffer for us? We inevitably suffer for ourselves anyway. Moral agents between man and death are not provided. No brokers and dealers and lawyers: bash for bash – sin for an indulgence... sinner or not – death will take its due. It’s another thing that Christ’s story is an impressive moral parable and a universal literature subject. Here everything is ok. **But religion itself, i.e. proofs of the power of a Lord from beyond, the power of supernatural forces in Christianity is not that evident. The Aztecs or the Mayas who offered human sacrifices to the God of the sun on their pyramids, had more faith ...**” [...] “Even if man will clone his fellow men soon and in unlimited quantity he will not be able to comprehend the sense of man. There will be a mechanical reproduction of some genetic versions of man, but why are we sent to crawl like bugs on woods and cities – we don’t know. Gurdzhiev affirmed, remembers Uspenski, that human kind exists to feed the Moon, on distance. And he gave to this, really mad affirmation, a rational cosmic explanation. In Severodvinsk lives the engineer Kovalevsky. I never met him but he sent his scientific manuscripts to the newspaper ‘Limonka’. It talked about... the control over human kind by cosmic extraterrestrial civilizations, about clusters of energy that govern us, those like ‘Christ’ or ‘Brahma’, about cosmic invisible copied ships, to operate which Kovalevsky was ready to teach human kind. At first I decided that the engineer from Severodvinsk was completely mad, but after reading more carefully, I discovered with fright that this could be. That this could be like this too. Especially interesting seemed to me the promise to train man for flights on copied, hovering somewhere ships – pieces of plasma and that Kovalevsky promised to train man to do without food. I sent member of the Severodvinsk department of the national-Bolshevik party to the engineer, but they didn’t get a contact with Kovalevsky. Man doesn’t know anything. He only uses the miracles, but he didn’t get to the essence of the miracles. He uses electro-energy, energy of the split core of uranium, but the mysteries of these energies he didn’t discover, didn’t understand. Therefore he needs God. But a bit more complicated and a bit scarier. Wrapped up in the cocoon of atmosphere, the Terrestrial Globe quietly bears human kind until a precise, but also designed for chance inexorable mechanism of the universe doesn’t smash it to pieces together with the cocoon and the planet-bearer. What Christ, sponge with vinegar, lance can express man’s confusion before his insignificance, shabbiness. A sponge, vinegar are objects more from the show ‘Duty Unit’ or ‘Road Patrol’ – a requisite of the everyday murder by bums of their own comrade, they just tortured him a bit... Maniacs feel man’s mystery, and in their, of course, manner, try to solve it, pitilessly ripping a meat doll, possibly look for the soul, look for the meaning and

each time are disappointed. Just like the natives from Fiji Island, who discovered that God – the captain Cook – bleeds from the stone they had thrown. There is some solution to the meaning of man, to imagine that we hang around here in vain each his term would be awfully bitter. Obviously, we, alas, are not the principal in the multitude gigantic worlds, as it seems to human kind, seemed until now. The head of it all, the Leader of world order cannot be only a god of men, what a specialization! And man cannot be such a God's favorite pet so that he jealously, without leaving from sight, watches his morality. **The God of an incalculable quantity of worlds, cold, rough, stone-metallic and inexorable, has to have the shape of some planet Saturn, scary and remote. When I want to pray, I admit, I imagine myself ice worlds, black holes, spaces of light years, rough sides of scary planets, all this revolving cosmogony, and I pray to Saturn.** Also it is good to pray to the Tunguska meteorite – a part of the universe. The Muslims, who pray to the black meteorite of Kaaba are closer than us to the truth ...”

Lecture 19. Revolutions, Globalism and Separatism

[...] “**All of Africa, a huge part of Asia and Latin America would like to redistribute the world anew.** But the military advantage of western countries is so stunning that even timid dreams about redistribution terrify. And also when you have before the eyes the sad fates of Iraq and Serbia. **And at the same time the idea of an absolute necessity of a world revolution, a rebellion of the entire world with the goal of casting off the yoke of the insolent Europeans is always present.** If it happens, first of all, naturally, the Space-colonies will be absorbed by neighboring peoples. The Mexicans will flood the entire South of the US, Australia will receive hundreds of ships with Asian migrants, no matter if it wants this or not. **The prerequisite for a world revolution and reconstruction on a planetary scale exists. There is enough hatred for the Yankees and the Europeans. There will be enough human resources. What one needs is a happy chance, and better it would be that someone prompted this chance. Sets fire to the first match.** [...]”

Lecture 20. Restoration

[...] “Why do Restorations inevitably lead to Revolutions? Why there wasn't any successful Restoration? And there are no examples in History, there is no and no successful Restoration, even if you go through all history pages, all of it, reaping the pages from the start and from the end as well. No! **The answer: because a Revolution is not a fancy of a group of people, it is an historical law.** [...] “it is clear that one has to beat, to break, to rebel. Then the Revolution volcano erupts. But it can't win by a single try, the lava will not reach enemy's remote outposts, the lava will peter out. That's when Restoration comes. Silence. Repressions. Reaction on the Revolution that just happened. Simultaneously a new unbridled eruption already breathes heavily under the earth, releasing only clouds outside for the moment, already puffs, preparing itself.” [...]”

Lecture 21. The Second Russia

[...] “In ‘the Second Russia’ text, the anonymous writer also looked at the project of the organization of guerilla warfare with the subsequent seizure from the ‘CIS

republic' territory of the region inhabited mostly by Russians. And the creation of a separatist State – The Second Russia. Three CIS countries were named as the best suited for this goal: Latvia (900 thousand Russians), Ukraine (11 million) and Kazakhstan (5 million and something). Kazakhstan was named as the best option. Naturally, the project wore a theoretic character and was stated in the subjunctive mood. 'If there was such a political party... And if it would...' ‘[...] “So I also include the ‘Second Russia’ project in the outlines of the future. In any case we’d have to leave Moscovia. Central Russia is decimated by alcohol; there is too much flawed people here, ‘inhuman’ in the entire meaning of the word. [...] The New Nation will have to be built on the basis of the Russian language, as for the culture and the nation, we will create new ones. Just as a new civilization. This mission is well within our powers. We created a newspaper and with it, the subculture of national-bolshevism. Just as well we’ll create a culture.” [...]’

Lecture 22. Outlines of the New Civilization

“The basic principle of the old civilization is the protestant principle of labor in the name of productivity. The person is promised a sated life till late old age, the life of a moderately working domestic animal. **The basic principle of the new civilization has to be a dangerous, heroic, full life in armed nomadic communes, free communities of women and men on the base of fraternity, free love and communal education of the children. The frozen cities have to be closed down and their population dispersed.** As for the nomadic way of life, it will look as follows: a large commune singles out an encampment for itself and relocates there on helicopters; if it is an island – on floating crafts; or on armored carriers, on trucks. In the future, in relation to the dispersion and the withdrawal from the cities, the urban life style will die out. And with it the production of objects for an urban life style. Sofas, cabinets will become useless, the need for apartment furniture, apartment articles will become eliminated. Because the city, as a principally archaic, people-enslaving, territorial, economic and political lasting encampment of man will be forbidden, the need for long-term construction will be eliminated. The entire construction industry will be working on the development and production of light and warm nomadic lodgings of large and small sizes, capable of fitting the commune members: the personal staff, tools and weapons.” [...] “**But neither should one take the new civilization as a leap backward in the past. One shouldn’t think that we preach the fight against the development of science, fight against the comfortable and smart achievements of the technical progress. No. We will develop Internet, and genetics, and the new super-television as well. Television and Internet will link the armed communities in a united civilization of free citizens.**” [...]”

XIII. LATVIAN CONDUCTOR MARISS JANSONS' PECULIAR SYMBOLIC HINTS AT HIS TWO NEW YEAR'S CONCERTS WITH THE VIENNA PHILHARMONIC ORCHESTRA IN 2006 AND 2012, RESPECTIVELY.

Mariss Jansons was born in early 1943, at the height of WW II, in the Latvian capital Riga, that had been, along with the whole of the Baltics, incorporated by force into the Soviet Union in June 1940 and that was under German occupation, since Germany had opened war against the USSR, from 1941 till 1944. Being the son of a conductor and a singer, Jansons' career path was set early. He studied piano and conducting at the prestigious Leningrad Conservatory from age 13 and continued his training, age 26, in Vienna and Salzburg. In 1973, Jansons was appointed Associate Conductor of the Leningrad Philharmonic Orchestra. From 1979 he was for two decades music director of the Oslo Philharmonic. He also worked extensively with the London Philharmonic and London Symphony Orchestras, with the Pittsburgh Symphony Orchestra, the Royal Concertgebouw Orchestra, and the Bavarian Radio Symphony Orchestra.



As the first ever conductor of "former" communist background, Mariss Jansons was invited somewhere in 2004, presumably, by the Vienna Philharmonic Orchestra to conduct on New Year's Day 2006 their internationally known and loved annual New Year's Concert at the Vienna Musikverein. It was the time when the "New Russia" began showing again its true face of a never-abolished Soviet Union. The "Russian Federation" had adopted natural gas as a political weapon against Western Europe; later that year there were to occur the shocking assassinations of ex-KGB/FSB-officer Alexander Litvinenko and journalist Anna Politkovskaya. More than a year earlier, the world had witnessed the unspeakable school hostage tragedy at Beslan, in which up to a thousand innocent children died (the school was, in fact, bombarded from the air). On the political platform, the whole of Eastern Europe, without for the moment Romania and Bulgaria, had joined the European Union on **May 1st**, 2004; and Germany had exchanged, after 7 years of Red-Green governmental adventurism, its Chancellor from West German socialist-Marxist Gerd Schröder to "former" East German plain-Marxist, hidden under the cloak of an all-German "Christian Democrat", Angela Merkel. Things were most wonderfully unfolding for European and world communism.

In the midst of that 2006 New Year's Concert with music mainly by, as every year, the Strauß dynasty & contemporaries, there were also, as every year, one or two gags thrown in, which the audience ritually awaits to see. However, this time, 2006, as well as with Jansons' second New Year's Concert in 2012, things were somewhat different. Almost certainly, Mariss Jansons' gags weren't nearly as innocent as most of the concert- and TV-audience might have believed.

As for the concert in 2006, there was first, just before the end of Eduard Strauß' "Telephon Polka Francaise op. 165", a 'surprise call' on Jansons' mobile phone! He switched it off, seemingly annoyed, and the orchestra finished the piece with great fanfare. Everybody had a good laugh.

The second "joke" was after playing Johann Strauß the Younger's "Banditen Galopp op. 378", when one orchestra musician and Mariss Jansons, both with ancient pistols, were shooting up in the air like crazy guerilleros celebrating their victory. The act was noisy, and smoke rose up to the ceiling.

So apparently harmless, so amusing.

Yet, 6 years later, 2012, Mariss Jansons from brotherly USSR (whose favourite colour seems to be anthracite grey, by the way), in his second New Year's Concert with the utterly bourgeois Vienna Philharmonic, came up with a set of rather puzzling "jokes" *again* (weirdly, this year's flower decoration of the Musikverein's Golden Hall was solely in white and dark red; officially explained by the national colours of both Austria and, more so, Latvia). – At first, for Joseph Strauß' Polka *Française* "Feuerfest" (Fireproof!!!) op. 269, Mariss Jansons took it upon himself to contribute the key element of percussion of this piece, which is every now and then two hammers knocking down alternately on two differently tuned anvils. This Polka is otherwise especially lovely because it includes a boys' choir, here represented by the Wiener Sängerknaben, and spreads an atmosphere of great jollity. Nevertheless, the image remains: two hammers, and their helms even partly red (hammer & sickle certainly would have been too obvious!).

Significantly, it was *this* photograph showing Jansons with hammers in his hands that the (Red-)Vienna section of the deeply socialist Austrian Broadcasting Corporation ORF chose, beside a second one, for a report on their website. They certainly understood their communist comrade, no doubt!

The second “joke” came towards the end of the concert after finishing Johann Strauß the Younger’s popular Polka schnell, “Tik-Tak” op. 365. A musician passes to the conductor a huge 19th-century-style alarm-clock, with Jansons



vigorously pointing to it, and, sure enough, the thing rings loud enough for everybody to hear. But, whom does he try to wake up, and what for?

(By the way, doesn’t it seem to be the case with Jansons, just as with everybody else from the communist East, that they always appear, given their ever-same superior smirk, to know more than we do? Most probably, that is the case!)

As we try to make sense of these quite obvious allusions, going back for a moment to the 2006 concert, we should view those two images of that concert in relation to each other; as, very likely, they are giving us a quite distinct message. The pistols of course stand for war (and mind that this galop is named “Bandits”; the Bolsheviks, from the earliest beginnings up to this day are just that: bandits; they know it well, and, in Satanic fashion, are even proud of it). And the ringing telephone stands for dialogue. It was, in the opinion of this author, a warning: Listen to us, talk to us, engage in dialogue and cooperation – OR ELSE. (Essentially the same message like Gorbachev’s recent speech at Munich that stood at the beginning of this presentation). Indeed, in recent years, the West (or what’s left of it) has received many explicit WW-III-threats from a number of Russian generals, mostly related to Bush-43’s missile defence plans in Eastern Europe (although this is merely an excuse for gearing up their pre-WW-III propaganda machine). So, it was basically another way of expressing the pan-communist bloc’s final phase of “cooperation-blackmail”. That was 2006.

This year, 2012, things looked even more ominous. First, we have the red hammers on the anvils (albeit without a sickle) accompanying a Polka entitled

indeed “Fireproof”!!! Then we get, at the end of the Tik-Tak Polka (meaning: time is ticking!!!) that wake-up call in the form of the alarm clock! However, now it isn’t a warning anymore, so it seems, but a mere one-sided message: ‘Time’s up! Communism’s coming!’ Not enough with these two “humorous side notes”, also the choice of musical pieces, at closer look, seems to hold some uncomfortable surprises, even more so when one combines them into one larger message (unless it’s all ungrounded paranoia, but it isn’t):

- The 2012 New Year’s Concert was actually opened with Johann & Joseph Strauß’ “Vaterländischer Marsch”; i.e. “Patriotic March”!!! The unchanged Soviets unchangedly refer to WW II as their “Great Patriotic War”, in German: Großer Vaterländischer Krieg. Interesting!
- The third piece of the altogether twenty-four was Johann Strauß the Younger’s Polka schnell op. 403, “Entweder – oder!”; i.e. “Either – Or!” Gets a bit frightening by now. This is the message of blackmail.
- The eighth of the lot was Joseph Hellmesberger Junior’s merciless “Danse Diabolique”. No explanation needed for that.
- The twelfth was Danish composer Hans Christian Lumbye’s galop “Steam Railway”. Also very fitting for a future military offensive, apart from the fact that the revolution sees itself as a train on fixed rails!!!
- The thirteenth was, as already mentioned, Joseph Strauß’ Polka Francaise op. 269, “Fireproof”; the one with the hammers (these last two even in direct succession!)
- Then there were two pieces by Tchaikovsky. Jansons isn’t Russian but Latvian; nevertheless he comes from the Russian-dominated musical tradition of the Soviet Union, and therefore Tchaikovsky makes sense (well, he isn’t too far, as a Balt, from the Scandinavian tradition either, at least geographically). But what choice: the “Panorama” and the “Waltz” from Tchaikovsky’s Ballet “The Sleeping Beauty”, that is based on the fairy tale “Dornröschen” (Little Briar Rose) from the fairy tale collection by the German Brothers Grimm, and ultimately on Charles Perrault’s story “La Belle au bois dormant” (i.e. ‘The Beauty in the Sleeping Wood’).



Viktor Mikhaylovich Vasnetsov (1848–1926): “Sleeping Princess” (1900-1926); Princess Aurora’s 100-year sleep since the curse by the wicked fairy Carabosse, maledicted by the intercession of the benevolent Lilac Fairy, had hit her at age 16. Yet, along with Aurora, the Lilac Fairy sent the whole country to sleep – until finally a prince will come and kiss the princess back into life ...

Do the unchanged Soviet communists equate Europe to the Sleeping Princess and themselves to the prince??? (There’ve been comments by Vladimir Putin towards the US a few years ago, telling them to better keep their fingers off this young woman, Europe; however, this quote seems by now to be impossible to find on the web.) Well-known anyway, they love to liken their revolution to the glorious dawn of a new era. The opposite is true: Wherever communism comes to power, lights go effectively out for a very long time. Thus, one should rather liken communism to the evil witch who would like to kill the princess, with the dull result that the princess and her land enter into a century of deep coma. Maybe the coma will be over by the year 2017!

- Not enough with all that, was played the Persian March op. 289 by Johann Strauß. – Nota bene, at a time when the full-grown Soviet satellite of Iran could in whatever way be involved in triggering World War III (and they’re now indeed threatening to block the Strait of Hormuz, presumably in coordination with Moscow, which would mean war because 40% of all shipped crude-oil worldwide is coming through that sea passage.)
- Further, there was played the (very elegant and Offenbach-style) Polka schnell op. 324 “Unter Donner und Blitz” (Thunder and Lightning). Rather drastic, given the fact that we live not only in an age of nuclear weapons and thermobaric vacuum bombs but also directed-energy-weapons.
- And, finally, the above-mentioned Tik-Tak Polka with the alarm clock as a brutal reminder!

In case these choices were indeed made by such insidious intention (Mariss Jansons is said to have researched the Strauß oeuvre with unusual meticulousness!), one can, on the other hand, be sure that none of the Vienna Philharmonic would have seen through the scheme. The communists are truly the world champions of deception; whereas, **despite all monstrous history already written by communism**, the naïve and ever-friendly West has again become unable to comprehend that such concentrated evil as practised resp. envisioned by the communists can indeed exist. The reality is, however: It existed then in 1917, and it hasn’t gone away ever since!

The reader to whom such considerations appear completely foreign or over-the-top may be reminded that tough ideological determination among Soviet-communist artists, including musicians, is anything but new. As another contemporary example, Russian conductor Valeriy Gergiyev (born 1953), who already looks wild and dangerous, holds a function within the German-Russian bilateral forum “Petersburg Dialogue”, that is a political body aimed at furthering the German/West-European convergence with “Russia” (from the fact that the German side is headed by the last Prime Minister of communist East Germany, Lothar de Maizière, one can immediately see on whose ideological terms that convergence will play out). What’s more, in the infamous South-Ossetia War of

2008, Gergiyev conducted the top-ideological piece of Soviet symphonic music, the Leningrad Symphony by Shostakovich, and so, most melodramatically, in the ruins of the South-Ossetian capital Tskhinvali that had now been in fact brought under direct Russian control (although, on the other hand, one should be more than wary of the alleged pro-Western stance of Georgian President Saakashvili as well; “post-Soviet affairs” just remains a hall of mirrors, designed to leave the non-initiated Western observer stunned, disoriented and confused). The major difference, however, between the present-day generation and earlier Soviet generations is that those of today, even the oldest, were born into the deadly Marxist-Leninist collectivist system and were indoctrinated, formed and trained along the rigorous ideological lines of Marx and Lenin. Without exaggeration one could view them almost as a different species (Romanian pastor Richard Wurmbrand, author of *Marx and Satan*, characterised communism as “collective demonic possession”). They think, feel, and function differently, even though since the proclamation of “Perestroika” they have put on chic Western clothes and have increasingly “mastered” bourgeois conduct and behaviour, for which inwardly they hold nothing but contempt.



In contrast, the biography of Dmitriy Shostakovich (1906 - 1975) – although he *did*, for the mere sake of survival, give the system a number of highly ideological works such as “October”, “First of May”, or “Leningrad” – still shows what today has long passed: the permanent struggle within a hostile, oppressive, totalitarian system of someone who still had known, at least as a child, the old order of things. Although Shostakovich arose to the highest summits of Soviet-Russian music and certainly participated, with little zeal though, in the structures of the new proletarian environment, he remained throughout his life a quiet dissident. Many of his works show subtle irony, if not sarcasm, which was about the utmost critique possible even for someone in his position of already international fame, and it can only be guessed how Dmitriy Shostakovich, who was fascinated by the works of Stravinsky and Mahler, might have developed as a composer, had he been given the opportunity to live and breathe and work in a free, sound and God-fearing society. Legend has it that he was living, especially under Stalin, in a constant state of existential fear, with always (imagine!) a suitcase packed just in case he’d be picked up early in the morning and sent to prison, or worse. – Such a generation still aware in their hearts and minds of an era prior to the revolution no more exists. Any element of genuine opposition, genuine “reaction”, genuine restoration, has been over many decades thoroughly rooted out from the USSR’s population: they are now all “genetic” Leninists!

fame, and it can only be guessed how Dmitriy Shostakovich, who was fascinated by the works of Stravinsky and Mahler, might have developed as a composer, had he been given the opportunity to live and breathe and work in a free, sound and God-fearing society. Legend has it that he was living, especially under Stalin, in a constant state of existential fear, with always (imagine!) a suitcase packed just in case he’d be picked up early in the morning and sent to prison, or worse. – Such a generation still aware in their hearts and minds of an era prior to the revolution no more exists. Any element of genuine opposition, genuine “reaction”, genuine restoration, has been over many decades thoroughly rooted out from the USSR’s population: they are now all “genetic” Leninists!

Thus, what's left is nothing but a civilisatory and, first of all, spiritual DESERT: the perfect precondition for finally building their (whatever short-lived) Satanic kingdom on earth, not only on their territory, but meanwhile easily on a global scale. May God help us in the trials and tribulations that lie ahead of us! Amen.

MISSED CHANCES ...

The fundamental philosophy of Communism can be answered only by a firm and enlightened belief in God. Nothing will give more strength to the hand-to-hand combat against the conspiracy, made possible by a knowledge of its techniques, than a great *Credo* from the hearts and minds of the American people. Those who are educated and among whom the ravages of unbelief have particularly paved the way for an acceptance of the doctrines of Red slavery, have a peculiar obligation to assert: 'I believe in God, the Father Almighty, Creator of Heaven and Earth.' That humble expression of faith is the beginning of wisdom in the battle against Communism. – *Louis F. Budenz, former prominent US Communist, in his 1954 book "The Techniques of Communism"*

I would never have imagined the extreme degree to which the West actually desired to blind itself to the world situation, the extreme degree to which the West had already become a world without a will, a world gradually petrifying in the face of the danger confronting it, a world oppressed above all by the need to defend its freedom. There is a German proverb which runs '*Mut verloren – alles verloren*': When courage is lost, all is lost. There is another, Latin one, according to which loss of reason is the true harbinger of destruction. But what happens to a society in which *both* these losses – the loss of courage and the loss of reason – intersect? – *Aleksandr Solzhenitsyn: "Warning to the West" [5 speeches given originally in 1975/76], Hill and Wang, First Edition 1986*



XIV. ABBÉ AUGUSTIN BARRUEL (1741-1820): PRELIMINARY DISCOURSE TO THE “MEMOIRS ILLUSTRATING THE HISTORY OF JACOBINISM” (ORIG. ‘MÉMOIRES POUR SERVIR À L’HISTOIRE DU JACOBINISME’), 1797 (TRANSL. 1798)
(presented in full online, photographed from an historical copy, at Google Books)

[The Jacobins appear.] At an early period of the French Revolution, there appeared a Sect calling itself JACOBIN, and teaching *that all men were equal and free! In the name of their Equality and disorganizing Liberty, they trampled under foot the altar and the throne; they stimulated all nations to rebellion, and aimed at plunging them ultimately into the horrors of anarchy.*

At its first appearance, this Sect counted 300,000 adepts; and it was supported by two millions of men, scattered through France, armed with torches and pikes, and all the fire-brands of revolution.

It was under the auspices of this Sect, and by their intrigues, influence, and impulse, that France beheld itself a prey to every crime; that its soil was stained with the blood of its pontiffs and priests, of its rich men and nobles; with the blood of every class of its citizens, without regard to rank, age, or sex! These were the men who, after having made the unfortunate Louis XVI., His Queen and Sister, drink to the very dregs the cup of outrage and ignominy during a long confinement, solemnly murdered them on a scaffold, proudly menacing the sovereigns of the earth with a similar fate! These are the men who have made the French revolution a scourge to all Europe, a terror to its Rulers, who in vain combine to stop the progress of their revolutionary armies, more numerous and more destructive than the inundations of the Vandals.

Whence originated these men, who seem to arise from the bowels of the earth, who start into existence with their plans and their projects, their tenets and their thunders, their insidious means and ferocious resolves? Whence, I say, this devouring Sect? **Whence this swarm of adepts, these systems, this frantic rage against the altar and the throne, against every institution, civil and religious, so much respected by our ancestors?** Can their primogeniture in the order of the revolution give them this tremendous power, or were they not anterior? Is it not their own work? Where then was their hiding place, their schools, their masters, where shall we find these, and who will dive into their future projects? **This French revolution ended, will they cease to desolate the earth, to murder kings, or to fanaticise its people?**

[Importance of their History] These certainly are questions that cannot be indifferent to nations or their rulers, or to those who watch for the happiness and preservation of society; and these are the questions which I will attempt to answer. I will draw their solution from the very annals of the Sect, whence I will show their plans and systems, their plots and their means. Such, reader, will be the object of the following Memoirs.

Had I seen the conspiracies of the Jacobins end with the disasters they produced; had I even seen the cloud of our misfortunes dissipated with the French Revolution, still should I have remained convinced of the importance and necessity of disclosing to the world the dark recesses from which it burst into being.

[to posterity:] When with aweful astonishment we read of plagues and other scourges that have desolated the earth, though the danger be passed, they are not to be considered as objects of mere curiosity. In the history of poisons we find the antidotes; in the history of monsters we learn by what weapons they were destroyed. When former calamities reappear, or are to be apprehended, is it not our duty to explore the causes which first promoted their destructive influence, the means by which they might have been opposed, and the errors whereby they may again be produced? The present generation is instructed by the misfortunes of the past; be then the future instructed by the history of ours.

[to the present generation.] But we have evils yet more pressing to encounter; the present generation has been deluded; and such delusions must be done away as may double our misfortunes in the instant when we think ourselves most secure. *[1st error. On the cause of the revolution.]* We have seen men obstinately blind to the causes of the French Revolution: **we have seen men who wished to persuade themselves that this conspiring and revolutionary Sect had no existence anterior to the Revolution.** In their minds the long series of miseries which have befallen France, to the terror of all Europe, were merely the offspring of that concourse of unforeseen events inseparable from the times. In their conceptions, it is in vain to seek conspirators or conspiracies, and as vain to search for the hand that directs the horrid course. The man who rules today, knows not the plans of his predecessor; and he that shall follow will, in their opinions, be equally ignorant of those of the present ruler.

Prepossessed with such erroneous notions, and acting under so dangerous a prejudice, these superficial observers would willingly make all nations believe, that the French Revolution ought to be to them no cause of alarm; that it was a volcano rapidly venting itself on the unfortunate country that gave it existence, while its focus and its origin remain unfathomable. "Causes unknown (they will say) but peculiar to your climate; elements less subject to ferment; laws more analogous to your character; the public fortune better balanced; these and such as these are reasons sufficient to make you regardless of the fate of France. But, alas! Should such be your impending fate, vain will be your efforts to avert the threatening blow. The concourse and fatality of circumstances will drag you toward it; the very ramparts which you shall build against it will fall back upon you, and perhaps level the space that now divides you from the horrid scene of anarchy and desolation."

Who would conceive, that I have heard this very language fall from the mouth of those whom the unfortunate Louis XVI. had called near his person to ward off the blows perpetually aimed at him by the Revolution! a language better calculated to lull all nations into that fatal security which portends destruction? – I have now before me the memorial of an ex-minister, consulted on the causes of this infernal Revolution, and particularly as to the chief conspirators (whom he should have better known) and on the plan of the conspiracy. I hear this man answer, that it would be useless to seek either a man or any set of men conspiring against the altar and the throne, or to suppose that any plan had been framed for that purpose. **Unfortunate monarch! Are**

those who ought to watch for the safety of your person, for the security of your people, ignorant of the names, nay even of the very existence of your enemies! If then we behold both you and your people falling victims to their plots, can we or ought we to be astonished?

[Truths combatting this error.] Strong in the facts, and armed with the proofs produced in the following Memoirs, we shall hold a very different language. We shall show what it is incumbent on all nations and their chiefs to be informed of: **we shall demonstrate that, even to the most horrid deeds perpetrated during the French Revolution, every thing was foreseen and resolved on, was premeditated and combined: - that they were the offspring of deep-thought villany, since they had been prepared and were produced by men, who alone held the clue of those plots and conspiracies, lurking in the secret meetings where they had been conceived, and only watching the favourable moment of bursting forth.** Though the events of each day may not appear to have been combined, there nevertheless existed a secret agent and a secret cause, giving rise to each event, and turning each circumstance to the long-desired end. Though circumstance may often have afforded the pretence or the occasion, yet the grand cause of the revolution, its leading features, its atrocious crimes, will still be found one continued chain of deep-laid and premeditated villany.

[2d Error. On the nature of the revolution.] In revealing the object, and showing the extent of these plots, I meet a second error, more dangerous than the first. **There are men who, though they hesitate not to believe that the French Revolution was premeditated, yet think that the intentions of the first authors were pure,** and that they only sought the happiness and regeneration of empires; that if great misfortunes have since happened, they arose from the obstacles thrown in their way; that a great people cannot be regenerated without commotion, but that the tempest will subside, and a calm succeed the swelling billow; **that then nations, astonished at the apprehensions they had entertained of the French Revolution, and true only to its principles, will be happy in imitation.**

This error is the favourite theme of the *Jacobin missionaries*; it was this that gained them their first instruments of rebellion; **that cohort of constitutionalists, who still look on their decrees of the RIGHTS OF MAN as the summit of legislative perfection, and still look impatiently wait the fatal day when the world shall impetuously move in the sphere of their political rhapsody.** It was this that gained them that prodigious number of votaries more blind than wicked, and who might have been mistaken for honest, if virtue could have associated with ferocity in search of happier days. It was this that gained them those men whose well-meant, though stupid credulity, misled them to believe in the necessity of the carnage of the 10th of August, and of the horrid butcheries of the 2^d of September; **in a word, all those men who, in the murder of 3 or 400,000 fellow-creatures, in the extermination of millions of victims by famine, the sword, or the guillotine, seek consolation, in spite of this depopulating scourge, in the empty hope that this dreadful chain of horrors may be productive of happier days.**

[Truths combatting this error.] To confound these hopes, and to show the fallacy of these pretended good intentions, I will oppose the real views of this revolutionary Sect, their true projects, their conspiracies, and their means of execution. I will show them undisguised, for they must be divulged, the proofs being acquired. **The French Revolution has been a true child to its parent Sect; its crimes have**

been its filial duty; and those black deeds and atrocious acts the natural consequences of the principles and systems that gave it birth. Moreover I will show that, so far from seeking future prosperity, the French Revolution is but a sportive essay of its strength, **while the whole universe is its aim.** If elsewhere the same crimes are necessary, they will be committed; if equal ferocity be requisite they will be equally ferocious; **and it will unavoidably extend wheresoever its errors shall be received.**

[True consequences deduced from these truths.] The reflecting reader will conclude, then, that either this Jacobin Sect must be crushed, or society overthrown: that all governments must give place to those massacres, those convulsive disorders, and to that infernal anarchy which rages in France. **Indeed there is no other alternative, but universal destruction or extinction of the Sect.** Let it however be remembered, that to crush a Sect is not to imitate the fury of its apostles, intoxicated with its sanguinary rage and propense to enthusiastic murder; it is not to massacre and immolate its adepts, or retort on them the thunders they had hurled. **To crush a Sect, is to attack it in its schools, to reveal its imposture, and show to the world the absurdity of its principles, the atrocity of its means, and above all the profound wickedness of its teachers.** Yes; strike the Jacobin, but spare the man; the Sect is a Sect of opinion, and its destruction will be doubly complete on the day when it shall be deserted by its disciples, to return to the true principles of reason and social order.

The Sect, I grant, is monstrous, but all its disciples are not monsters. Its care in hiding its latter projects, the extreme precaution with which it initiated the chosen of the elect, shews how much it feared the desertion of the multitude of its disciples, and its consequent destruction, had the horror of its mysteries been surmised. For my part, I never doubted, how depraved soever the Jacobins have been, that the greatest part would have deserted the Sect could they have foreseen whither and by what means they were led. **Could the French people have followed such chiefs, had it been possible to make them conceive to what lengths the plans and plots of the conspirators would carry them?**

[To know the plots of the Jacobins, the interest of all nations.] **Though France were, like hell, a bottomless pit, impenetrable to every voice but that of the fiends of the Revolution, still it is not too late to acquaint other nations of their danger. They have heard of the crimes and horrors of that Revolution, let them contemplate the lot that awaits them should Jacobinism prevail; let them learn that they are not less within the grand revolutionary circle than France itself; that all those crimes, the anarchical and bloody scenes which have followed the dissolution of the French empire, equally await all other nations; let them learn that their altars and their thrones, their pontiffs and their kings, are doomed to the same fate with those of France: all are comprehended within the grand conspiracy.**

[and of all governments.] When a phantom of peace shall seem to terminate the present war between the Jacobins and the combined powers, it certainly will be the interest of all governments to ascertain how far such a peace can be relied on. At that period, more than at any other, will it be necessary to study the secret history of that Sect, which sends forth its legions rather to shiver the sceptre than to fight the power; which has not promised to its adepts the crowns of princes, kings and emperors, but has required and bound those adepts by an oath to destroy them all. At that period we must recollect, that it is not in the field of Mars that the war against the Sects is the most dangerous; when the rebellion and anarchy are in the very tenets of the sectary, the hand may be disarmed, but war glows warmly

in the heart. – **The Sect, being weakened, may slumber for a time, but such a sleep is the calm preceding the irruption of the volcano.** It no longer sends forth its curling flames; but the subterraneous fire winds its course, penetrates, and, preparing many vents, suddenly bursts forth and carries misery and devastation wherever its fiery torrent rolls.

It is not the object of these Memoirs to treat of that state of war or of peace commenced between one power and another. In such cases it often happens that, all resources being exhausted, the sword must be sheathed, though the original grievances still subsist. Let the rulers of the people discuss the means of force; but we know there exists another sort of war, which a confidence in treaties only serves to render more fatal; we mean a war of plots and conspiracies, against which public treaties can never avail. **Woe to that Power which shall have made peace without knowing why its enemy had declared war against it. What the Sect had done before it first burst forth, it will do again to prepare a second eruption.** In darkness it will conspire anew, and calamities still more disastrous will teach all nations **that the French Revolution was only the first step towards the universal dissolution which has so long been meditating and contriving by the Sect.**

[Object of these memoirs.] Such were the reasons by which I was impelled to investigate the plots and wishes, the tortuous means and nefarious nature of this Sect. We have witnessed the frantic rage and the ferocity of its legions; we have known them as the agents of the French Revolution, as the perpetrators of all its atrocious crimes and devastations; but few are acquainted with the schools that have formed them. Posterity, alas! Will feel for many generations their dire effects. To trace their ravages, it will only have to cast its eyes around. **The ruins of the palaces and the temples, the fallen cities, the mansions destroyed throughout the provinces, will paint in glowing colours the devastations of the modern Vandals. The lists of proscription, fatal to the prince and to so many of his subjects, the deserted villages, all, in a word, will long be the vouchers of those fatal lamp-posts, of that insatiable guillotine, of those legislative executioners supported by bands of assassins.**

Circumstances so painful and so humiliating to human nature will not require to be recorded in these memoirs. **It is not to shew what a Marat or a Robespierre has done, but to expose the schools, the systems, the conspiracies, and the masters that have formed a Philippe D'Orleans, a Syeyes, a Condorcet, or a Petion, and who at this very time are forming in all nations men that would rival Marat and Robespierre in their cruelties. Our object is, that, the Sect of the Jacobins and their conspiracies once known, their crimes shall be no longer matter of surprise; that their propensity to the effusion of blood, their blasphemies against Christ and his altars, their frantic rage against the throne, and their cruelties against their fellow-citizens, shall be as clearly understood as the ravages of the plague.** And may nations in future as sedulously guard against the one, as they shun the other!

It was to attain this important object that all our researches into the Sect have been directed at its chiefs, its origin, its plots, its plans, and its progress; more desirous of investigating the means it employed to bring about the revolution, than to describe its conduct during that revolution.

[A triple conspiracy to be denounced.] The result of our inquiries, corroborated by proofs drawn from the records of the Jacobins, and of their first masters, has been, **that this Sect with all its conspiracies is in itself no other than the coalition of a triple Sect, of a triple conspiracy, in which, long before the Revolution, the overthrow of the altar, the ruin of the throne, and the dissolution of all civil society had been debated and resolved on.**

1st. Many years before the French Revolution men who styled themselves **Philosophers** conspired against the God of the Gospel, against Christianity, without distinction of worship, whether Protestant or Catholic, Anglican or Presbyterian. The grand object of this conspiracy was to overturn every altar where Christ was adored. It was the conspiracy of the *Sophisters of Impiety*, or the ANTICHRISTIAN CONSPIRACY.

2dly. This school of impiety soon formed the *Sophisters of Rebellion*: these latter, combining their conspiracy against kings with that of the Sophisters of Impiety, **coalesce with that ancient Sect whose tenets constituted the whole secret of the Occult Lodges of Free-masonry**, which long since, imposing on the credulity of its most distinguished adepts, only initiated the chosen of the elect into the secret of their unrelenting hatred for Christ and kings.

3dly. From the Sophisters of Impiety and Rebellion, arose the *Sophisters of Impiety and Anarchy*. These latter conspire not only against Christ and his altars, but against **every** religion natural or revealed: not only against kings, but against **every** government, **against all civil society, even against all property whatsoever**.

This third Sect, known by the name of **Illuminees**, coalesced with the Sophisters conspiring against Christ, and with the Sophisters who, **with the Occult Masons**, conspired against both Christ and kings. **It was the coalition of the adepts of impiety, of the adepts of rebellion, and the adepts of anarchy, which formed the CLUB of the JACOBINS.** Under this name, common to the triple Sect (originating from the name of the Order whose convent they had seized upon to hold their sittings), we shall see the adepts following up their triple conspiracy against God, the King, and Society. Such was the origin, such the progress of that Sect, since become so dreadfully famous under the name of JACOBIN.

In the present Memoirs each of these three conspiracies shall be treated separately; their authors unmasked, the object, means, coalition, and progress of the adepts shall be laid open.

Proofs of the most pointed nature are necessary, when such horrid plots are denounced to all nations; and it is to give these proofs the greater authenticity, that the title of MEMOIRS has been prefixed to this work. To have written the simple history of the Jacobins might have sufficed for many; but these Memoirs are intended for the historian, who will find a collection of proofs, both numerous and convincing, all extracted from the records and avowals of the conspirators themselves. *[Consequence of this Conspiracy.]* **Strong in these proofs, we shall not fear to proclaim to all nations, "that whatever their religion or their government may be, to whatever rank should the plans and wishes of the Jacobins be accomplished, their religion with its pontiffs, their government with its laws, their magistrates and their property, all would be swept away in one common mass of ruin! Their riches and their fields, their houses and their cottages, their very wives and children would be torn from them. You have**

looked upon the Jacobinical faction as exhausting itself in France, when it was only making a sportive essay of its strength. Their wishes and their oaths extend throughout Europe; nor are England or Germany, Italy or Spain, strangers to their intrigues."

Let not the Reader take this for the language of enthusiasm or fanaticism; far be such passions either from myself or my readers. Let them decide on the proofs adduced, with the same coolness and impartiality which has been necessary to collect and digest them. The order observed in the investigation of these conspiracies shall be exactly that in which they were generated. We shall therefore begin with the conspiracy against the whole religion of the Gospel, and which we have styled the ANTICHRISTIAN CONSPIRACY.

XV. QUARE LACRYMAE

ENCYCLICAL OF POPE PIUS VI. ON THE DEATH OF KING LOUIS XVI. OF FRANCE

June 17th, 1793



The infernal execution of King Louis XVI of France

Venerable Brothers,

1. Why the tears and groans Our words do not suffocate? We should rather not express with words instead of moans that immense sorrow of the soul that we must manifest, and you expose what has happened in Paris on 21 January of this year? **Horrible spectacle of cruelty and barbarism!**

2. For the conspiracy of evil men has been sentenced to death, the Christian King Louis XVI and the sentence was immediately executed. But what process, and the way in which this has been done, I will refer briefly: it was carried out by the National Assembly without any authority and without any rights. **In fact, abolished the most prestigious form of government, a monarchy, it had sent every public authority to the people, who are not guided neither by reason nor by the board, does not distinguish between right and wrong, few appreciate and respect things according to truth, instead of many according to current opinion, is fickle, easy to be deceived and led to all the excesses, is ungrateful, arrogant, cruel. Enjoys seeing the human blood, the carnage, the grief and agony of the dying, as seen in ancient amphitheaters, and it feeds voluptuously.** The most ferocious of these people, not content to have degraded the majesty of his king, Unwilling to remove the life, the judges ordered that functioned as his own accusers that they were declared enemies. These, during the course of the trial, suddenly wanted to call other worse, so the number of judges favorable to the conviction to prevail over others. However they failed to increase the number, so that the King was convicted by a number of votes less than that required by law. And many judges wicked and perverse, extorted from so many votes, what was to be expected and feared, if not a result of sad, horrible, much-maligned for ever? **However, since the horror of such wickedness had made back most, having been a lot of dispute among the voters, it was decided to reiterate the vote, the outcome of which, although it was only an expression of the conspirators, was declared legitimate.**

We pass over in silence here other unlawful acts, of course null and irritation, which can be read in defense of decent lawyers and here and there in the public newspapers. We omit also all that the King was forced to suffer first and suffer the death penalty: **his long detention in several prisons, from which was sometimes taken to be brought before the bars of the Convention, the assassination of his Confessor, segregation from His beloved royal family, and many other kinds of trials to increase the penalty el'ignominia. In front of them, anyone who has any sense of humanity can not feel anything but horror, for he was well known to all the sweet natured, benevolent, forgiving, patient of Louis XVI, a lover of his people, far from rigor and severity, friendly and indulgent to all.**

It was for this reason that we persuaded to convene the assemblies of the kingdom were required urgently, and then turned against his royal authority, and finally against his person.

We can not however pass over in silence all the virtues that are out of his will written in his hand, revealing the depths of his soul, and that was then disseminated by the press everywhere. How much virtue in him, what zeal and love for the Catholic religion! What a testimony of true piety towards God! How much pain, the remorse for having to add his signature to all acts contrary to the true faith and discipline of the Church! Coming almost submerged beneath the waves of so many hardships every day more and more pressing, he could repeat the words of King James I of England, "he was slandered in all popular assemblies, not because he had committed some crime, but only because he was the King, which was considered the worst of all crimes." But leave out a little to speak of Louis, to take an example

from history that is so fitting to our argument and is proved by the testimony of honest writers bright.

3. Mary Stuart, Queen of Scots, daughter of James V King of Scotland, and widow of King Francis II of France, having assumed the titles and insignia of the kings of England, which the English had already attributed to Elizabeth, telling how many historians, many hardships faced by this and by her rival mob Calvinists, who led the pitfalls and violence! Often imprisoned, often subject to interrogation of the judges, refused to answer, saying that a queen must give an account of his life to God alone, and constantly harassed in every way, he said, proved to be unfounded crimes that were attributed and proved his innocence. But not for this, however, the judges refrained from doing injustice already premeditated and pronounced against her death sentence, as was irrefutably guilty, and the royal head was cut off on stage.

4. Benedict XIV in the third book about the Beatification of the Servants of God, chap. 13, No 10, make such claims about this event: "If you were to set up a process on the martyrdom of this Queen, a process that has not previously been placed, an immediate objection clear stand against his martyrdom, derived from the decision process and all calumnies against her are raving heretics, especially in George Buchanan's infamous pamphlet which is entitled: 'Mary unmasked.' But if you examine the real cause of his death, which is summed up in hatred against the Catholic Religion she alone, the only survivor, professed in England, if you examine the invincible constancy with which rejected proposals to abjure the Catholic religion, if you look at the remarkable strength with which claimed the death, if one takes into account, as it should, she protested before the decapitation, and the execution itself, which had always lived as a Catholic and who willingly died for the Catholic faith, and if you do not omit, as not to be omitted, the blatant reasons which reveal not only the falsity of crimes attributed to Queen Mary by his opponents, but also the unjust sentence of death, inspired by hate based on slander against the Catholic religion, because they remain immutable dogmas heretical in the kingdom of England, then you will understand that not missing any condition necessary to say that his was a true martyr".

5. We know from St. Augustine that "is not the torture that makes the martyr, but the cause." For this reason, Benedict XIV declared himself willing to believe the killing of true martyrdom of Mary Queen of Scots. He wondered "if martyrdom is sufficient to prove that the tyrant was moved by their hatred of the faith of Christ, even if the death is attributed to another cause not related to the Faith of Christ belongs to you, or only accidentally." He solved the case in the affirmative, an act prompted by the apparent reason that its specific nature is an opportunity not to be impulsive or other cause, but the underlying cause. Therefore, to declare a true martyrdom is sufficient that the persecutor to inflict death, is moved by hatred against the Faith, even if the death had been from other reasons, which, because of circumstances, do not belong to the faith.

6. Let us now return to King Louis XVI. If big is the authority of Pope Benedict XIV, and you have to give much weight to his opinion when martyrdom is inclined to define the killing of the queen, Queen of Scots, because we should not consider the death of the martyred King Louis? **Again there were the same attachment to religion, the same respect and the same ferocity. It must therefore be accorded the same respect. And who could doubt that the King was put to death out of hatred for the faith and insulting to the tenets of Catholicism?**

For some time the Calvinists had tried to overthrow the Catholic religion in France, but must first prepare the minds. **The people had to be indoctrinated with ideologies that they do not desist impious to spread among the populace by means of treachery overflowing with pamphlets and exciting to revolt, and to achieve their goal using the work of philosophers perverse.** The General Assembly of the Gallican clergy in the year 1745 had already condemned the wickedness of the architects of unjust pernicious doctrines. Ourselves, at the beginning of Our Pontificate, we reported means of an encyclical letter addressed to all the Bishops of the Catholic Church of the treacherous maneuver detestable and most dangerous men above, when we encouraged them with these words: "Take half a evil to you, that is, with great energy and zeal try to get rid of all these books from your flock poisoned." If they had the outcome of our exhortations and Our advice today would not have to lament the progress of this conspiracy against the king, and the ruin of the kingdoms. **When these depraved men have noted the successful completion of their work, and that it was already time to execute their designs, began to argue openly in the book published in the year 1787 that this statement of Hugo Rosario, unless someone else who is not the author of the book: "It is commendable rid of the prince who does not want to join the reformed religion and will not participate in the defense of the religion of Protestants."**

7. Following the iniquitous statement above, it is clear to all what was the origin of painful misfortunes to which Louis came to meet: it had to find that these fruits in France stemmed from bad books, like from a poisonous tree. It was written in the life of the infamous Voltaire that mankind would be eternally grateful to him for being the first supporter of the revolution in general, having excited the people to recognize their demands for freedom and to use their forces to break down the formidable bastion of despotism, that the religious and priestly power, which survived - they said - the yoke of tyranny would never be defeated because the authorities both of them are so tied together, who once shot down one, the other would necessarily fall. And these people, already singing victory for the end of the kingdom and for the overthrow of religion, exalt the glorious name of these wicked writers, as if they were the commanders of victorious armies. It just so happened that with these arts, drew on their side a great crowd of people, more and more enticing, or rather lured with big promises have covered all regions of France, using the specious name of liberty in order to call all explain these signs and rally under these flags. **This then is the result of philosophical freedom that aims to corrupt the minds, deprave the morals, subverting the order of all the laws and institutions. This false freedom was condemned by the French clergy when already snaked among the people with these false opinions;** We already mentioned in the same encyclical letter [inscrutable divinae of December 25, 1775] we have characterized and defined by the words: "These perverse moreover philosophers try to make men melt all those links from which they are united among themselves and their monarchs with the constraint of their duty, they proclaim to death that man is born free and is not subject to anyone. So The company is a crowd of feckless men, the stupidity of which is prostrating before the priests (who are deceived by), and before kings (from which they are oppressed), so much so that the agreement between the priesthood and the empire is not nothing but an immense conspiracy against the natural freedom of man."

8. These defenders of the troubled human race have added to this false and a liar as the other name of freedom of equality also false: **that is, equality between men who constitute civil society, though they are of different opinions, move into different directions, each driven by your will, and there should be no one who prevails in authority and power, controls, moderate and references from acting on the perverse way of duties, so that society itself, under the pressure of so many conflicting factions, does not fall into anarchy and dissolve, as any harmony which is made up of many sounds, and if it finds an appropriate balance between instruments and sounds confused and degenerate into noise at all out of tune.** Having then proclaimed reformers of the same commandments, even referees of religion, while, in the words of St. Hilary of Poitiers, the duty of obedience requires religion, they themselves began to enact statutes and unheard on the Church itself. The output from this workshop is sacrilegious in the Constitution that we have rejected Our response of March 10, 1791 signed by thirty bishops. And here it is right to adapt the event that Saint Cyprian wrote: **"How is it possible to judge the heretics are Christians, to take care of the sick healthy, the wounded who was unharmed, the sinners of the saint, the perpetrators of judges and the priest's unholy?". What now remains to the Church, but to submit to a fool?**

Those in the different classes of citizens were still faithful to their beliefs and constantly refused to submit to an oath to the new Constitution, were immediately subjected to embezzlement and destined to die. He even dared to massacre them without distinction; has raged savagely against many men of the church, the bishops were abolished, which should be surrounded with devotion and reverence, as taught by his example that Christ the Lord, as St. Cyprian, "until the day of his passion observed the Jewish priests and popes, though they have not the holy fear of God or recognize Him as the Messiah."

A multitude of men of every class was suppressed in this way. The punishment was less severe to drive them into exile in foreign regions, regardless of age, sex, condition. Actually it was decreed that everyone could freely profess the religion he wanted, as if all religions were true and would lead to eternal salvation. **In fact it was prohibited but the only Catholic religion, and extirpate it was the blood flowing in the streets and houses, as if every believer was to be hit with capital punishment.** They could not be defended and those who had fled to safer regions of exile, because in those places were arrested, and treacherously deceived, were deleted. This is characteristic of all heresies, this is the custom of heretics from the earliest centuries of church history, and this is also confirmed by the tyrannical conduct of the Calvinists, especially in France, where threats and violence by trying to induce everyone to accept their confession.

9. From this unbroken series of unholy violence started in France, it appears clear that the main purpose of these machinations was to vent hatred for the Catholic religion, but now all of Europe it is agitated and upset and no one can deny that this was the cause of death inflicted on Louis. **Against him, strove to draw up a pile of accusations inspired by political motives, and among them stands out, however, the main reason, namely that his firmness of mind with which he refused to approve and ratify the decree of exile the Catholic priests, as well as the statement in the letter to the Bishop of Clermont, of wanting to restore the Catholic religion in France as soon as**

he could. Perhaps all this is not true and is not sufficient to assert and establish that Louis was a martyr? The death sentence against Mary Queen of Scots sought to rely on the alleged machinations, plots and crimes against the state, just making mention of religion. However, Benedict XIV, expressed disdain lies in the ruling, which was actually pointed at the main root cause of the condemnation, that the hatred against the Catholic religion, so there was a reason for the martyrdom.

10. But, as we hear against this martyrdom of Louis's objections that he had approved the constitution that was rejected by us in our response to the bishops cited above. Instead, many people believe that things are done differently and argue that when the Constitution was presented to the King for signature, he hesitated, gathered his thoughts, then refused to sign, fearing that the signing was worthy of approval. But when one of his ministers (and it is also the name) on which he had placed so much trust, said that the subscription only meant that what was written was true and authentic text of the Constitution, so that we, to which the text was addressed, did not have any suspicion about its authenticity, for this simple reason was induced to sign, and this confirmed in his will when he wrote that he signed against their will. And it would not have been thus with himself, if he had then rejected what he had always approved, having never wanted to sign the decree by which priests were driven into exile those who refused the oath, nor would the Bishop of Clermont said he was determined to restore the Catholic worship in France. But either way the facts have occurred (in this connection We take no responsibility) even if we grant that Louis has been approved by the signature of the Constitution or deception, or mistake, or to light, we should change our opinion on his martyrdom? Made this impossible, and that certain formal retraction of the King that followed, and also the fact - as stated above - that death was inflicted in hatred of the Catholic religion. And this does not alter the king's honor and glory of martyrdom. Similarly for St. Cyprian, about the baptism of heretics had expressed principles contrary to the truth; St. Augustine several times with written words and said that God had cleansed with the scythe of martyrdom, like pruning a branch that bears fruit.

11. Not unlike the issue raised in the Congregation of Rites, it was an obstacle to recognition of the martyrdom of the Jesuit John de Britto, the fact that the mission of Madura had used the so-called Chinese rites that were prohibited. The voters did not hesitate to express themselves in a negative sense: the fact that it was not at all an obstacle, as the servant of God in the blood after the martyrdom he had retracted the use of such rites. But then the Cardinals found themselves divided in expressing a decree in favor, so do not take this opportunity to advocate later that you want to withdraw from the prohibition of such rites. But Benedict XIV removed all difficulties, saying that the proclamation of the decree could not be inferred that the Holy See wished to rescind the decrees of his predecessors, who had banned these rituals. At the same time approved the retraction issued by the venerable John is not with ink but with blood, and stated that the exception that it was placed in the cause of beatification of the Venerable Servant of God John de Britto was not to hinder the discussion over the real cause of martyrdom and even more on the veracity of the signs and miracles that were performed through her intercession. It was discussed according to the decree and published July 2, 1741.

We are encouraged by this decree, recognizing that the recantation was true of Louis and extensively tested, not only written with ink but with his generous

blood, we are not far from the opinion of Pope Benedict not to issue such a decree, but We have to stay in the view that the martyrdom of King Louis formats, although there had been - if indeed there was - an endorsement of the Constituent Assembly.

12. Ah France, France ouch! Called by our predecessors "mirror of all Christendom and safe column of Faith", you who in the fervor of the Christian faith and devotion to the Apostolic See have never followed the other nations, but you always preceded! How you're far away from us today, with CODEST soul so hostile to true religion: you have become the most implacable enemy of all enemies of the faith that has ever existed!

Yet you can not ignore, even if I wanted, that the Religion of Faith Christian kingdoms of the most solid support, since suppressing the abuse of the powerful and the license of subjects. For this reason, the envious enemies of the power of kings, for putting him to aspire to subvert the Catholic Faith.

13. Ah France, once again! You who have asked to have a Catholic king, since the fundamental laws of the kingdom does not require any other king, if not Catholic, was a Catholic because you killed him!

14. He was so your fury against the King, you did not even calmed and satisfied with his beheading. You would also raging over the corpse, you want his body be buried immediately, without an honorable burial. Instead of Mary Queen of Scots, already extinct, is bestowed the honor due to his royal dignity. His body was taken to the citadel, embalmed and placed in a tomb already prepared for burial. He was ordered to his servants and his ministers to stay with her with the livery and insignia of their dignity, not sell to anyone, until he found an honorable burial.

What have you gained, you, with all your undying hatred, but dishonor and infamy, and by the king and the princes aversion, disgust, hatred and indignation even greater than that of burned against Elizabeth England?

15. Oh day of triumph for Louis! God has given him the patience in persecution, punishment in the victory! We have the firm belief that you have successfully changed a deciduous royal crown and the lilies, which quickly fade, another perennial crown, woven by the Angels with lilies immortal.

16. We must do what is now by Our apostolic duty, I infer from the letter to his disciple, Saint Bernard, Pope Eugenius IV, when he urged "to strive with all his energies to unbelievers convert to the faith, the converts not absent yourself more, and away they returned." We also have before our eyes the example of Our predecessor, Clement VI, who never ceased to prosecute the crime of the assassination of the king of Sicily, Andrea, inflicting serious spiritual penalties against the conspirators and assassins, as stated in his letter. But what we can get from a people who not only despised Our warnings, but has insulted us with very serious offenses, abuse, insults and slander, and has come to such a degree of audacity and madness to write false letters in our name, in which he inserted his mistakes? Let us then in his wretched depravity of those who wish to persevere in their obstinacy, we are confident that the innocent blood cries of Louis intercede in some way and to recognize the French people and their stubbornness in accumulating hate crimes and consider the various

and most bitter punishments that God, just Judge of villainy, it is usually inflict on people for crimes far less serious.

17. We wanted to make these considerations with you to have a bit of relief in such a horrible catastrophe.

Put an end to our discussion and invite you to celebrate with us the solemn funeral for the late King, according to custom, even though our offices funeral of suffrage seem unnecessary, since he has achieved, as is believed, the name of martyr. St. Augustine says that "the Church does not pray for the martyrs, but rather recommended to their prayers", but the affirmation of the Saint should be applied not to the man who vouched for the human was considered a martyr, but as this was stated by Apostolic See.

Therefore, in the day that you will be notified, along with you, Venerable Brothers, we will celebrate our public funeral in the papal chapel for the most Christian King Louis XVI.

[Source: <http://holodox.blogspot.com/2011/06/quare-lacrymae-on-death-of-king-louis.html>]

Louis XVI, King of France and Navarre, born at Versailles Palace on August 23, 1754; beheaded under the guillotine by his own people in his 39th year at "Place de la Révolution" on January 21, 1793. His widow, Queen Marie Antoinette, was to follow him in this same tragic fate later that year on October 16. – Painting "Louis XVI en habit de sacre" (Louis XVI in Coronation Robes) of 1775 by Joseph Sifrede Duplessis (1725 – 1802); oil on canvas, 227 x 184 cm; Palace of Versailles.

XVI. POPE LEO XIII's ENCYCLICALS "QUOD APOSTOLICI MUNERIS", ON SOCIALISM (RESP. COMMUNISM), Dec. 28, 1878; AND "HUMANUM GENUS", ON FREEMASONRY, April 20, 1884



Pope Leo XIII (born March 2, 1810 in Carpineto, Rome province, Italy, as Vincenzo Gioacchino Pecci). Pontificate from February 20, 1878 till July 20, 1903. – Oil painting of 1900, depicting Pope Leo at the advanced age of 90 years (!), by Austro-Hungarian-British painter Philip Alexius László de Lombos (1869 – 1937); oil on canvas, 115 x 94.5 cm, Hungarian National Gallery, Budapest. De László won with this splendid work the gold medal at the 1900 world exposition in Paris! – And isn't it amazing to see how people of holiness get ever more shining and beautiful towards the end of their lives?!

QUOD APOSTOLICI MUNERIS
ENCYCLICAL OF POPE LEO XIII
ON SOCIALISM [resp. Communism]

December 28th, 1878

*To the Patriarchs, Princes, Archbishops, and
Bishops of the Catholic World in Grace and
Communion with the Apostolic See.*

At the very beginning of Our pontificate, as the nature of Our apostolic office demanded, we hastened to point out in an encyclical letter addressed to you, venerable brethren, the deadly plague that is creeping into the very fibres of human society and leading it on to the verge of destruction; at the same time We pointed out also the most effectual remedies by which society might be restored and might escape from the very serious dangers which threaten it. But the evils which We then deplored have so rapidly increased that We are again compelled to address you, as though we heard the voice of the prophet ringing in Our ears: "Cry, cease not, lift up thy voice like a trumpet."(Isa 58:1) **You understand, venerable brethren, that We speak of that sect of men who, under various and almost barbarous names, are called socialists, communists, or nihilists, and who, spread over all the world, and bound together by the closest ties in a wicked confederacy, no longer seek the shelter of secret meetings, but, openly and boldly marching forth in the light of day, strive to bring to a head what they have long been planning - the overthrow of all civil society whatsoever.**

Surely these are they who, as the sacred Scriptures testify, "Defile the flesh, despise dominion and blaspheme majesty."(Jude 8) They leave nothing untouched or whole which by both human and divine laws has been wisely decreed for the health and beauty of life. **They refuse obedience to the higher powers, to whom, according to the admonition of the Apostle, every soul ought to be subject, and who derive the right of governing from God; and they proclaim the absolute equality of all men in rights and duties. They debase the natural union of man and woman, which is held sacred even among barbarous peoples; and its bond, by which the family is chiefly held together, they weaken, or even deliver up to lust.** Lured, in fine, by the greed of present goods, which is "the root of all evils, which some coveting have erred from the faith,"(1 Tim 6:10) **they assail the right of property sanctioned by natural law; and by a scheme of horrible wickedness, while they seem desirous of caring for the needs and satisfying the desires of all men, they strive to seize and hold in common whatever has been acquired either by title of lawful inheritance, or by labor of brain and hands, or by thrift in one's mode of life.** These are the startling theories they utter in their meetings, set forth in their pamphlets, and scatter abroad in a cloud of journals and tracts. **Wherefore, the revered majesty and power of kings has won such fierce hatred from their seditious people that disloyal traitors, impatient of all restraint, have more than once within a short period raised their arms in impious attempt against the lives of their own sovereigns.**

2. But the boldness of these bad men, **which day by day more and more threatens civil society with destruction, and strikes the souls of all with anxiety and fear,** finds its cause and origin in those poisonous doctrines which,

spread abroad in former times among the people, like evil seed bore in due time such fatal fruit. For you know, venerable brethren, that **that most deadly war which from the sixteenth century down has been waged by innovators against the Catholic faith, and which has grown in intensity up to today, had for its object to subvert all revelation, and overthrow the supernatural order**, that thus the way might be opened for the discoveries, or rather the **hallucinations**, of reason alone. This kind of error, **which falsely usurps to itself the name of reason**, as it lures and whets the natural appetite that is in man of excelling, and gives loose rein to unlawful desires of every kind, has easily penetrated not only the minds of a great multitude of men but to a wide extent civil society, also. Hence, by a new species of impiety, **unheard of even among the heathen nations**, states have been constituted without any count at all of God or of the order established by him; **it has been given out that public authority neither derives its principles, nor its majesty, nor its power of governing from God, but rather from the multitude, which, thinking itself absolved from all divine sanction, bows only to such laws as it shall have made at its own will.** The supernatural truths of faith having been assailed and cast out as though hostile to reason, **the very Author and Redeemer of the human race has been slowly and little by little banished from the universities, the lyceums and gymnasia-in a word, from every public institution.** In fine, the rewards and punishments of a future and eternal life having been handed over to oblivion, the ardent desire of happiness has been limited to the bounds of the present. Such doctrines as these having been scattered far and wide, so great a license of thought and action having sprung up on all sides, **it is no matter for surprise that men of the lowest class, weary of their wretched home or workshop, are eager to attack the homes and fortunes of the rich; it is no matter for surprise that already there exists no sense of security either in public or private life, and that the human race should have advanced to the very verge of final dissolution.**

3. But the supreme pastors of the Church, **on whom the duty falls of guarding the Lord's flock from the snares of the enemy**, have striven in time to ward off the danger and provide for the safety of the faithful. For, as soon as the secret societies began to be formed, in whose bosom the seeds of the errors which we have already mentioned were even then being nourished, the Roman Pontiffs Clement XII and Benedict XIV did not fail to unmask the evil counsels of the sects, and to warn the faithful of the whole globe against the ruin which would be wrought. Later on again, when a licentious sort of liberty was attributed to man by **a set of men who gloried in the name of philosophers**, and a new right, as they call it, against the natural and divine law began to be framed and sanctioned, Pope Pius VI, of happy memory, at once exposed in public documents the guile and falsehood of their doctrines, **and at the same time foretold with apostolic foresight the ruin into which the people so miserably deceived would be dragged.** But, as no adequate precaution was taken to prevent their evil teachings from leading the people more and more astray, and lest they should be allowed to escape in the public statutes of States, Popes Pius VII and Leo XII condemned by anathema the secret sects, and again warned society of the danger which threatened them. Finally, all have witnessed with what solemn words and great firmness and constancy of soul our glorious predecessor, Pius IX, of happy memory, both in his allocutions and in his encyclical letters addressed to the bishops of all the world, fought now against the wicked attempts of the sects, now openly by name against **the pest of socialism**, which was already making headway.

4. But it is to be lamented that those to whom has been committed the guardianship of the public weal, **deceived by the wiles of wicked men and terrified by their threats**, have looked upon the Church with a suspicious and even hostile eye, **not perceiving that the attempts of the sects would be vain if the doctrine of the Catholic Church and the authority of the Roman Pontiffs had always survived, with the honor that belongs to them, among princes and peoples.** For, “the church of the living God, which is the pillar and ground of truth,”(1 Tim 3:15) hands down those doctrines and precepts whose special object is the safety and peace of society and the uprooting of the evil growth of socialism.

5. For, indeed, although the socialists, stealing the very Gospel itself with a view to deceive more easily the unwary, have been accustomed to distort it so as to suit their own purposes, nevertheless so great is the difference between their depraved teachings and the most pure doctrine of Christ that none greater could exist: “for what participation bath justice with injustice or what fellowship bath light with darkness?”(2 Cor 6:14) **Their habit, as we have intimated, is always to maintain that nature has made all men equal, and that, therefore, neither honor nor respect is due to majesty, nor obedience to laws, unless, perhaps, to those sanctioned by their own good pleasure.** But, on the contrary, in accordance with the teachings of the Gospel, the equality of men consists in this: that all, having inherited the same nature, are called to the same most high dignity of the sons of God, and that, as one and the same end is set before all, each one is to be judged by the same law and will receive punishment or reward according to his deserts. **The inequality of rights and of power proceeds from the very Author of nature, “from whom all paternity in heaven and earth is named.”**(Eph 3:15) **But the minds of princes and their subjects are, according to Catholic doctrine and precepts, bound up one with the other in such a manner, by mutual duties and rights, that the thirst for power is restrained and the rational ground of obedience made easy, firm, and noble.**

6. Assuredly, the Church wisely inculcates the apostolic precept on the mass of men: **“There is no power but from God; and those that are, are ordained of God. Therefore he that resisteth the power resisteth the ordinance of God. And they that resist purchase to themselves damnation.”** And again she admonishes those “subject by necessity” to be so “not only for wrath but also for conscience' sake,” and to render “to all men their dues; tribute to whom tribute is due, custom to whom custom, fear to whom fear, honor to whom honor.”(Rom 13a, 7) For, He who created and governs all things has, in His wise providence, appointed that the things which are lowest should attain their ends by those which are intermediate, and these again by the highest. **Thus, as even in the kingdom of heaven He bath willed that the choirs of angels be distinct and some subject to others, and also in the Church has instituted various orders and a diversity of offices, so that all are not apostles or doctors or pastors,**(1 Cor 12:28) **so also has He appointed that there should be various orders in civil society, differing indignity, rights, and power, whereby the State, like the Church, should be one body, consisting of many members, some nobler than others, but all necessary to each other and solicitous for the common good.**

7. But that rulers may use the power conceded to them **to save and not to destroy**, the Church of Christ seasonably warns even princes that the sentence of the Supreme Judge overhangs them, and, adopting the words of divine

wisdom, calls upon all in the name of God: "Give ear, you that rule the people, and that please yourselves in multitudes of nations; for power is given you by the Lord, and strength by the Most High, who will examine your works, and search out your thoughts. . . . For a most severe judgment shall be for them that bear rule. . . . For God will not except any man's person, neither will he stand in awe of any man's greatness, for he bath made the little and the great; and he bath equally care of all. But a greater punishment is ready for the more mighty."(Wis 6:3-4, 8-9) And if at any time it happen that the power of the State is rashly and tyrannically wielded by princes, the teaching of the Catholic church does not allow an insurrection on private authority against them, lest public order be only the more disturbed, and lest society take greater hurt therefrom. And when affairs come to such a pass that there is no other hope of safety, she teaches that relief may be hastened by the merits of Christian patience and by earnest prayers to God. **But, if the will of legislators and princes shall have sanctioned or commanded anything repugnant to the divine or natural law, the dignity and duty of the Christian name, as well as the judgment of the Apostle, urge that "God is to be obeyed rather than man."**(Acts 5:29)

8. Even family life itself, **which is the cornerstone of all society and government**, necessarily feels and experiences the salutary power of the Church, which redounds to the right ordering and preservation of every State and kingdom. **For you know, venerable brethren, that the foundation of this society rests first of all in the indissoluble union of man and wife according to the necessity of natural law, and is completed in the mutual rights and duties of parents and children, masters and servants. You know also that the doctrines of socialism strive almost completely to dissolve this union; since, that stability which is imparted to it by religious wedlock being lost, it follows that the power of the father over his own children, and the duties of the children toward their parents, must be greatly weakened.** But the Church, on the contrary, teaches that "marriage, honorable in all,"(Heb 13:4) which God himself instituted in the very beginning of the world, and made indissoluble for the propagation and preservation of the human species, has become still more binding and more holy through Christ, who raised it to the dignity of a sacrament, and chose to use it as the figure of His own union with the Church.

Wherefore, as the Apostle has it,(Eph S:Z3) **as Christ is the head of the Church, so is the man the head of the woman; and as the Church is subject to Christ, who embraces her with a most chaste and undying love, so also should wives be subject to their husbands, and be loved by them in turn with a faithful and constant affection.** In like manner does the Church temper the use of parental and domestic authority, that it may tend to hold children and servants to their duty, without going beyond bounds. For, according to Catholic teaching, the authority of our heavenly Father and Lord is imparted to parents and masters, whose authority, therefore, not only takes its origin and force from Him, but also borrows its nature and character. Hence, the Apostle exhorts children to "obey their parents in the Lord, and honor their father and mother, which is the first commandment with promise";(Eph 6:1-2) and he admonishes parents: "And you, fathers, provoke not your children to anger, but bring them up in the discipline and correction of the Lord."(Eph 6:4) Again, the apostle enjoins the divine precept on servants and masters, exhorting the former to be "obedient to their lords according to the flesh of Christ . . . with a good will serving, as to the Lord"; and the latter, to "forbear threatenings, knowing that

the Lord of all is in heaven, and there is no respect of persons with God."(Eph 6:5-9) **If only all these matters were faithfully observed according to the divine will by all on whom they are enjoined, most assuredly every family would be a figure of the heavenly home, and the wonderful blessings there begotten would not confine themselves to the households alone, but would scatter their riches abroad through the nations.**

9. But Catholic wisdom, sustained by the precepts of natural and divine law, provides with especial care for public and private tranquility in its doctrines and teachings regarding the duty of government and the distribution of the goods which are necessary for life and use. For, **while the socialists would destroy the "right" of property, alleging it to be a human invention altogether opposed to the inborn equality of man, and, claiming a community of goods, argue that poverty should not be peaceably endured, and that the property and privileges of the rich may be rightly invaded**, the Church, with much greater wisdom and good sense, **recognizes the inequality among men**, who are born with different powers of body and mind, inequality in actual possession, also, and holds that the right of property and of ownership, which springs from nature itself, must not be touched and stands inviolate. **For she knows that stealing and robbery were forbidden in so special a manner by God, the Author and Defender of right, that He would not allow man even to desire what belonged to another, and that thieves and despoilers, no less than adulterers and idolaters, are shut out from the Kingdom of Heaven.** But not the less on this account does our holy Mother not neglect the care of the poor or omit to provide for their necessities; but, rather, drawing them to her with a mother's embrace, and knowing that they bear the person of Christ Himself, who regards the smallest gift to the poor as a benefit conferred on Himself, holds them in great honor. She does all she can to help them; she provides homes and hospitals where they may be received, nourished, and cared for all the world over and watches over these. She is constantly pressing on the rich that most grave precept to give what remains to the poor; and she holds over their heads the divine sentence that unless they succor the needy they will be repaid by eternal torments. In fine, she does all she can to relieve and comfort the poor, either by holding up to them the example of Christ, "who being rich became poor for our sake", (2 Cor 8:9) or by reminding them of his own words, wherein he pronounced the poor blessed and bade them hope for the reward of eternal bliss. **But who does not see that this is the best method of arranging the old struggle between the rich and poor? For, as the very evidence of facts and events shows, if this method is rejected or disregarded, one of two things must occur: either the greater portion of the human race will fall back into the vile condition of slavery which so long prevailed among the pagan nations, or human society must continue to be disturbed by constant eruptions, to be disgraced by rapine and strife, as we have had sad witness even in recent times.**

10. These things being so, then, venerable brethren, as at the beginning of Our pontificate We, on whom the guidance of the whole Church now lies, pointed out a place of refuge to the peoples and the princes tossed about by the fury of the tempest, so now, moved by the extreme peril that is on them, **We again lift up Our voice, and beseech them again and again for their own safety's sake as well as that of their people to welcome and give ear to the Church which has had such wonderful influence on the public prosperity of kingdoms, and to recognize that political and religious affairs are so closely united that what is taken from the spiritual weakens the loyalty of subjects and**

the majesty of the government. And since they know that the Church of Christ has such power to ward off the plague of socialism as cannot be found in human laws, in the mandates of magistrates, or in the force of armies, **let them restore that Church to the condition and liberty in which she may exert her healing force for the benefit of all society.**

11. But you, venerable brethren, who know the origin and the drift of these gathering evils, strive with all your force of soul to implant the Catholic teaching deep in the minds of all. **Strive that all may have the habit of clinging to God with filial love and revering His divinity from their tenderest years; that they may respect the majesty of princes and of laws; that they may restrain their passions and stand fast by the order which God has established in civil and domestic society.** Moreover, labor hard that the children of the Catholic Church neither join nor favor in any way whatsoever this abominable sect; let them show, on the contrary, by noble deeds and right dealing in all things, how well and happily human society would hold together were each member to shine as an example of right doing and of virtue. In fine, as the recruits of socialism are especially sought among artisans and workmen, who, tired, perhaps, of labor, are more easily allured by the hope of riches and the promise of wealth, it is well to encourage societies of artisans and workmen which, constituted under the guardianship of religion, may tend to make all associates contented with their lot and move them to a quiet and peaceful life.

12. Venerable brethren, may He who is the beginning and end of every good work inspire your and Our endeavors. And, indeed, the very thought of these days, in which the anniversary of our Lord's birth is solemnly observed, moves us to hope for speedy help. For the new life which Christ at His birth brought to a world already aging and steeped in the very depths of wickedness He bids us also to hope for, and the peace which He then announced by the angels to men He has promised to us also. For the Lord's "hand is not shortened that he cannot save, neither is his ear heavy that he cannot hear."(Isa 59:1) **In these most auspicious days, then, venerable brethren, wishing all joy and happiness to you and to the faithful of your churches, We earnestly pray the Giver of all good that again "there may appear unto men the goodness and kindness of God our Saviour,"**(Titus 3:4) **who brought us out of the power of our most deadly enemy into the most noble dignity of the sons of God.** And that We may the sooner and more fully gain our wish, do you, venerable brethren, join with Us in lifting up your fervent prayers to God and beg the intercession of the Blessed and Immaculate Virgin Mary, and of Joseph her spouse, and of the blessed Apostles Peter and Paul, in whose prayers We have the greatest confidence. And in the meanwhile We impart to you, with the inmost affection of the heart, and to your clergy and faithful people, the apostolic benediction as an augury of the divine gifts.

Given at St. Peter's, in Rome, on the twenty-eighth day of December, 1878, in the first year of Our pontificate.

LEO XIII

Source: www.vatican.va (© 1878 - Libreria Editrice Vaticana)

HUMANUM GENUS

ENCYCLICAL OF POPE LEO XIII ON FREEMASONRY

April 20th, 1884

*To the Patriarchs, Princes, Archbishops, and
Bishops of the Catholic World in Grace and
Communion with the Apostolic See.*

The race of man, after its miserable fall from God, the Creator and the Giver of heavenly gifts, “through the envy of the devil,” separated into two diverse and opposite parts, of which the one steadfastly contends for truth and virtue, the other of those things which are contrary to virtue and to truth. The one is the kingdom of God on earth, namely, the true Church of Jesus Christ; and those who desire from their heart to be united with it, so as to gain salvation, must of necessity serve God and His only-begotten Son with their whole mind and with an entire will. The other is the kingdom of Satan, in whose possession and control are all whosoever follow the fatal example of their leader and of our first parents, those who refuse to obey the divine and eternal law, and who have many aims of their own in contempt of God, and many aims also against God.

2. This twofold kingdom St. Augustine keenly discerned and described after the manner of two cities, contrary in their laws because striving for contrary objects; and with a subtle brevity he expressed the efficient cause of each in these words: “Two loves formed two cities: the love of self, reaching even to contempt of God, an earthly city; and the love of God, reaching to contempt of self, a heavenly one.”(*De civ. Dei*, 14, 28 (PL 41, 436)) At every period of time each has been in conflict with the other, with a variety and multiplicity of weapons and of warfare, although not always with equal ardour and assault. At this period, however, the partisans of evil seems to be combining together, and to be struggling with united vehemence, led on or assisted by that strongly organized and widespread association called the Freemasons. No longer making any secret of their purposes, they are now boldly rising up against God Himself. They are planning the destruction of holy Church publicly and openly, and this with the set purpose of utterly despoiling the nations of Christendom, if it were possible, of the blessings obtained for us through Jesus Christ our Saviour. Lamenting these evils, We are constrained by the charity which urges Our heart to cry out often to God: “For lo, Thy enemies have made a noise; and they that hate Thee have lifted up the head. They have taken a malicious counsel against Thy people, and they have consulted against Thy saints. They have said, ‘come, and let us destroy them, so that they be not a nation.’”(Ps 82:24)

3. At so urgent a crisis, when so fierce and so pressing an onslaught is made upon the Christian name, it is Our office to point out the danger, to mark who are the adversaries, and to the best of Our power to make head

against their plans and devices, that those may not perish whose salvation is committed to Us, and that the kingdom of Jesus Christ entrusted to Our charge may not stand and remain whole, but may be enlarged by an ever-increasing growth throughout the world.

4. The Roman Pontiffs Our predecessors, in their incessant watchfulness over the safety of the Christian people, were prompt in detecting **the presence and the purpose of this capital enemy** immediately it sprang into the light instead of hiding as a dark conspiracy; and, moreover, they took occasion with true foresight to give, as it were on their guard, and not allow themselves to be caught by the devices and snares laid out to deceive them.

5. The first warning of the danger was given by Clement XII in the year 1738, (Const. *In Eminentia*, April 24, 1738) and his constitution was confirmed and renewed by Benedict XIV(Const. *Providas*, May 18, 1751); Pius VII followed the same path;(Const. *Ecclesiam a Jesu Christo*, Sept. 13, 1821) and Leo XII, by his apostolic constitution, *Quo Graviora*,(Const. given March 13, 1825) put together the acts and decrees of former Pontiffs on this subject, and ratified and confirmed them forever. In the same sense spoke Pius VIII,(Encyc. *Traditi*, May 21, 1829) Gregory XVI,(Encyc. *Mirari*, August 15, 1832) and, many times over, Pius IX.(Encyc. *Qui Pluribus*, Nov. 9, 1846; address *Multiplices inter*, Sept. 25, 1865, etc.)

6. For as soon as the constitution and the spirit of the masonic sect were clearly discovered by manifest signs of its actions, by the investigation of its causes, by publication of its laws, and of its rites and commentaries, with the addition often of the personal testimony of those who were in the secret, **this apostolic see denounced the sect of the Freemasons, and publicly declared its constitution, as contrary to law and right, to be pernicious no less to Christiandom than to the State; and it forbade any one to enter the society, under the penalties which the Church is wont to inflict upon exceptionally guilty persons.** The sectaries, indignant at this, thinking to elude or to weaken the force of these decrees, partly by contempt of them, and partly by calumny, accused the sovereign Pontiffs who had passed them either of exceeding the bounds of moderation in their decrees or of decreeing what was not just. This was the manner in which they endeavoured to elude the authority and the weight of the apostolic constitutions of Clement XII and Benedict XIV, as well as of Pius VII and Pius IX.(Clement XII (1730-40); Benedict XIV (1740-58); Pius VII (1800-23); Pius IX (1846-78).) Yet, in the very society itself, there were to be found men who unwillingly acknowledged that the Roman Pontiffs had acted within their right, according to the Catholic doctrine and discipline. The Pontiffs received the same assent, and in strong terms, from many princes and heads of governments, who made it their business either to delate the masonic society to the apostolic see, or of their own accord by special enactments to brand it as pernicious, as, for example, in Holland, Austria, Switzerland, Spain, Bavaria, Savoy, and other parts of Italy.

7. But, what is of highest importance, **the course of events has demonstrated the prudence of Our predecessors.** For their provident and paternal solicitude had not always and every where the result desired; and this, either because of the simulation and cunning of some who were active agents in the mischief, or else of the thoughtless levity of the rest who ought, in their own interest, to have given to the matter their diligent attention. **In consequence, the sect of Freemasons grew with a rapidity beyond conception in the course of a**

century and a half, until it came to be able, by means of fraud or of audacity, to gain such entrance into every rank of the State as to seem to be almost its ruling power. This swift and formidable advance has brought upon the Church, upon the power of princes, upon the public well-being, precisely that grievous harm which Our predecessors had long before foreseen. Such a condition has been reached that henceforth there will be grave reason to fear, not indeed for the Church - for her foundation is much too firm to be overturned by the effort of men - but for those States in which prevails the power, either of the sect of which we are speaking or of other sects not dissimilar which lend themselves to it as disciples and subordinates.

8. For these reasons We no sooner came to the helm of the Church than We clearly saw and felt it to be Our duty to use Our authority to the very utmost against so vast an evil. We have several times already, as occasion served, attacked certain chief points of teaching which showed in a special manner **the perverse influence of Masonic opinions**. Thus, in Our encyclical letter, *Quod Apostolici Muneris*, We endeavoured to refute the monstrous doctrines of the socialists and communists; afterwards, in another beginning "Arcanum," We took pains to defend and explain **the true and genuine idea of domestic life, of which marriage is the spring and origin**; and again, in that which begins "Diuturnum," (See nos. 79, 81, 84) We described the ideal of political government conformed to the principles of Christian wisdom, which is marvellously in harmony, on the one hand, with the natural order of things, and, in the other, with the well-being of both sovereign princes and of nations. It is now Our intention, following the example of Our predecessors, directly to treat of the masonic society itself, of its whole teaching, of its aims, and of its manner of thinking and acting, **in order to bring more and more into the light its power for evil, and to do what We can to arrest the contagion of this fatal plague.**

9. There are several organized bodies which, though differing in name, in ceremonial, in form and origin, are nevertheless so bound together **by community of purpose and by the similarity of their main opinions**, as to make in fact one thing with the sect of the Freemasons, which is a kind of center whence they all go forth, and whither they all return. Now, these no longer show a desire to remain concealed; for they hold their meetings in the daylight and before the public eye, and publish their own newspaper organs; and yet, when thoroughly understood, they are found still to retain the nature and the habits of secret societies. There are many things like mysteries which it is the fixed rule to hide with extreme care, not only from strangers, but from very many members, also; such as their secret and final designs, the names of the chief leaders, and certain secret and inner meetings, as well as their decisions, and the ways and means of carrying them out. This is, no doubt, the object of the manifold difference among the members as to right, office, and privilege, of the received distinction of orders and grades, and of that severe discipline which is maintained.

Candidates are generally commanded to promise - nay, with a special oath, to swear - that they will never, to any person, at any time or in any way, make known the members, the passes, or the subjects discussed. Thus, with a fraudulent external appearance, and with a style of simulation which is always the same, the Freemasons, **like the Manichees of old**, strive, as far as possible, to conceal themselves, and to admit no witnesses but their own members. **As a convenient manner of concealment, they assume the character of literary men and scholars associated for purposes of learning.** They speak of their

zeal for a more cultured refinement, and of their love for the poor; and they declare their one wish to be the amelioration of the condition of the masses, and to share with the largest possible number all the benefits of civil life. Were these purposes aimed at in real truth, they are by no means the whole of their object. Moreover, to be enrolled, it is necessary that the candidates promise and undertake to be thenceforward strictly obedient to their leaders and masters with the utmost submission and fidelity, and to be in readiness to do their bidding upon the slightest expression of their will; or, if disobedient, to submit to the direst penalties and death itself. As a fact, if any are judged to have betrayed the doings of the sect or to have resisted commands given, punishment is inflicted on them not infrequently, and with so much audacity and dexterity that the assassin very often escapes the detection and penalty of his crime.

10. But to simulate and wish to lie hid; **to bind men like slaves in the very tightest bonds, and without giving any sufficient reason; to make use of men enslaved to the will of another for any arbitrary act;** to arm men's right hands for bloodshed after securing impunity for the crime - all this is an enormity from which nature recoils. Wherefore, reason and truth itself make it plain **that the society of which we are speaking is in antagonism with justice and natural uprightness.** And this becomes still plainer, inasmuch as other arguments, also, and those very manifest, prove that it is essentially opposed to natural virtue. For, no matter how great may be men's cleverness in concealing and their experience in lying, it is impossible to prevent the effects of any cause from showing, in some way, the intrinsic nature of the cause whence they come. "A good tree cannot produce bad fruit, nor a bad tree produce good fruit."(Matt 7:18) **Now, the masonic sect produces fruits that are pernicious and of the bitterest savour. For, from what We have above most clearly shown, that which is their ultimate purpose forces itself into view - namely, the utter overthrow of that whole religious and political order of the world which the Christian teaching has produced, and the substitution of a new state of things in accordance with their ideas, of which the foundations and laws shall be drawn from mere naturalism.**

11. What We have said, and are about to say, must be understood of the sect of the Freemasons taken generically, and in so far as it comprises the associations kindred to it and confederated with it, but not of the individual members of them. **There may be persons amongst these, and not a few who, although not free from the guilt of having entangled themselves in such associations, yet are neither themselves partners in their criminal acts nor aware of the ultimate object which they are endeavoring to attain.** In the same way, some of the affiliated societies, perhaps, by no means approve of the extreme conclusions which they would, if consistent, embrace as necessarily following from their common principles, did not their very foulness strike them with horror. Some of these, again, are led by circumstances of times and places either to aim at smaller things than the others usually attempt or than they themselves would wish to attempt. They are not, however, for this reason, to be reckoned as alien to the masonic federation; **for the masonic federation is to be judged not so much by the things which it has done, or brought to completion, as by the sum of its pronounced opinions.**

12. Now, the fundamental doctrine of the naturalists, which they sufficiently make known by their very name, is that human nature and human reason ought in all things to be mistress and guide. Laying this down, they care little for

duties to God, or pervert them by erroneous and vague opinions. **For they deny that anything has been taught by God; they allow no dogma of religion or truth which cannot be understood by the human intelligence, nor any teacher who ought to be believed by reason of his authority.** And since it is the special and exclusive duty of the Catholic Church fully to set forth in words truths divinely received, to teach, besides other divine helps to salvation, the authority of its office, and to defend the same with perfect purity, **it is against the Church that the rage and attack of the enemies are principally directed.**

13. In those matters which regard religion let it be seen how the sect of the Freemasons acts, especially where it is more free to act without restraint, and then let any one judge whether in fact it does not wish to carry out the policy of the naturalists. **By a long and persevering labor, they endeavor to bring about this result - namely, that the teaching office and authority of the Church may become of no account in the civil State; and for this same reason they declare to the people and contend that Church and State ought to be altogether disunited.** By this means they reject from the laws and from the commonwealth the wholesome influence of the Catholic religion; and they consequently imagine that States ought to be constituted without any regard for the laws and precepts of the Church.

14. **Nor do they think it enough to disregard the Church - the best of guides - unless they also injure it by their hostility.** Indeed, with them it is lawful to attack with impunity the very foundations of the Catholic religion, in speech, in writing, and in teaching; and even the rights of the Church are not spared, and the offices with which it is divinely invested are not safe. **The least possible liberty to manage affairs is left to the Church; and this is done by laws not apparently very hostile, but in reality framed and fitted to hinder freedom of action.** Moreover, **We see exceptional and onerous laws imposed upon the clergy, to the end that they may be continually diminished in number and in necessary means.** We see also the remnants of the possessions of the Church fettered by the strictest conditions, and subjected to the power and arbitrary will of the administrators of the State, and the religious orders rooted up and scattered.

15. But against the apostolic see and the Roman Pontiff the contention of these enemies has been for a long time directed. **The Pontiff was first, for specious reasons, thrust out from the bulwark of his liberty and of his right, the civil princedom; soon, he was unjustly driven into a condition which was unbearable because of the difficulties raised on all sides; and now the time has come when the partisans of the sects openly declare, what in secret among themselves they have for a long time plotted, that the sacred power of the Pontiffs must be abolished, and that the papacy itself, founded by divine right, must be utterly destroyed.** If other proofs were wanting, this fact would be sufficiently disclosed by the testimony of men well informed, of whom some at other times, and others again recently, have declared it to be true of the Freemasons that they especially desire to assail the Church with irreconcilable hostility, and that they will never rest until they have destroyed whatever the supreme Pontiffs have established for the sake of religion.

16. **If those who are admitted as members are not commanded to abjure by any form of words the Catholic doctrines, this omission, so far from being adverse to the designs of the Freemasons, is more useful for their**

purposes. First, in this way they easily deceive the simple-minded and the heedless, and can induce a far greater number to become members. Again, as all who offer themselves are received whatever may be their form of religion, they thereby teach the great error of this age—that a regard for religion should be held as an indifferent matter, and that all religions are alike. This manner of reasoning is calculated to bring about the ruin of all forms of religion, and especially of the Catholic religion, which, as it is the only one that is true, cannot, without great injustice, be regarded as merely equal to other religions.

17. But the naturalists go much further; for, having, in the highest things, entered upon a wholly erroneous course, they are carried headlong to extremes, either by reason of the weakness of human nature, or because God inflicts upon them the just punishment of their pride. **Hence it happens that they no longer consider as certain and permanent those things which are fully understood by the natural light of reason, such as certainly are - the existence of God, the immaterial nature of the human soul, and its immortality.** The sect of the Freemasons, by a similar course of error, is exposed to these same dangers; **for, although in a general way they may profess the existence of God, they themselves are witnesses that they do not all maintain this truth with the full assent of the mind or with a firm conviction.** Neither do they conceal that this question about God is the greatest source and cause of discords among them; in fact, it is certain that a considerable contention about this same subject has existed among them very lately. **But, indeed, the sect allows great liberty to its votaries, so that to each side is given the right to defend its own opinion, either that there is a God, or that there is none; and those who obstinately contend that there is no God are as easily initiated as those who contend that God exists, though, like the pantheists, they have false notions concerning Him: all which is nothing else than taking away the reality, while retaining some absurd representation of the divine nature.**

18. **When this greatest fundamental truth has been overturned or weakened, it follows that those truths, also, which are known by the teaching of nature must begin to fall - namely, that all things were made by the free will of God the Creator; that the world is governed by Providence; that souls do not die; that to this life of men upon the earth there will succeed another and an everlasting life.**

19. **When these truths are done away with, which are as the principles of nature and important for knowledge and for practical use, it is easy to see what will become of both public and private morality.** We say nothing of those more heavenly virtues, which no one can exercise or even acquire without a special gift and grace of God; **of which necessarily no trace can be found in those who reject as unknown the redemption of mankind, the grace of God, the sacraments, and the happiness to be obtained in heaven.** We speak now of the duties which have their origin in natural probity. That God is the Creator of the world and its provident Ruler; that the eternal law commands the natural order to be maintained, and forbids that it be disturbed; that the last end of men is a destiny far above human things and beyond this sojourning upon the earth: these are the sources and these the principles of all justice and morality. **If these be taken away, as the naturalists and Freemasons desire, there will immediately be no knowledge as to what constitutes justice and injustice, or upon what principle morality is founded.** And, in truth, the teaching of

morality which alone finds favor with the sect of Freemasons, and in which they contend that youth should be instructed, is that which they call "civil," and "independent," and "free," namely, that which does not contain any religious belief. But, how insufficient such teaching is, how wanting in soundness, and how easily moved by every impulse of passion, is sufficiently proved by its sad fruits, which have already begun to appear. **For, wherever, by removing Christian education, this teaching has begun more completely to rule, there goodness and integrity of morals have begun quickly to perish, monstrous and shameful opinions have grown up, and the audacity of evil deeds has risen to a high degree. All this is commonly complained of and deplored; and not a few of those who by no means wish to do so are compelled by abundant evidence to give not infrequently the same testimony.**

20. **Moreover, human nature was stained by original sin, and is therefore more disposed to vice than to virtue. For a virtuous life it is absolutely necessary to restrain the disorderly movements of the soul, and to make the passions obedient to reason. In this conflict human things must very often be despised, and the greatest labors and hardships must be undergone, in order that reason may always hold its sway. But the naturalists and Freemasons, having no faith in those things which we have learned by the revelation of God, deny that our first parents sinned, and consequently think that free will is not at all weakened and inclined to evil.**(Trid., sess. vi, *De justif.*, c. 1. Text of the Council of Trent: "*tametsi in eis (sc. Judaeis) liberum arbitrium minime extinctum esset, viribus licet attenuatum et inclinatum*") **On the contrary, exaggerating rather the power and the excellence of nature, and placing therein alone the principle and rule of justice, they cannot even imagine that there is any need at all of a constant struggle and a perfect steadfastness to overcome the violence and rule of our passions.**

Wherefore we see that men are publicly tempted by the many allurements of pleasure; that there are journals and pamphlets with neither moderation nor shame; that stage-plays are remarkable for license; that designs for works of art are shamelessly sought in the laws of a so called verism; that the contrivances of a soft and delicate life are most carefully devised; and that all the blandishments of pleasure are diligently sought out by which virtue may be lulled to sleep. Wickedly, also, but at the same time quite consistently, do those act who do away with the expectation of the joys of heaven, and bring down all happiness to the level of mortality, and, as it were, sink it in the earth. Of what We have said the following fact, astonishing not so much in itself as in its open expression, may serve as a confirmation. **For, since generally no one is accustomed to obey crafty and clever men so submissively as those whose soul is weakened and broken down by the domination of the passions, there have been in the sect of the Freemasons some who have plainly determined and proposed that, artfully and of set purpose, the multitude should be satiated with a boundless license of vice, as, when this had been done, it would easily come under their power and authority for any acts of daring.**

21. **What refers to domestic life in the teaching of the naturalists is almost all contained in the following declarations: that marriage belongs to the genus of commercial contracts, which can rightly be revoked by the will of those who made them, and that the civil rulers of the State have power**

over the matrimonial bond; that in the education of youth nothing is to be taught in the matter of religion as of certain and fixed opinion; and each one must be left at liberty to follow, when he comes of age, whatever he may prefer. To these things the Freemasons fully assent; and not only assent, but have long endeavoured to make them into a law and institution. For in many countries, and those nominally Catholic, it is enacted that no marriages shall be considered lawful except those contracted by the civil rite; in other places the law permits divorce; and in others every effort is used to make it lawful as soon as may be. **Thus, the time is quickly coming when marriages will be turned into another kind of contract - that is into changeable and uncertain unions which fancy may join together, and which the same when changed may disunite.**

With the greatest unanimity the sect of the Freemasons also endeavours to take to itself the education of youth. They think that they can easily mold to their opinions that soft and pliant age, and bend it whither they will; and that nothing can be more fitted than this to enable them to bring up the youth of the State after their own plan. Therefore, in the education and instruction of children they allow no share, either of teaching or of discipline, to the ministers of the Church; and in many places they have procured that the education of youth shall be exclusively in the hands of laymen, and that nothing which treats of the most important and most holy duties of men to God shall be introduced into the instructions on morals.

22. Then come their doctrines of politics, in which the naturalists lay down that all men have the same right, and are in every respect of equal and like condition; that each one is naturally free; that no one has the right to command another; that it is an act of violence to require men to obey any authority other than that which is obtained from themselves. According to this, therefore, all things belong to the free people; power is held by the command or permission of the people, so that, when the popular will changes, rulers may lawfully be deposed and the source of all rights and civil duties is either in the multitude or in the governing authority when this is constituted according to the latest doctrines. **It is held also that the State should be without God; that in the various forms of religion there is no reason why one should have precedence of another; and that they are all to occupy the same place.**

23. That these doctrines are equally acceptable to the Freemasons, and that they would wish to constitute States according to this example and model, is too well known to require proof. For some time past they have openly endeavoured to bring this about with all their strength and resources; and in this they prepare the way for not a few bolder men who are hurrying on even to worse things, in their endeavor to obtain equality and community of all goods by the destruction of every distinction of rank and property.

24. What, therefore, sect of the Freemasons is, and what course it pursues, appears sufficiently from the summary We have briefly given. Their chief dogmas are so greatly and manifestly at variance with reason that nothing can be more perverse. To wish to destroy the religion and the Church which God Himself has established, and whose perpetuity He insures by His protection, and to bring back after a lapse of eighteen centuries the manners and customs of the pagans, is signal folly and audacious impiety. Neither is it less horrible nor more tolerable that they should repudiate the benefits which Jesus Christ so mercifully obtained, not only for individuals, but also for the family and for civil

society, benefits which, even according to the judgment and testimony of enemies of Christianity, are very great. **In this insane and wicked endeavor we may almost see the implacable hatred and spirit of revenge with which Satan himself is inflamed against Jesus Christ.** - So also the studious endeavour of the Freemasons to destroy the chief foundations of justice and honesty, and to co-operate with those who would wish, as if they were mere animals, to do what they please, tends only to the ignominious and disgraceful ruin of the human race.

The evil, too, is increased by the dangers which threaten both domestic and civil society. **As We have elsewhere shown**, (See *Arcanum*, no. 81) **in marriage, according to the belief of almost every nation, there is something sacred and religious; and the law of God has determined that marriages shall not be dissolved. If they are deprived of their sacred character, and made dissolvable, trouble and confusion in the family will be the result, the wife being deprived of her dignity and the children left without protection as to their interests and well being.** - To have in public matters no care for religion, and in the arrangement and administration of civil affairs to have no more regard for God than if He did not exist, is a rashness unknown to the very pagans; for in their heart and soul the notion of a divinity and the need of public religion were so firmly fixed that they would have thought it easier to have city without foundation than a city without God. Human society, indeed for which by nature we are formed, has been constituted by God the Author of nature; and from Him, as from their principle and source, flow in all their strength and permanence the countless benefits with which society abounds. **As we are each of us admonished by the very voice of nature to worship God in piety and holiness, as the Giver unto us of life and of all that is good therein, so also and for the same reason, nations and States are bound to worship Him; and therefore it is clear that those who would absolve society from all religious duty act not only unjustly but also with ignorance and folly.**

25. As men are by the will of God born for civil union and society, and as the power to rule is so necessary a bond of society that, if it be taken away, society must at once be broken up, **it follows that from Him who is the Author of society has come also the authority to rule; so that whosoever rules, he is the minister of God.** Wherefore, as the end and nature of human society so requires, it is right to obey the just commands of lawful authority, as it is right to obey God who ruleth all things; **and it is most untrue that the people have it in their power to cast aside their obedience whensoever they please.**

26. In like manner, no one doubts that all men are equal one to another, so far as regards their common origin and nature, or the last end which each one has to attain, or the rights and duties which are thence derived. **But, as the abilities of all are not equal, as one differs from another in the powers of mind or body, and as there are very many dissimilarities of manner, disposition, and character, it is most repugnant to reason to endeavor to confine all within the same measure, and to extend complete equality to the institutions of civic life.** Just as a perfect condition of the body results from the conjunction and composition of its various members, which, though differing in form and purpose, make, by their union and the distribution of each one to its proper place, a combination beautiful to behole, firm in strength, and necessary for use; so, in the commonwealth, there is an almost infinite dissimilarity of men, as parts of the whole. **If they are to be all equal, and each is to follow his own will, the State will**

appear most deformed; but if, with a distinction of degrees of dignity, of pursuits and employments, all aptly conspire for the common good, they will present the image of a State both well constituted and conformable to nature.

27. Now, from the disturbing errors which We have described the greatest dangers to States are to be feared. **For, the fear of God and reverence for divine laws being taken away, the authority of rulers despised, sedition permitted and approved, and the popular passions urged on to lawlessness, with no restraint save that of punishment, a change and overthrow of all things will necessarily follow.** Yea, this change and overthrow is deliberately planned and put forward by many associations of communists and socialists; and to their undertakings the sect of Freemasons is not hostile, but greatly favours their designs, and holds in common with them **their chief opinions.** And if these men do not at once and everywhere endeavour to carry out their extreme views, it is not to be attributed to their teaching and their will, but to the virtue of that divine religion which cannot be destroyed; **and also because the sounder part of men, refusing to be enslaved to secret societies, vigorously resist their insane attempts.**

28. Would that all men would judge of the tree by its fruit, and would acknowledge the seed and origin of the evils which press upon us, and of the dangers that are impending! **We have to deal with a deceitful and crafty enemy, who, gratifying the ears of people and of princes, has ensnared them by smooth speeches and by adulation. Ingratiating themselves with rulers under a pretense of friendship, the Freemasons have endeavoured to make them their allies and powerful helpers for the destruction of the Christian name;** and that they might more strongly urge them on, they have, with determined calumny, accused the Church of invidiously contending with rulers in matters that affect their authority and sovereign power. Having, by these artifices, insured their own safety and audacity, they have begun to exercise great weight in the government of States; **but nevertheless they are prepared to shake the foundations of empires,** to harass the rulers of the State, to accuse, and to cast them out, as often as they appear to govern otherwise than they themselves could have wished. **In like manner, they have by flattery deluded the people. Proclaiming with a loud voice liberty and public prosperity, and saying that it was owing to the Church and to sovereigns that the multitude were not drawn out of their unjust servitude and poverty, they have imposed upon the people, and, exciting them by a thirst for novelty, they have urged them to assail both the Church and the civil power.** Nevertheless, the expectation of the benefits which was hoped for is greater than the reality; **indeed, the common people, more oppressed than they were before, are deprived in their misery of that solace which, if things had been arranged in a Christian manner, they would have had with ease and in abundance.** But, whoever strive against the order which Divine Providence has constituted pay usually the penalty of their pride, and meet with affliction and misery where they rashly hoped to find all things prosperous and in conformity with their desires.

29. **The Church, if she directs men to render obedience chiefly and above all to God the sovereign Lord, is wrongly and falsely believed either to be envious of the civil power or to arrogate to herself something of the rights of sovereigns. On the contrary, she teaches that what is rightly due to the civil power must be rendered to it with a conviction and consciousness of**

duty. In teaching that from God Himself comes the right of ruling, she adds a great dignity to civil authority, and on small help towards obtaining the obedience and good will of the citizens. The friend of peace and sustainer of concord, she embraces all with maternal love, and, intent only upon giving help to mortal man, **she teaches that to justice must be joined clemency, equity to authority, and moderation to lawgiving; that no one's right must be violated; that order and public tranquility are to be maintained; and that the poverty of those are in need is, as far as possible, to be relieved by public and private charity.** "But for this reason," to use the words of St. Augustine, "men think, or would have it believed, that Christian teaching is not suited to the good of the State; for they wish the State to be founded not on solid virtue, but on the impunity of vice." (*Epistola 137, ad Volusianum*, c. v, n. 20 (PL 33 525)) **Knowing these things, both princes and people would act with political wisdom, and according to the needs of general safety, if, instead of joining with Freemasons to destroy the Church, they joined with the Church in repelling their attacks.**

30 .Whatever the future may be, in this grave and widespread evil it is Our duty, venerable brethren, to endeavour to find a remedy. And because We know that Our best and firmest hope of a remedy is **in the power of that divine religion which the Freemasons hate in proportion to their fear of it**, We think it to be of chief importance to call that most saving power to Our aid against the common enemy. Therefore, whatsoever the Roman Pontiffs Our predecessors have decreed for the purpose of opposing the undertakings and endeavours of the masonic sect, and whatsoever they have enacted to enter or withdraw men from societies of this kind, We ratify and confirm it all by our apostolic authority: **and trusting greatly to the good will of Christians, We pray and beseech each one, for the sake of his eternal salvation, to be most conscientiously careful not in the least to depart from what the apostolic see has commanded in this matter.**

31. **We pray and beseech you, venerable brethren, to join your efforts with Ours, and earnestly to strive for the extirpation of this foul plague, which is creeping through the veins of the body politic.** You have to defend the glory of God and the salvation of your neighbour; and with the object of your strife before you, neither courage nor strength will be wanting. It will be for your prudence to judge by what means you can best overcome the difficulties and obstacles you meet with. But, as it befits the authority of Our office that We Ourselves should point out some suitable way of proceeding, We wish it to be your rule *first of all to tear away the mask from Freemasonry, and to let it be seen as it really is*; and by sermons and pastoral letters to instruct the people as to the artifices used by societies of this kind in seducing men and enticing them into their ranks, and as to **the depravity of their opinions and the wickedness of their acts.** As Our predecessors have many times repeated, let no man think that he may for any reason whatsoever join the masonic sect, **if he values his Catholic name and his eternal salvation as he ought to value them.** Let no one be deceived by a pretense of honesty. It may seem to some that Freemasons demand nothing that is openly contrary to religion and morality; **but, as the whole principle and object of the sect lies in what is vicious and criminal, to join with these men or in any way to help them cannot be lawful.**

32. Further, by assiduous teaching and exhortation, the multitude must be drawn to learn diligently the precepts of religion; for which purpose **we**

earnestly advise that by opportune writings and sermons they be taught the elements of those sacred truths in which Christian philosophy is contained. The result of this will be that the minds of men will be made sound by instruction, and will be protected against many forms of error and inducements to wickedness, especially in the present unbounded freedom of writing and insatiable eagerness for learning.

33. Great, indeed, is the work; but in it the clergy will share your labours, if, through your care, they are fitted for it by learning and a well-turned life. **This good and great work requires to be helped also by the industry of those amongst the laity in whom a love of religion and of country is joined to learning and goodness of life. By uniting the efforts of both clergy and laity, strive, venerable brethren, to make men thoroughly know and love the Church; for, the greater their knowledge and love of the Church, the more will they be turned away from clandestine societies.**

34. Wherefore, not without cause do We use this occasion to state again what We have stated elsewhere, **namely, that the Third Order of St. Francis, whose discipline We a little while ago prudently mitigated, should be studiously promoted and sustained;** for the whole object of this Order, as constituted by its founder, is to invite men to an imitation of Jesus Christ, to a love of the Church, and to the observance of all Christian virtues; and therefore it ought to be of great influence in suppressing the contagion of wicked societies. **Let, therefore, this holy sodality be strengthened by a daily increase. Amongst the many benefits to be expected from it will be the great benefit of drawing the minds of men to liberty, fraternity, and equality of right; not such as the Freemasons absurdly imagine, but such as Jesus Christ obtained for the human race and St. Francis aspired to: the liberty, We mean, of sons of God, through which we may be free from slavery to Satan or to our passions, both of them most wicked masters; the fraternity whose origin is in God, the common Creator and Father of all; the equality which, founded on justice and charity, does not take away all distinctions among men, but, out of the varieties of life, of duties, and of pursuits, forms that union and that harmony which naturally tend to the benefit and dignity of society.**

35. In the third place, there is a matter wisely instituted by our forefathers, but in course of time laid aside, which may now be used as a pattern and form of something similar. **We mean the associations of guilds of workmen, for the protection, under the guidance of religion, both of their temporal interests and of their morality.** If our ancestors, by long use and experience, felt the benefit of these guilds, our age perhaps will feel it the more by reason of the opportunity which they will give of crushing the power of the sects. Those who support themselves by the labour of their hands, besides being, by their very condition, most worthy above all others of charity and consolation, are also especially exposed to the allurements of men whose ways lie in fraud and deceit. Therefore, they ought to be helped with the greatest possible kindness, and to be invited to join associations that are good, lest they be drawn away to others that are evil. For this reason, We greatly wish, for the salvation of the people, that, under the auspices and patronage of the bishops, and at convenient times, these gilds may be generally restored. To Our great delight, sodalities of this kind and also associations of masters have in many places already been established, having, each class of them, for their object **to help the honest workman, to protect and guard his**

children and family, and to promote in them piety, Christian knowledge, and a moral life. And in this matter We cannot omit mentioning that exemplary society, named after its founder, St. Vincent, which has deserved so well of the lower classes. Its acts and its aims are well known. Its whole object is to give relief to the poor and miserable. This it does with singular prudence and modesty; and the less it wishes to be seen, the better is it fitted for the exercise of Christian charity, and for the relief of suffering.

36. In the fourth place, in order more easily to attain what We wish, to your fidelity and watchfulness We commend in a special manner the young, as being the hope of human society. **Devote the greatest part of your care to their instruction; and do not think that any precaution can be great enough in keeping them from masters and schools whence the pestilent breath of the sects is to be feared. Under your guidance, let parents, religious instructors, and priests having the cure of souls use every opportunity, in their Christian teaching, of warning their children and pupils of the infamous nature of these societies, so that they may learn in good time to beware of the various and fraudulent artifices by which their promoters are accustomed to ensnare people.** And those who instruct the young in religious knowledge will act wisely if they induce all of them to resolve and to undertake never to bind themselves to any society without the knowledge of their parents, or the advice of their parish priest or director.

37. We well know, however, that our united labors will by no means suffice to pluck up these pernicious seeds from the Lord's field, unless the Heavenly Master of the vineyard shall mercifully help us in our endeavours. We must, therefore, with great and anxious care, implore of Him the help which the greatness of the danger and of the need requires. **The sect of the Freemasons shows itself insolent and proud of its success, and seems as if it would put no bounds to its pertinacity. Its followers, joined together by a wicked compact and by secret counsels, give help one to another, and excite one another to an audacity for evil things. So vehement an attack demands an equal defence - namely, that all good men should form the widest possible association of action and of prayer.** We beseech them, therefore, with united hearts, to stand together and unmoved against the advancing force of the sects; and in mourning and supplication to stretch out their hands to God, praying that the Christian name may flourish and prosper, **that the Church may enjoy its needed liberty, that those who have gone astray may return to a right mind, that error at length may give place to truth, and vice to virtue.** Let us take our helper and intercessor the Virgin Mary, Mother of God, so that she, who from the moment of her conception overcame Satan may show her power over these evil sects, in which is revived the contumacious spirit of the demon, together with his unsubdued perfidy and deceit. Let us beseech Michael, the prince of the heavenly angels, who drove out the infernal foe; and Joseph, the spouse of the most holy Virgin, and heavenly patron of the Catholic Church; and the great Apostles, Peter and Paul, the fathers and victorious champions of the Christian faith. **By their patronage, and by perseverance in united prayer, we hope that God will mercifully and opportunely succor the human race, which is encompassed by so many dangers.**

38. As a pledge of heavenly gifts and of Our benevolence, We lovingly grant in the Lord, to you, venerable brethren, and to the clergy and all the people committed to your watchful care, Our apostolic benediction.

Given at St. Peter's in Rome, the twentieth day of April, 1884, the sixth year of Our pontificate.

LEO XIII

Source: www.vatican.va (© Libreria Editrice Vaticana)

XVII. DIVINI REDEMPTORIS

ENCYCLICAL OF POPE PIUS XI
ON ATHEISTIC COMMUNISM

March 19th, 1937

To the Patriarchs, Princes, Archbishops, Bishops, and other Ordinaries in Peace and Communion with the Apostolic See.

Venerable Brethren, Health and Apostolic Benediction.

The promise of a Redeemer brightens the first page of the history of mankind, and the confident hope aroused by this promise softened the keen regret for a paradise which had been lost. It was this hope that accompanied the human race on its weary journey, until in the fullness of time the expected Savior came to begin a new universal civilization, the Christian civilization, far superior even to that which up to this time had been laboriously achieved by certain more privileged nations.

Pope Pius XI (February 6, 1922 – February 10, 1939)

2. Nevertheless, the struggle between good and evil remained in the world as a sad legacy of the original fall. **Nor has the ancient tempter ever ceased to deceive mankind with false promises.** It is on this account that one convulsion following upon another has marked the passage of the centuries, down to the revolution of our own days. **This modern revolution, it may be said, has actually broken out or threatens everywhere, and it exceeds in amplitude and violence anything yet experienced in the preceding persecutions launched against the Church.** Entire peoples find themselves in danger of falling back into a barbarism worse than that which oppressed the greater part of the world at the coming of the Redeemer.

3. **This all too imminent danger, Venerable Brethren, as you have already surmised, is bolshevistic and atheistic Communism, which aims at upsetting the social order and at undermining the very foundations of Christian civilization .**

4. In the face of such a threat, the Catholic Church could not and does not remain silent. This Apostolic See, above all, has not refrained from raising its

voice, for it knows that its proper and social mission is to defend truth, justice and all those eternal values which Communism ignores or attacks. Ever since the days when groups of "intellectuals" were formed **in an arrogant attempt to free civilization from the bonds of morality and religion**, Our Predecessors overtly and explicitly drew the attention of the world to the consequences of the dechristianization of human society. With reference to Communism, Our Venerable Predecessor, Pius IX, of holy memory, as early as 1846 pronounced a solemn condemnation, which he confirmed in the words of the Syllabus directed against "**that infamous doctrine of so-called Communism which is absolutely contrary to the natural law itself, and if once adopted would utterly destroy the rights, property and possessions of all men, and even society itself.**" [Encycl. *Qui Pluribus*, Nov. 9, 1864 (*Acta Pii IX*, Vol I, p. 13). Cf. *Syllabus*, IV, (A.S.S., vol. III, p. 170)] Later on, another of Our predecessors, the immortal Leo XIII, in his Encyclical *Quod Apostolici Muneris*, defined Communism as "**the fatal plague which insinuates itself into the very marrow of human society only to bring about its ruin.**" [Encycl. *Quod Apostolici Muneris*, Dec. 28, 1928 (*Acta Leonis XII*, Vol. 1, p. 46)] With clear intuition he pointed out that the atheistic movements existing among the masses of the Machine Age had their origin **in that school of philosophy which for centuries had sought to divorce science from the life of the Faith and of the Church.**

5. During Our Pontificate We too have frequently and with urgent insistence denounced the current trend to atheism which is alarmingly on the increase. In 1924 when Our relief-mission returned from the Soviet Union We condemned Communism in a special Allocution [Dec. 18, 1924: A.A.S., Vol. XVI (1924), pp. 494-495] which We addressed to the whole world. In our Encyclicals *Miserentissimus Redemptor*, [May 8, 1928: A.A.S., Vol. XX (1928), pp. 165-178] *Quadragesimo Anno*, [May 15, 1931: A.A.S., Vol. XXIII (1931), pp. 177-228] *Caritate Christi*, [May 3, 1932: A.A.S., Vol. XXIV (1932), pp. 177-194] *Acerba Animi*, [Sept. 29, 1932: A.A.S., Vol. XXIV (1932), pp. 321-332] *Dilectissima Nobis*, [June 3, 1933: A.A.S., Vol. XXV (1933), pp. 261-274] We raised a solemn protest against the persecutions unleashed in Russia, in Mexico and now in Spain. Our two Allocutions of last year, the first on the occasion of the opening of the International Catholic Press Exposition, and the second during Our audience to the Spanish refugees, along with Our message of last Christmas, have evoked a world-wide echo which is not yet spent. In fact, the most persistent enemies of the Church, who from Moscow are directing the struggle against Christian civilization, themselves bear witness, by their unceasing attacks in word and act, that even to this hour the Papacy has continued faithfully to protect the sanctuary of the Christian religion, and that it has called public attention to the perils of Communism more frequently and more effectively than any other public authority on earth.

6. To Our great satisfaction, Venerable Brethren, you have, by means of individual and even joint pastoral Letters, accurately transmitted and explained to the Faithful these admonitions. Yet despite Our frequent and paternal warning the peril only grows greater from day to day because of the pressure exerted by clever agitators. Therefore We believe it to be Our duty to raise Our voice once more, in a still more solemn missive, in accord with the tradition of this Apostolic See, the Teacher of Truth, and in accord with the desire of the whole Catholic world, which makes the appearance of such a document but natural. We trust that the echo of Our voice will reach every mind free from prejudice and every heart sincerely desirous of the good of mankind. We wish this the more because Our words are now receiving sorry confirmation from the spectacle of the bitter fruits of subversive ideas, which We foresaw and foretold,

and which are in fact multiplying fearfully in the countries already stricken, or threatening every other country of the world.

7. Hence We wish to expose once more in a brief synthesis the principles of atheistic Communism as they are manifested chiefly in bolshevism. We wish also to indicate its method of action and to contrast with its false principles the clear doctrine of the Church, in order to inculcate anew and with greater insistence the means by which the Christian civilization, the true *civitas humana*, can be saved **from the satanic scourge**, and not merely saved, but better developed for the well-being of human society.

8. **The Communism of today, more emphatically than similar movements in the past, conceals in itself a false messianic idea. A pseudo-ideal of justice, of equality and fraternity in labor impregnates all its doctrine and activity with a deceptive mysticism, which communicates a zealous and contagious enthusiasm to the multitudes entrapped by delusive promises.** This is especially true in an age like ours, when unusual misery has resulted from the unequal distribution of the goods of this world. This pseudo-ideal is even boastfully advanced as if it were responsible for a certain economic progress. As a matter of fact, when such progress is at all real, its true causes are quite different, as for instance the intensification of industrialism in countries which were formerly almost without it, the exploitation of immense natural resources, and the use of the most brutal methods to insure the achievement of gigantic projects with a minimum of expense.

9. The doctrine of modern Communism, **which is often concealed under the most seductive trappings**, is in substance based on the principles of dialectical and historical materialism previously advocated by Marx, of which the theoricians of bolshevism claim to possess the only genuine interpretation. **According to this doctrine there is in the world only one reality, matter, the blind forces of which evolve into plant, animal and man.** Even human society is nothing but a phenomenon and form of matter, evolving in the same way. By a law of inexorable necessity and through a perpetual conflict of forces, matter moves towards the final synthesis of a classless society. In such a doctrine, as is evident, there is no room for the idea of God; there is no difference between matter and spirit, between soul and body; there is neither survival of the soul after death nor any hope in a future life. **Insisting on the dialectical aspect of their materialism, the Communists claim that the conflict which carries the world towards its final synthesis can be accelerated by man. Hence they endeavor to sharpen the antagonisms which arise between the various classes of society. Thus the class struggle with its consequent violent hate and destruction takes on the aspects of a crusade for the progress of humanity. On the other hand, all other forces whatever, as long as they resist such systematic violence, must be annihilated as hostile to the human race.**

10. **Communism, moreover, strips man of his liberty, robs human personality of all its dignity, and removes all the moral restraints that check the eruptions of blind impulse. There is no recognition of any right of the individual in his relations to the collectivity; no natural right is accorded to human personality, which is a mere cog-wheel in the Communist system.** In man's relations with other individuals, besides, Communists hold the principle of absolute equality, **rejecting all hierarchy and divinely-constituted authority, including the authority of parents.** What men call authority and subordination is derived from the community as its first

and only font. Nor is the individual granted any property rights over material goods or the means of production, for inasmuch as these are the source of further wealth, their possession would give one man power over another. Precisely on this score, all forms of private property must be eradicated, for they are at the origin of all economic enslavement.

11. Refusing to human life any sacred or spiritual character, such a doctrine logically makes of marriage and the family a purely artificial and civil institution, the outcome of a specific economic system. There exists no matrimonial bond of a juridico-moral nature that is not subject to the whim of the individual or of the collectivity. Naturally, therefore, the notion of an indissoluble marriage-tie is scouted. **Communism is particularly characterized by the rejection of any link that binds woman to the family and the home, and her emancipation is proclaimed as a basic principle.** She is withdrawn from the family and the care of her children, to be thrust instead into public life and collective production under the same conditions as man. The care of home and children then devolves upon the collectivity. Finally, the right of education is denied to parents, for it is conceived as the exclusive prerogative of the community, in whose name and by whose mandate alone parents may exercise this right.

12. What would be the condition of a human society based on such materialistic tenets? It would be a collectivity with no other hierarchy than that of the economic system. **It would have only one mission: the production of material things by means of collective labor, so that the goods of this world might be enjoyed in a paradise where each would "give according to his powers" and would "receive according to his needs."** Communism recognizes in the collectivity the right, or rather, unlimited discretion, to draft individuals for the labor of the collectivity with no regard for their personal welfare; so that even violence could be legitimately exercised to dragoon the recalcitrant against their wills. **In the Communistic commonwealth morality and law would be nothing but a derivation of the existing economic order, purely earthly in origin and unstable in character.** In a word, the Communists claim to inaugurate a new era and a new civilization which is the result of blind evolutionary forces culminating in a humanity without God.

13. When all men have finally acquired the collectivist mentality in this Utopia of a really classless society, the political State, which is now conceived by Communists merely as the instrument by which the proletariat is oppressed by the capitalists, will have lost all reason for its existence and will "wither away." **However, until that happy consummation is realized, the State and the powers of the State furnish Communism with the most efficacious and most extensive means for the achievement of its goal.**

14. **Such, Venerable Brethren, is the new gospel which bolshevistic and atheistic Communism offers the world as the glad tidings of deliverance and salvation! It is a system full of errors and sophisms. It is in opposition both to reason and to Divine Revelation. It subverts the social order, because it means the destruction of its foundations; because it ignores the true origin and purpose of the State; because it denies the rights, dignity and liberty of human personality.**

15. How is it possible that such a system, long since rejected scientifically and now proved erroneous by experience, how is it, We ask, that such a system

could spread so rapidly in all parts of the world? **The explanation lies in the fact that too few have been able to grasp the nature of Communism. The majority instead succumb to its deception, skillfully concealed by the most extravagant promises.** By pretending to desire only the betterment of the condition of the working classes, by urging the removal of the very real abuses chargeable to the liberalistic economic order, and by demanding a more equitable distribution of this world's goods (objectives entirely and undoubtedly legitimate), the Communist takes advantage of the present world-wide economic crisis to draw into the sphere of his influence even those sections of the populace which on principle reject all forms of materialism and terrorism. And as every error contains its element of truth, the partial truths to which We have referred are astutely presented according to the needs of time and place, to conceal, when convenient, the repulsive crudity and inhumanity of Communistic principles and tactics. **Thus the Communist ideal wins over many of the better minded members of the community.** These in turn become the apostles of the movement among the younger intelligentsia who are still too immature to recognize the intrinsic errors of the system. The preachers of Communism are also proficient in exploiting racial antagonisms and political divisions and oppositions. They take advantage of the lack of orientation characteristic of modern agnostic science in order to burrow into the universities, where they bolster up the principles of their doctrine with pseudo-scientific arguments.

16. If we would explain the blind acceptance of Communism by so many thousands of workmen, we must remember that the way had been already prepared for it by the religious and moral destitution in which wage-earners had been left by liberal economics. Even on Sundays and holy days, labor-shifts were given no time to attend to their essential religious duties. No one thought of building churches within convenient distance of factories, nor of facilitating the work of the priest. On the contrary, laicism was actively and persistently promoted, with the result that we are now reaping the fruits of the errors so often denounced by Our Predecessors and by Ourselves. It can surprise no one that the Communistic fallacy should be spreading in a world already to a large extent de-Christianized.

17. There is another explanation for the rapid diffusion of the Communistic ideas now seeping into every nation, great and small, advanced and backward, so that no corner of the earth is free from them. **This explanation is to be found in a propaganda so truly diabolical that the world has perhaps never witnessed its like before.** It is directed from one common center. It is shrewdly adapted to the varying conditions of diverse peoples. It has at its disposal great financial resources, gigantic organizations, international congresses, and countless trained workers. It makes use of pamphlets and reviews, of cinema, theater and radio, of schools and even universities. Little by little it penetrates into all classes of the people and even reaches the better-minded groups of the community, with the result that few are aware of the poison which increasingly pervades their minds and hearts.

18. A third powerful factor in the diffusion of Communism is the conspiracy of silence on the part of a large section of the non-Catholic press of the world. **We say conspiracy, because it is impossible otherwise to explain how a press usually so eager to exploit even the little daily incidents of life has been able to remain silent for so long about the horrors perpetrated in Russia, in Mexico and even in a great part of Spain; and that it should have relatively**

so little to say concerning a world organization as vast as Russian Communism. This silence is due in part to shortsighted political policy, and is favored by various occult forces which for a long time have been working for the overthrow of the Christian Social Order.

19. Meanwhile the sorry effects of this propaganda are before our eyes. **Where Communism has been able to assert its power - and here We are thinking with special affection of the people of Russia and Mexico - it has striven by every possible means, as its champions openly boast, to destroy Christian civilization and the Christian religion by banishing every remembrance of them from the hearts of men, especially of the young.** Bishops and priests were exiled, condemned to forced labor, shot and done to death in inhuman fashion; laymen suspected of defending their religion were vexed, persecuted, dragged off to trial and thrown into prison.

20. Even where the scourge of Communism has not yet had time enough to exercise to the full its logical effects, as witness Our beloved Spain, it has, alas, found compensation in the fiercer violence of its attack. Not only this or that church or isolated monastery was sacked, but as far as possible every church and every monastery was destroyed. Every vestige of the Christian religion was eradicated, even though intimately linked with the rarest monuments of art and science. The fury of Communism has not confined itself to the indiscriminate slaughter of Bishops, of thousands of priests and religious of both sexes; it searches out above all those who have been devoting their lives to the welfare of the working classes and the poor. But the majority of its victims have been laymen of all conditions and classes. Even up to the present moment, masses of them are slain almost daily for no other offense than the fact that they are good Christians or at least opposed to atheistic Communism. **And this fearful destruction has been carried out with a hatred and a savage barbarity one would not have believed possible in our age. No man of good sense, nor any statesman conscious of his responsibility can fail to shudder at the thought that what is happening today in Spain may perhaps be repeated tomorrow in other civilized countries.**

21. Nor can it be said that these atrocities are a transitory phenomenon, the usual accompaniment of all great revolutions, the isolated excesses common to every war. **No, they are the natural fruit of a system which lacks all inner restraint. Some restraint is necessary for man considered either as an individual or in society. Even the barbaric peoples had this inner check in the natural law written by God in the heart of every man.** And where this natural law was held in higher esteem, ancient nations rose to a grandeur that still fascinates - more than it should - certain superficial students of human history. **But tear the very idea of God from the hearts of men, and they are necessarily urged by their passions to the most atrocious barbarity.**

22. **This, unfortunately, is what we now behold. For the first time in history we are witnessing a struggle, cold-blooded in purpose and mapped out to the least detail, between man and "all that is called God."** [Cf. *Thessalonians*, II, 4] Communism is by its nature anti-religious. It considers religion as "the opiate of the people" because the principles of religion which speak of a life beyond the grave dissuade the proletariat from the dream of a Soviet paradise which is of this world.

23. But the law of nature and its Author cannot be flouted with impunity. Communism has not been able, and will not be able, to achieve its objectives even in the merely economic sphere. It is true that in Russia it has been a contributing factor in rousing men and materials from the inertia of centuries, and in obtaining by all manner of means, often without scruple, some measure of material success. Nevertheless We know from reliable and even very recent testimony that not even there, in spite of slavery imposed on millions of men, has Communism reached its promised goal. **After all, even the sphere of economics needs some morality, some moral sense of responsibility, which can find no place in a system so thoroughly materialistic as Communism. Terrorism is the only possible substitute, and it is terrorism that reigns today in Russia, where former comrades in revolution are exterminating each other. Terrorism, having failed despite all to stem the tide of moral corruption, cannot even prevent the dissolution of society itself.**

24. In making these observations it is no part of Our intention to condemn *en masse* the peoples of the Soviet Union. For them We cherish the warmest paternal affection. **We are well aware that not a few of them groan beneath the yoke imposed on them by men who in very large part are strangers to the real interests of the country. We recognize that many others were deceived by fallacious hopes. We blame only the system, with its authors and abettors who considered Russia the best-prepared field for experimenting with a plan elaborated decades ago, and who from there continue to spread it from one end of the world to the other.**

25. We have exposed the errors and the violent, deceptive tactics of bolshevistic and atheistic Communism. It is now time, Venerable Brethren, to contrast with it the true notion, already familiar to you, of the *civitas humana* or human society, as taught by reason and Revelation through the mouth of the Church, *Magistra Gentium*.

26. Above all other reality there exists one supreme Being: God, the omnipotent Creator of all things, the all-wise and just Judge of all men. This supreme reality, God, is the absolute condemnation of the impudent falsehoods of Communism. **In truth, it is not because men believe in God that He exists; rather because He exists do all men whose eyes are not deliberately closed to the truth believe in Him and pray to Him.**

27. In the Encyclical on Christian Education [Encycl. *Divini Illius Magistri*, Dec. 31, 1929 (A.A.S., Vol. XXII, 1930 pp. 47-86)] We explained the fundamental doctrine concerning man as it may be gathered from reason and Faith. Man has a spiritual and immortal soul. He is a person, marvelously endowed by his Creator with gifts of body and mind. He is a true "microcosm," as the ancients said, a world in miniature, with a value far surpassing that of the vast inanimate cosmos. God alone is his last end, in this life and the next. By sanctifying grace he is raised to the dignity of a son of God, and incorporated into the Kingdom of God in the Mystical Body of Christ. **In consequence he has been endowed by God with many and varied prerogatives: the right to life, to bodily integrity, to the necessary means of existence; the right to tend toward his ultimate goal in the path marked out for him by God; the right of association and the right to possess and use property.**

28. **Just as matrimony and the right to its natural use are of divine origin, so likewise are the constitution and fundamental prerogatives of the family fixed and determined by the Creator.** In the Encyclical on Christian

Marriage[Encycl. *Casti Connubii*, Dec. 31, 1930 (A.A.S., Vol. XX- II, 1930, pp. 539-592)] and in Our other Encyclical on Education, cited above, we have treated these topics at considerable length.

29. But God has likewise destined man for civil society according to the dictates of his very nature. **In the plan of the Creator, society is a natural means which man can and must use to reach his destined end. Society is for man and not vice versa. This must not be understood in the sense of liberalistic individualism, which subordinates society to the selfish use of the individual; but only in the sense that by means of an organic union with society and by mutual collaboration the attainment of earthly happiness is placed within the reach of all.** In a further sense, it is society which affords the opportunities for the development of all the individual and social gifts bestowed on human nature. These natural gifts have a value surpassing the immediate interests of the moment, for in society they reflect the divine perfection, which would not be true were man to live alone. But on final analysis, even in this latter function, society is made for man, that he may recognize this reflection of God's perfection, and refer it in praise and adoration to the Creator. **Only man, the human person, and not society in any form is endowed with reason and a morally free will.**

30. Man cannot be exempted from his divinely-imposed obligations toward civil society, and the representatives of authority have the right to coerce him when he refuses without reason to do his duty. **Society, on the other hand, cannot defraud man of his God-granted rights, the most important of which We have indicated above. Nor can society systematically void these rights by making their use impossible.** It is therefore according to the dictates of reason that ultimately all material things should be ordained to man as a person, that through his mediation they may find their way to the Creator. In this wise we can apply to man, the human person, the words of the Apostle of the Gentiles, who writes to the Corinthians on the Christian economy of salvation: "All things are yours, and you are Christ's, and Christ is God's." [I Corinthians, III, 23] **While Communism impoverishes human personality by inverting the terms of the relation of man to society, to what lofty heights is man not elevated by reason and Revelation!**

31. The directive principles concerning the social-economic order have been expounded in the social Encyclical of Leo XIII on the question of labor.[Encycl. *Rerum Novarum*, May 15, 1891 (Acta Leonis XIII Vol. IV, pp. 177-209)] Our own Encyclical on the Reconstruction of the Social Order[Encycl. *Quadragesimo Anno*, May 15, 1931 (A.A.S., Vol. XXIII, 1931, pp. 177-228)] adapted these principles to present needs. Then, insisting anew on the age-old doctrine of the Church concerning the individual and social character of private property, We explained clearly the right and dignity of labor, the relations of mutual aid and collaboration which should exist between those who possess capital and those who work, the salary due in strict justice to the worker for himself and for his family.

32. In this same Encyclical of Ours We have shown that the means of saving the world of today from the lamentable ruin into which a moral liberalism has plunged us, are neither the class-struggle nor terror, nor yet the autocratic abuse of State power, **but rather the infusion of social justice and the sentiment of Christian love into the social-economic order.** We have indicated how a sound prosperity is to be restored according to the true principles of a sane corporative system which respects the proper hierarchic

structure of society; and how all the occupational groups should be fused into a harmonious unity inspired by the principle of the common good. And the genuine and chief function of public and civil authority consists precisely in the efficacious furthering of this harmony and coordination of all social forces.

33. In view of this organized common effort towards peaceful living, Catholic doctrine vindicates to the State the dignity and authority of a vigilant and provident defender of those divine and human rights on which the Sacred Scriptures and the Fathers of the Church insist so often. **It is not true that all have equal rights in civil society. It is not true that there exists no lawful social hierarchy.** Let it suffice to refer to the Encyclicals of Leo XIII already cited, especially to that on State powers,[Encycl. *Diuturnum Illud*, June 20, 1881 (Acta Leonis XIII, Vol. I, . 210-22)] and to the other on the Christian Constitution of States.[Encycl. *Immortale Dei*, Nov. 1, 1885 (Acta Leonis XIII, Vol. II, pp. 146-168)] In these documents the Catholic will find the principles of reason and the Faith clearly explained, and these principles will enable him to defend himself against the errors and perils of a Communistic conception of the State. **The enslavement of man despoiled of his rights, the denial of the transcendental origin of the State and its authority, the horrible abuse of public power in the service of a collectivistic terrorism, are the very contrary of all that corresponds with natural ethics and the will of the Creator.** Both man and civil society derive their origin from the Creator, Who has mutually ordained them one to the other. Hence neither can be exempted from their correlative obligations, nor deny or diminish each other's rights. **The Creator Himself has regulated this mutual relationship in its fundamental lines, and it is by an unjust usurpation that Communism arrogates to itself the right to enforce, in place of the divine law based on the immutable principles of truth and charity, a partisan political program which derives from the arbitrary human will and is replete with hate.**

34. In teaching this enlightening doctrine the Church has no other intention than to realize the glad tidings sung by the Angels above the cave of Bethlehem at the Redeemer's birth: "Glory to God . . . and . . . peace to men . . .,"[St. Luke, 11, 14] true peace and true happiness, even here below as far as is possible, in preparation for the happiness of heaven - but to men of good will. This doctrine is equally removed from all extremes of error and all exaggerations of parties or systems which stem from error. It maintains a constant equilibrium of truth and justice, which it vindicates in theory and applies and promotes in practice, bringing into harmony the rights and duties of all parties. **Thus authority is reconciled with liberty, the dignity of the individual with that of the State, the human personality of the subject with the divine delegation of the superior; and in this way a balance is struck between the due dependence and well-ordered love of a man for himself, his family and country, and his love of other families and other peoples, founded on the love of God, the Father of all, their first principle and last end.** The Church does not separate a proper regard for temporal welfare from solicitude for the eternal. If she subordinates the former to the latter according to the words of her divine Founder, "Seek ye first the Kingdom of God and His justice, and all these things shall be added unto you,"[St. Matthew, VI, 33] she is nevertheless so far from being unconcerned with human affairs, so far from hindering civil progress and material advancement, that she actually fosters and promotes them in the most sensible and efficacious manner. Thus even in the sphere of social-economics, although the Church has never proposed a definite technical system, since this is not her field, she has nevertheless clearly outlined the guiding principles

which, while susceptible of varied concrete applications according to the diversified conditions of times and places and peoples, indicate the safe way of securing the happy progress of society.

35. The wisdom and supreme utility of this doctrine are admitted by all who really understand it. **With good reason outstanding statesmen have asserted that, after a study of various social systems, they have found nothing sounder than the principles expounded in the Encyclicals *Rerum Novarum* and *Quadragesimo Anno*. In non-Catholic, even in non-Christian countries, men recognize the great value to society of the social doctrine of the Church.** Thus, scarcely a month ago, an eminent political figure of the Far East, a non-Christian, did not hesitate to affirm publicly that the Church, with her doctrine of peace and Christian brotherhood, is rendering a signal contribution to the difficult task of establishing and maintaining peace among the nations. **Finally, We know from reliable information that flows into this Center of Christendom from all parts of the world, that the Communists themselves, where they are not utterly depraved, recognize the superiority of the social doctrine of the Church, when once explained to them, over the doctrines of their leaders and their teachers. Only those blinded by passion and hatred close their eyes to the light of truth and obstinately struggle against it.**

36. But the enemies of the Church, though forced to acknowledge the wisdom of her doctrine, accuse her of having failed to act in conformity with her principles, and from this conclude to the necessity of seeking other solutions. **The utter falseness and injustice of this accusation is shown by the whole history of Christianity. To refer only to a single typical trait, it was Christianity that first affirmed the real and universal brotherhood of all men of whatever race and condition.** This doctrine she proclaimed by a method, and with an amplitude and conviction, unknown to preceding centuries; and with it she potently contributed to the abolition of slavery. **Not bloody revolution, but the inner force of her teaching made the proud Roman matron see in her slave a sister in Christ.** It is Christianity that adores the Son of God, made Man for love of man, and become not only the "Son of a Carpenter" but Himself a "Carpenter." [cf. St. Matthew, XIII, 55: St. Mark, VI, 3] **It was Christianity that raised manual labor to its true dignity, whereas it had hitherto been so despised that even the moderate Cicero did not hesitate to sum up the general opinion of his time in words of which any modern sociologist would be ashamed: "All artisans are engaged in sordid trades, for there can be nothing ennobling about a workshop."** [Cicero, *De Officiis*, Bk. I, c. 42]

37. Faithful to these principles, the Church has given new life to human society. Under her influence arose prodigious charitable organizations, great guilds of artisans and workingmen of every type. **These guilds, ridiculed as "medieval" by the liberalism of the last century, are today claiming the admiration of our contemporaries in many countries who are endeavoring to revive them in some modern form.** And when other systems hindered her work and raised obstacles to the salutary influence of the Church, she was never done warning them of their error. We need but recall with what constant firmness and energy Our Predecessor, Leo XIII, vindicated for the workingman the right to organize, which the dominant liberalism of the more powerful States relentlessly denied him. Even today the authority of this Church doctrine is greater than it seems; for the influence of ideas in the realm of facts, though invisible and not easily measured, is surely of predominant importance.

38. It may be said in all truth that the Church, like Christ, goes through the centuries doing good to all. **There would be today neither Socialism nor Communism if the rulers of the nations had not scorned the teachings and maternal warnings of the Church.** On the bases of liberalism and laicism they wished to build other social edifices which, powerful and imposing as they seemed at first, all too soon revealed the weakness of their foundations, and today are crumbling one after another before our eyes, as everything must crumble that is not grounded on the one corner stone which is Christ Jesus.

39. This, Venerable Brethren, is the doctrine of the Church, **which alone in the social as in all other fields can offer real light and assure salvation in the face of Communistic ideology.** But this doctrine must be consistently reduced to practice in every-day life, according to the admonition of St. James the Apostle: "**Be ye doers of the word and not hearers only, deceiving your own selves.**" [St. James, I, 22] The most urgent need of the present day is therefore the energetic and timely application of remedies which will effectively ward off the catastrophe that daily grows more threatening. **We cherish the firm hope that the fanaticism with which the sons of darkness work day and night at their materialistic and atheistic propaganda will at least serve the holy purpose of stimulating the sons of light to a like and even greater zeal for the honor of the Divine Majesty.**

40. What then must be done, what remedies must be employed to defend Christ and Christian civilization from this pernicious enemy? As a father in the midst of his family, We should like to speak quite intimately of those duties which the great struggle of our day imposes on all the children of the Church; and We would address Our paternal admonition even to those sons who have strayed far from her.

41. **As in all the stormy periods of the history of the Church, the fundamental remedy today lies in a sincere renewal of private and public life according to the principles of the Gospel by all those who belong to the Fold of Christ, that they may be in truth the salt of the earth to preserve human society from total corruption.**

42. With heart deeply grateful to the Father of Light, from Whom descends "every best gift and every perfect gift," [St. James, I, 17] We see on all sides consoling signs of this spiritual renewal. We see it not only in so many singularly chosen souls who in these last years have been elevated to the sublime heights of sanctity, and in so many others who with generous hearts are making their way towards the same luminous goal, but also in the new flowering of a deep and practical piety in all classes of society even the most cultured, as We pointed out in Our recent Motu Proprio *In multis solaciis* of October 28 last, on the occasion of the reorganization of the Pontifical Academy of Sciences. [A.A.S., vol. XXVIII (1936); pp. 421424]

43. Nevertheless We cannot deny that there is still much to be done in the way of spiritual renovation. Even in Catholic countries there are still too many who are Catholics hardly more than in name. **There are too many who fulfill more or less faithfully the more essential obligations of the religion they boast of professing, but have no desire of knowing it better, of deepening their inward conviction, and still less of bringing into conformity with the external gloss the inner splendor of a right and unsullied conscience, that**

recognizes and performs all its duties under the eye of God. We know how much Our Divine Savior detested this empty pharisaic show, He Who wished that all should adore the Father "in spirit and in truth." [St. John, IV, 23] **The Catholic who does not live really and sincerely according to the Faith he professes will not long be master of himself in these days when the winds of strife and persecution blow so fiercely, but will be swept away defenseless in this new deluge which threatens the world. And thus, while he is preparing his own ruin, he is exposing to ridicule the very name of Christian.**

44. And here We wish, Venerable Brethren, to insist more particularly on two teachings of Our Lord which have a special bearing on the present condition of the human race: **detachment from earthly goods and the precept of charity.** "Blessed are the poor in spirit" were the first words that fell from the lips of the Divine Master in His sermon on the mount. [St. Matthew, V, 3] This lesson is more than ever necessary in these days of materialism athirst for the goods and pleasures of this earth. **All Christians, rich or poor, must keep their eye fixed on heaven, remembering that "we have not here a lasting city, but we seek one that is to come."** [Hebrews, XIII, 14] The rich should not place their happiness in things of earth nor spend their best efforts in the acquisition of them. Rather, considering themselves only as stewards of their earthly goods, let them be mindful of the account they must render of them to their Lord and Master, and value them as precious means that God has put into their hands for doing good; let them not fail, besides, to distribute of their abundance to the poor, according to the evangelical precept. [St. Luke, XI, 41] Otherwise there shall be verified of them and their riches the harsh condemnation of St. James the Apostle: **"Go to now, ye rich men; weep and howl in your miseries which shall come upon you. Your riches are corrupted, and your garments are moth-eaten; your gold and silver is cankered; and the rust of them shall be for a testimony against you and shall eat your flesh like fire. You have stored up to yourselves wrath against the last days. . ."** [St. James, V, 1-3]

45. But the poor too, in their turn, while engaged, according to the laws of charity and justice, in acquiring the necessities of life and also in bettering their condition, should always remain "poor in spirit," [St. Matthew, V, 3] and hold spiritual goods in higher esteem than earthly property and pleasures. Let them remember that the world will never be able to rid itself of misery, sorrow and tribulation, which are the portion even of those who seem most prosperous. Patience, therefore, is the need of all, that Christian patience which comforts the heart with the divine assurance of eternal happiness. "Be patient, therefore, brethren," we repeat with St. James, "until the coming of the Lord. Behold the husbandman waiteth for the precious fruit of the earth, patiently bearing until he receive the early and the later rain. Be you therefore also patient and strengthen your hearts, for the coming of the Lord is at hand." [St. James, V, 7, 8] Only thus will be fulfilled the consoling promise of the Lord: **"Blessed are the poor!"** These words are no vain consolation, a promise as empty as those of the Communists. They are the words of life, pregnant with a sovereign reality. They are fully verified here on earth, as well as in eternity. **Indeed, how many of the poor, in anticipation of the Kingdom of Heaven already proclaimed their own: "for yours is the Kingdom of Heaven,"** [St. Luke, VI, 20] **find in these words a happiness which so many of the wealthy, uneasy with their riches and ever thirsting for more, look for in vain!**

46. Still more important as a remedy for the evil we are considering, or certainly more directly calculated to cure it, is the precept of charity. **We have in mind that Christian charity, "patient and kind,"** [I Corinthians, XIII, 4] **which avoids all semblance of demeaning paternalism, and all ostentation; that charity which from the very beginning of Christianity won to Christ the poorest of the poor, the slaves.** And We are grateful to all those members of charitable associations, from the conferences of St. Vincent de Paul to the recent great relief organizations, which are perseveringly practicing the spiritual and corporal works of mercy. **The more the working men and the poor realize what the spirit of love animated by the virtue of Christ is doing for them, the more readily will they abandon the false persuasion that Christianity has lost its efficacy and that the Church stands on the side of the exploiters of their labor.**

47. **But when on the one hand We see thousands of the needy, victims of real misery for various reasons beyond their control, and on the other so many round about them who spend huge sums of money on useless things and frivolous amusement, We cannot fail to remark with sorrow not only that justice is poorly observed, but that the precept of charity also is not sufficiently appreciated, is not a vital thing in daily life.** We desire therefore, Venerable Brethren, that this divine precept, this precious mark of identification left by Christ to His true disciples, be ever more fully explained by pen and word of mouth; this precept which teaches us to see in those who suffer Christ Himself, and would have us love our brothers as Our Divine Savior has loved us, that is, even at the sacrifice of ourselves, and, if need be, of our very life. Let all then frequently meditate on those words of the final sentence, so consoling yet so terrifying, which the Supreme Judge will pronounce on the day of the Last Judgment: "**Come, ye blessed of my Father . . . for I was hungry and you gave me to eat; I was thirsty and you gave me to drink . . . Amen, I say to you, as long as you did it to one of these my least brethren you did it to me.**" [St. Matthew, XXV, 34-40] And the reverse: "**Depart from me, you cursed, into everlasting fire . . . for I was hungry and you gave me not to eat; I was thirsty and you gave me not to drink . . . Amen, I say to you, as long as you did it not to one of these least. neither did you do it to me.**" [St. Matthew, XXV, 41-45]

48. **To be sure of eternal life, therefore, and to be able to help the poor effectively, it is imperative to return to a more moderate way of life, to renounce the joys, often sinful, which the world today holds out in such abundance; to forget self for love of the neighbor. There is a divine regenerating force in this "new precept" (as Christ called it) of Christian charity.** [St. John, XIII, 34] **Its faithful observance will pour into the heart an inner peace which the world knows not, and will finally cure the ills which oppress humanity.**

49. But charity will never be true charity unless it takes justice into constant account. The Apostle teaches that "he that loveth his neighbor hath fulfilled the law" and he gives the reason: "**For, Thou shalt not commit adultery, Thou shalt not kill, Thou shalt not steal . . . and if there be any other commandment, it is comprised in this word: Thou shalt love thy neighbor as thyself.**" [Romans, XIII, 8, 9] According to the Apostle, then, all the commandments, including those which are of strict justice, as those which forbid us to kill or to steal, may be reduced to the single precept of true charity.

From this it follows that a "charity" which deprives the workingman of the salary to which he has a strict title in justice, is not charity at all, but only its empty name and hollow semblance. The wage-earner is not to receive as alms what is his due in justice. **And let no one attempt with trifling charitable donations to exempt himself from the great duties imposed by justice.** Both justice and charity often dictate obligations touching on the same subject-matter, but under different aspects; and the very dignity of the workingman makes him justly and acutely sensitive to the duties of others in his regard.

50. **Therefore We turn again in a special way to you, Christian employers and industrialists, whose problem is often so difficult for the reason that you are saddled with the heavy heritage of an unjust economic regime whose ruinous influence has been felt through many generations. We bid you be mindful of your responsibility.** It is unfortunately true that the manner of acting in certain Catholic circles has done much to shake the faith of the working-classes in the religion of Jesus Christ. These groups have refused to understand that Christian charity demands the recognition of certain rights due to the workingman, which the Church has explicitly acknowledged. What is to be thought of the action of those Catholic employers who in one place succeeded in preventing the reading of Our Encyclical *Quadragesimo Anno* in their local churches? Or of those Catholic industrialists who even to this day have shown themselves hostile to a labor movement that We Ourselves recommended? **Is it not deplorable that the right of private property defended by the Church should so often have been used as a weapon to defraud the workingman of his just salary and his social rights?**

51. In reality, besides commutative justice, there is also social justice with its own set obligations, from which neither employers nor workingmen can escape. Now it is of the very essence of social justice to demand for each individual all that is necessary for the common good. But just as in the living organism it is impossible to provide for the good of the whole unless each single part and each individual member is given what it needs for the exercise of its proper functions, so it is impossible to care for the social organism and the good of society as a unit unless each single part and each individual member - that is to say, each individual man in the dignity of his human personality - is supplied with all that is necessary for the exercise of his social functions. **If social justice be satisfied, the result will be an intense activity in economic life as a whole, pursued in tranquillity and order.** This activity will be proof of the health of the social body, just as the health of the human body is recognized in the undisturbed regularity and perfect efficiency of the whole organism.

52. **But social justice cannot be said to have been satisfied as long as workingmen are denied a salary that will enable them to secure proper sustenance for themselves and for their families; as long as they are denied the opportunity of acquiring a modest fortune and forestalling the plague of universal pauperism; as long as they cannot make suitable provision through public or private insurance for old age, for periods of illness and unemployment.** In a word, to repeat what has been said in Our Encyclical *Quadragesimo Anno*: "Then only will the economic and social order be soundly established and attain its ends, when it offers, to all and to each, all those goods which the wealth and resources of nature, technical science and the corporate organization of social affairs can give. These goods should be sufficient to supply all necessities and reasonable comforts, and to uplift men to that higher standard of life which, provided it be used with prudence, is not only not a

hindrance but is of singular help to virtue."*[Encycl. Quadragesimo Anno*, May 15, 1931 (A.A.S., Vol. XXIII, 1931, p. 202)]

53. It happens all too frequently, however, under the salary system, that individual employers are helpless to ensure justice unless, with a view to its practice, they organize institutions the object of which is to prevent competition incompatible with fair treatment for the workers. Where this is true, it is the duty of contractors and employers to support and promote such necessary organizations as normal instruments enabling them to fulfill their obligations of justice. But the laborers too must be mindful of their duty to love and deal fairly with their employers, and persuade themselves that there is no better means of safeguarding their own interests.

54. If, therefore, We consider the whole structure of economic life, as We have already pointed out in Our Encyclical *Quadragesimo Anno*, the reign of mutual collaboration between justice and charity in social-economic relations can only be achieved by a body of professional and inter professional organizations, built on solidly Christian foundations, working together to effect, under forms adapted to different places and circumstances, what has been called the Corporation .

55. To give to this social activity a greater efficacy, it is necessary to promote a wider study of social problems in the light of the doctrine of the Church and under the aegis of her constituted authority. If the manner of acting of some Catholics in the social-economic field has left much to be desired, this has often come about because they have not known and pondered sufficiently the teachings of the Sovereign Pontiffs on these questions. Therefore, it is of the utmost importance to foster in all classes of society an intensive program of social education adapted to the varying degrees of intellectual culture. It is necessary with all care and diligence to procure the widest possible diffusion of the teachings of the Church, even among the working-classes. The minds of men must be illuminated with the sure light of Catholic teaching, and their wills must be drawn to follow and apply it as the norm of right living in the conscientious fulfillment of their manifold social duties. Thus they will oppose that incoherence and discontinuity in Christian life which We have many times lamented. For there are some who, while exteriorly faithful to the practice of their religion, yet in the field of labor and industry, in the professions, trade and business, permit a deplorable cleavage in their conscience, and live a life too little in conformity with the clear principles of justice and Christian charity. Such lives are a scandal to the weak, and to the malicious a pretext to discredit the Church.

56. In this renewal the Catholic Press can play a prominent part. Its foremost duty is to foster in various attractive ways an ever better understanding of social doctrine. It should, too, supply accurate and complete information on the activity of the enemy and the means of resistance which have been found most effective in various quarters. It should offer useful suggestions and warn against the insidious deceptions with which Communists endeavor, all too successfully, to attract even men of good faith.

57. On this point We have already insisted in Our Allocution of May 12th of last year, but We believe it to be a duty of special urgency, Venerable Brethren, to call your attention to it once again. In the beginning Communism showed

itself for what it was in all its perversity; but very soon it realized that it was thus alienating the people. It has therefore changed its tactics, and strives to entice the multitudes by trickery of various forms, hiding its real designs behind ideas that in themselves are good and attractive. Thus, aware of the universal desire for peace, the leaders of Communism pretend to be the most zealous promoters and propagandists in the movement for world amity. Yet at the same time they stir up a class-warfare which causes rivers of blood to flow, and, realizing that their system offers no internal guarantee of peace, they have recourse to unlimited armaments. Under various names which do not suggest Communism, they establish organizations and periodicals with the sole purpose of carrying their ideas into quarters otherwise inaccessible. They try perfidiously to worm their way even into professedly Catholic and religious organizations. Again, without receding an inch from their subversive principles, they invite Catholics to collaborate with them in the realm of so-called humanitarianism and charity; and at times even make proposals that are in perfect harmony with the Christian spirit and the doctrine of the Church. Elsewhere they carry their hypocrisy so far as to encourage the belief that Communism, in countries where faith and culture are more strongly entrenched, will assume another and much milder form. It will not interfere with the practice of religion. It will respect liberty of conscience. **There are some even who refer to certain changes recently introduced into soviet legislation as a proof that Communism is about to abandon its program of war against God.**

58. See to it, Venerable Brethren, that the Faithful do not allow themselves to be deceived! Communism is intrinsically wrong, and no one who would save Christian civilization may collaborate with it in any undertaking whatsoever. Those who permit themselves to be deceived into lending their aid towards the triumph of Communism in their own country, will be the first to fall victims of their error. And the greater the antiquity and grandeur of the Christian civilization in the regions where Communism successfully penetrates, so much more devastating will be the hatred displayed by the godless.

59. But "unless the Lord keep the city, he watcheth in vain that keepeth it." [Psalms, CXXVI, 1] And so, as a final and most efficacious remedy, We recommend, Venerable Brethren, that in your dioceses you use the most practical means to foster and intensify the spirit of prayer joined with Christian penance. When the Apostles asked the Savior why they had been unable to drive the evil spirit from a demoniac, Our Lord answered: "This kind is not cast out but by prayer and fasting." [St. Matthew, XVII, 20] So, too, the evil which today torments humanity can be conquered only by a world-wide crusade of prayer and penance. **We ask especially the Contemplative Orders, men and women, to redouble their prayers and sacrifices to obtain from heaven efficacious aid for the Church in the present struggle. Let them implore also the powerful intercession of the Immaculate Virgin who, having crushed the head of the serpent of old, remains the sure protectress and invincible "Help of Christians."**

60. To apply the remedies thus briefly indicated to the task of saving the world as We have traced it above, Jesus Christ, our Divine King, has chosen priests as the first-line ministers and messengers of His gospel. Theirs is the duty, assigned to them by a special vocation, under the direction of their Bishops and in filial obedience to the Vicar of Christ on earth, of keeping alight in the world the torch of Faith, and of filling the hearts of the Faithful with that supernatural

trust which has aided the Church to fight and win so many other battles in the name of Christ: "This is the victory which overcometh the world, our Faith."^{[I} Epist. St. John, V, 4]

61. To priests in a special way We recommend anew the oft-repeated counsel of Our Predecessor, Leo XIII, to go to the workingman. We make this advice Our own, and faithful to the teachings of Jesus Christ and His Church, We thus complete it: "Go to the workingman, especially where he is poor; and in general, go to the poor." The poor are obviously more exposed than others to the wiles of agitators who, taking advantage of their extreme need, kindle their hearts to envy of the rich and urge them to seize by force what fortune seems to have denied them unjustly. If the priest will not go to the workingman and to the poor, to warn them or to disabuse them of prejudice and false theory, they will become an easy prey for the apostles of Communism .

62. Indisputably much has been done in this direction, especially after the publication of the Encyclicals *Rerum Novarum* and *Quadragesimo Anno*. We are happy to voice Our paternal approval of the zealous pastoral activity manifested by so many Bishops and priests who have with due prudence and caution been planning and applying new methods of apostolate more adapted to modern needs. But for the solution of our present problem, all this effort is still inadequate. **When our country is in danger, everything not strictly necessary, everything not bearing directly on the urgent matter of unified defense, takes second place. So we must act in today's crisis. Every other enterprise, however attractive and helpful, must yield before the vital need of protecting the very foundation of the Faith and of Christian civilization.** Let our parish priests, therefore, while providing of course for the normal needs of the Faithful, dedicate the better part of their endeavors and their zeal to winning back the laboring masses to Christ and to His Church. **Let them work to infuse the Christian spirit into quarters where it is least at home. The willing response of the masses, and results far exceeding their expectations, will not fail to reward them for their strenuous pioneer labor.** This has been and continues to be our experience in Rome and in other capitals, where zealous parish communities are being formed as new churches are built in the suburban districts, and real miracles are being worked in the conversion of people whose hostility to religion has been due solely to the fact that they did not know it.

63. But the most efficacious means of apostolate among the poor and lowly is the priest's example, the practice of all those sacerdotal virtues which We have described in Our Encyclical *Ad Catholici Sacerdotii*.^[Dec. 20, 1935, A.A.S., vol. XXVIII (1936), pp. 5-53] **Especially needful, however, for the present situation is the shining example of a life which is humble, poor and disinterested, in imitation of a Divine Master Who could say to the world with divine simplicity: "The foxes have holes and the birds of the air nests, but the Son of Man hath not where to lay His head."**^[St. Matthew, VIII, 20] A priest who is really poor and disinterested in the Gospel sense may work among his flock marvels recalling a Saint Vincent de Paul, a Cure of Ars, a Cottolengo, a Don Bosco and so many others; **while an avaricious and selfish priest, as We have noted in the above mentioned Encyclical, even though he should not plunge with Judas to the abyss of treason, will never be more than empty "sounding brass" and useless "tinkling cymbal."**^[I Corinthians, XIII, 1] Too often, indeed, he will be a hindrance rather than an instrument of grace in the midst of his people.

Furthermore, where a secular priest or religious is obliged by his office to administer temporal property, let him remember that he is not only to observe scrupulously all that charity and justice prescribe, but that he has a special obligation to conduct himself in very truth as a father of the poor.

64. After this appeal to the clergy, We extend Our paternal invitation to Our beloved sons among the laity who are doing battle in the ranks of Catholic Action. On another occasion [May 12, 1936] We have called this movement so dear to Our heart "a particularly providential assistance" in the work of the Church during these troublous times. Catholic Action is in effect a *social apostolate* also, inasmuch as its object is to spread the Kingdom of Jesus Christ not only among individuals, but also in families and in society. **It must, therefore, make it a chief aim to train its members with special care and to prepare them to fight the battles of the Lord.** This task of formation, now more urgent and indispensable than ever, which must always precede direct action in the field, will assuredly be served by study-circles, conferences, lecture-courses and the various other activities undertaken with a view to making known the Christian solution of the social problem.

65. The militant leaders of Catholic Action thus properly prepared and armed, will be the first and immediate apostles of their fellow workmen. They will be an invaluable aid to the priest in carrying the torch of truth, and in relieving grave spiritual and material suffering, in many sectors where inveterate anti-clerical prejudice or deplorable religious indifference has proved a constant obstacle to the pastoral activity of God's ministers. In this way they will collaborate, under the direction of especially qualified priests, in that work of spiritual aid to the laboring classes on which We set so much store, because it is the means best calculated to save these, Our beloved children, from the snares of Communism.

66. In addition to this individual apostolate which, however useful and efficacious, often goes unheralded, Catholic Action must organize propaganda on a large scale to disseminate knowledge of the fundamental principles on which, according to the Pontifical documents, a Christian Social Order must build.

67. Ranged with Catholic Action are the groups which We have been happy to call its auxiliary forces. With paternal affection We exhort these valuable organizations also to dedicate themselves to the great mission of which We have been treating, a cause which today transcends all others in vital importance.

68. We are thinking likewise of those associations of workmen, farmers, technicians, doctors, employers, students and others of like character, groups of men and women who live in the same cultural atmosphere and share the same way of life. Precisely these groups and organizations are destined to introduce into society that order which We have envisaged in Our Encyclical *Quadragesimo Anno*, and thus to spread in the vast and various fields of culture and labor the recognition of the Kingdom of Christ.

69. Even where the State, because of changed social and economic conditions, has felt obliged to intervene directly in order to aid and regulate such organizations by special legislative enactments, supposing always the necessary respect for liberty and private initiative, Catholic Action may not urge the circumstance as an excuse for abandoning the field. Its members should contribute prudently and intelligently to the study of the problems of the hour in the light of Catholic doctrine. They should loyally and generously participate in

the formation of the new institutions, bringing to them the Christian spirit which is the basic principle of order wherever men work together in fraternal harmony.

70. **Here We should like to address a particularly affectionate word to Our Catholic workingmen, young and old. They have been given, perhaps as a reward for their often heroic fidelity in these trying days, a noble and an arduous mission. Under the guidance of their Bishops and priests, they are to bring back to the Church and to God those immense multitudes of their brother-workmen who, because they were not understood or treated with the respect to which they were entitled, in bitterness have strayed far from God.** Let Catholic workingmen show these their wandering brethren by word and example that the Church is a tender Mother to all those who labor and suffer, and that she has never failed, and never will fail, in her sacred maternal duty of protecting her children. If this mission, which must be fulfilled in mines, in factories, in shops, wherever they may be laboring, should at times require great sacrifices, Our workmen will remember that the Savior of the world has given them an example not only of toil but of self immolation.

71. To all Our children, finally, of every social rank and every nation, to every religious and lay organization in the Church, We make another and more urgent appeal for union. Many times Our paternal heart has been saddened by the divergencies - often idle in their causes, always tragic in their consequences - which array in opposing camps the sons of the same Mother Church. **Thus it is that the radicals, who are not so very numerous, profiting by this discord are able to make it more acute, and end by pitting Catholics one against the other.** In view of the events of the past few months, Our warning must seem superfluous. We repeat it nevertheless once more, for those who have not understood, or perhaps do not desire to understand. Those who make a practice of spreading dissension among Catholics assume a terrible responsibility before God and the Church.

72. But in this battle joined by the powers of darkness against the very idea of Divinity, it is Our fond hope that, besides the host which glories in the name of Christ, all those - and they comprise the overwhelming majority of mankind, - who still believe in God and pay Him homage may take a decisive part. We therefore renew the invitation extended to them five years ago in Our Encyclical *Caritate Christi*, invoking their loyal and hearty collaboration "**in order to ward off from mankind the great danger that threatens all alike.**" Since, as We then said, "**belief in God is the unshakable foundation of all social order and of all responsibility on earth, it follows that all those who do not want anarchy and terrorism ought to take energetic steps to prevent the enemies of religion from attaining the goal they have so brazenly proclaimed to the world.**" [Encycl. *Caritate Christi*, May 3, 1932 (A.A.S., vol. XXIV, p. 184)]

73. Such is the positive task, embracing at once theory and practice, which the Church undertakes in virtue of the mission, confided to her by Christ, of constructing a Christian society, **and, in our own times, of resisting unto victory the attacks of Communism.** It is the duty of the Christian State to concur actively in this spiritual enterprise of the Church, aiding her with the means at its command, which although they be external devices, have nonetheless for their prime object the good of souls.

74. **This means that all diligence should be exercised by States to prevent within their territories the ravages of an anti-God campaign which shakes**

society to its very foundations. For there can be no authority on earth unless the authority of the Divine Majesty be recognized; no oath will bind which is not sworn in the Name of the Living God. We repeat what We have said with frequent insistence in the past, especially in Our Encyclical *Caritate Christi*: "How can any contract be maintained, and what value can any treaty have, in which every guarantee of conscience is lacking? And how can there be talk of guarantees of conscience when all faith in God and all fear of God have vanished? Take away this basis, and with it all moral law falls, and there is no remedy left to stop the gradual but inevitable destruction of peoples, families, the State, civilization itself." [Encycl. *Caritate Christi*, May 3, 1932 (A.S., vol. XX-IV, 1932, p. 190)]

75. It must likewise be the special care of the State to create those material conditions of life without which an orderly society cannot exist. The State must take every measure necessary to supply employment, particularly for the heads of families and for the young. **To achieve this end demanded by the pressing needs of the common welfare, the wealthy classes must be induced to assume those burdens without which human society cannot be saved nor they themselves remain secure.** However, measures taken by the State with this end in view ought to be of such a nature that they will really affect those who actually possess more than their share of capital resources, and who continue to accumulate them to the grievous detriment of others.

76. The State itself, mindful of its responsibility before God and society, should be a model of prudence and sobriety in the administration of the commonwealth. Today more than ever the acute world crisis demands that those who dispose of immense funds, built up on the sweat and toil of millions, keep constantly and singly in mind the common good. State functionaries and all employees are obliged in conscience to perform their duties faithfully and unselfishly, imitating the brilliant example of distinguished men of the past and of our own day, who with unremitting labor sacrificed their all for the good of their country. In international trade-relations let all means be sedulously employed for the removal of those artificial barriers to economic life which are the effects of distrust and hatred. All must remember that the peoples of the earth form but one family in God.

77. At the same time the State must allow the Church full liberty to fulfill her divine and spiritual mission, and this in itself will be an effectual contribution to the rescue of nations from the dread torment of the present hour. **Everywhere today there is an anxious appeal to moral and spiritual forces; and rightly so, for the evil we must combat is at its origin primarily an evil of the spiritual order. From this polluted source the monstrous emanations of the communistic system flow with satanic logic.** Now, the Catholic Church is undoubtedly preeminent among the moral and religious forces of today. Therefore the very good of humanity demands that her work be allowed to proceed unhindered.

78. Those who act otherwise, and at the same time fondly pretend to attain their objective with purely political or economic means, are in the grip of a dangerous error. **When religion is banished from the school, from education and from public life, when the representatives of Christianity and its sacred rites are held up to ridicule, are we not really fostering the materialism which is the fertile soil of Communism? Neither force, however well organized it be, nor**

earthly ideals however lofty or noble, can control a movement whose roots lie in the excessive esteem for the goods of this world.

79. We trust that those rulers of nations, who are at all aware of the extreme danger threatening every people today, may be more and more convinced of their supreme duty not to hinder the Church in the fulfillment of her mission. This is the more imperative since, while this mission has in view man's happiness in heaven, it cannot but promote his true felicity in time.

80. We cannot conclude this Encyclical Letter without addressing some words to those of Our children who are more or less tainted with the Communist plague. We earnestly exhort them to hear the voice of their loving Father. **We pray the Lord to enlighten them that they may abandon the slippery path which will precipitate one and all to ruin and catastrophe, and that they recognize that Jesus Christ, Our Lord, is their only Savior: "For there is no other name under heaven given to man, whereby we must be saved."** [Acts, IV, 12]

81. To hasten the advent of that "peace of Christ in the kingdom of Christ" [Encycl. *Ubi Arcano*, Dec. 23, 1922 (A.A.S., Vol. XIV, 1922, p.691)] so ardently desired by all, We place the vast campaign of the Church against world Communism under the standard of St. Joseph, her mighty Protector. He belongs to the working-class, and he bore the burdens of poverty for himself and the Holy Family, whose tender and vigilant head he was. To him was entrusted the Divine Child when Herod loosed his assassins against Him. In a life of faithful performance of everyday duties, he left an example for all those who must gain their bread by the toil of their hands. He won for himself the title of "The Just," serving thus as a living model of that Christian justice which should reign in social life.

82. With eyes lifted on high, our Faith sees the new heavens and the new earth described by Our first Predecessor, St. Peter. [II Epist. St. Peter, III, 13; cf. Isaias, LXV, 17 and LXVI, 22; Apoc., XXI, 1] **While the promises of the false prophets of this earth melt away in blood and tears, the great apocalyptic prophecy of the Redeemer shines forth in heavenly splendor: "Behold, I make all things new."** [Apoc. XXI, 5] Venerable Brethren, nothing remains but to raise Our paternal hands to call down upon you, upon your clergy and people, upon the whole Catholic family, the Apostolic Benediction.

Given at Rome, at St. Peter's, on the feast of St. Joseph, patron of the universal Church, on the 19th of March, 1937, the 16th year of our Pontificate.

PIUS XI

Source: www.vatican.va (© Libreria Editrice Vaticana)

XVIII. FR. MALACHI MARTIN: CONVERSATION OF EARLY 1990 IN HIS NEW YORK APARTMENT WITH A YOUNG CANADIAN BY NAME OF BERNARD JANSEN: SEQUENCE ABOUT FÁTIMA, VATICAN II, AND WORLD COMMUNISM.

(Source: Youtube Channel “JuanMaria2012”; a 5-part-series entitled “Malachi Martin The Storm Breaks”; complete parts 2 – 5. Transcript by this author; all personal names and technical terms double-checked. – Words not picked up from the audio are indicated by question-marks in square brackets.)



October 13, 1917, Fátima, Portugal: Some 75,000 people, Catholic believers and non-believers alike, watch in awe and amazement a giant miracle in the sky, later to be known as the Miracle of the Sun, as had been predicted in advance by Saint Mary in one of a series of her apparitions during the year 1917. Father Malachi Martin, in another talk presented on the Youtube channel "MalachiMartinAudio" as the 5-part series "Malachi Martin: Fatima and the new world order", explains: "Well, what happened there was that 75,000 people gathered in a field on October 13, 1917. 75,000 people from all over Europe, some from the United States, but mainly from Europe, and there were photographers and journalists from all over Europe, and cameramen. And precisely 12 o'clock the sun started dancing in the sky, there's no way of denying this because so many people saw it and so many photographs were taken. Previously it had been raining, and everybody's clothes were wet. All of a sudden every bit of clothing was dry as if it had just come back from the cleaner's, dry and fresh and smelled beautiful. It is thoroughly attested by people who don't believe in God, who have no belief in the Catholic Church, they just saw it happen. And then the sun started bending down as if to shoot against the crowd, in all its colours, and then retiring again, and these gyrations went on for one quarter of an hour, and then suddenly they all stopped. And the sun shone normally, in its limits. And that was the end of it all. That was the Miracle of Fátima."

Fr. Martin: You know, if you allow me, I think we should get an overview of this, first of all.

Jansen: Why don't we do that.

Fr. Martin: The overview was given by the one person, apart from Jesus Christ, who could give it to us, and that was the Blessed Virgin Mary. She did appear six times in 1917 – and the last time was October 13th, 1917 – to three children and to 75,000 people. There was a miracle, the miracle of Fátima, at noon time at Fátima in Portugal; Fátima is a small little hamlet 75 miles from Lisbon, the capital of Portugal. Let's not delay for the moment, we can go back to it later on the Miracle of the Sun because it's *the* paramount miracle of the 20th century, perhaps of five centuries. But she did convey three secrets to those children and told them not to publish them yet, but to convey them to the local bishop. And one of those secrets has become the famous Third Secret. Now, that Third Secret was conveyed, or written, on one sheet of paper, to the Pope finally, in the

1950s, about 1954 to 1957; the dates are always discussed by people. We know now the general lines of that secret, in effect we know in detail, but the one outstanding thing was: Our Lady said that the Pope of 1960 had to open the envelope and read this secret and then do what She said. And the secret, apparently, on the authority of the Pope, on the authority of Cardinal Ratzinger, on the authority of many people, said the following: It was an either-or; it was an ultimatum. The world is gone so far, by this time, the Secret said, that unless Russia is converted by being consecrated to My Immaculate Heart, then faith will disappear from nations and continents, cardinals and bishops and priests will fall like leaves into hell; in other words, it was an either-or. But if the Pope, in union with the bishops and the Church, in 1960 consecrated Russia – just Russia, the Soviet Union, the USSR – to My Immaculate Heart, then Russia will be converted and faith will be restored. Well, the sad aftermath of it is this that Pope John XXIII, whom I knew, did open the Secret, and he opened it privately first of all in Castel Gandolfo in August 1959. And then, in 1960, he opened it in the presence of several cardinals, Cardinal Bea was there, my Cardinal, and with two Portuguese interpreters. And reading it and finding out that he was supposed to publicly, in union with all the bishops – and they were gathering into Rome, by the way, two years later –, he was supposed to consecrate Russia to the Immaculate Heart of Mary and declare it to be a source of evil, but would be converted. He decided that Nikita Khrushchev, who was the strong man in Russia at that time, would take this as an act of war. Now, do you know, you may not know, that under Nikita Khrushchev, between 1958 and 1963, the most virulent anti-religious persecution took place in the Soviet Union.

Jansen: It's interesting, I do have family in Russia, and what a lot of people don't know is that the persecution under Khrushchev was even more severe than that of Stalin.

Fr. Martin: Much more severe. Much more severe. Well, so John said, "I can't do that. I can't because Nikita Khrushchev then will stop talking to me." At that time he was talking to John because John was wondering, he wanted observers from the Russian Orthodox Church to be present at his Council. So at that meeting of cardinals, he took a sheet of paper and wrote on it, „Questo," meaning the letter, „non è per nostri tempi," it is not for our time; put it back in the box, the letter, and closed it. He refused the mandate of Our Lady; for his own good geopolitical reasons. I think it was shortsighted, and above all, I think, he disobeyed Our Lady. But, I'm a simple priest, I'm not Pope; that's my judgment. When Paul VI came in, he read the letter and decided to do nothing about it. John Paul I read the letter, but he had only 34 days to live. John Paul II, who read the letter at the beginning of his Pontificate in '78, October '78, and put it aside, and he only took it out again in 1981 when he lay in Gemelli Hospital wounded, and then he suddenly realised that indeed Our Lady had saved him on May 13th from the bullets of a man named Ali Ağca, the assassin, and he sent again for the letter and all the documents and Lucia's, Sister Lucia's, writing, she's the only surviving child, and then he sent a message over to the Bishop of Leiria and to Lucia, asking the advice about one point, and then in 1984 he consecrated the entire world –

Jansen: – which is not what Our Lady asked for.

Fr. Martin: No. He made a special mention of Russia saying that peoples, meaning the Russians, who still await their special consecration: In other words, the consecration hasn't been done. The point I'm making to you, Bernard, is that

Our Lady's either-or is in action. She said *unless* this is done; unless it's made public to all nations and all governments, all people, then faith will disappear from nations and continents. There will be huge catastrophes; many people will die; but in the end, My Immaculate Heart will save people. So, if you want an overview of what's happened, take it like this: how come, or take an image: I think it was in 1966, suddenly all electric power disappeared from the North-East corner of the United States. The reservoir filled with 'juice', as we say in the United States, suddenly was emptied. Nobody has as yet explained how it all disappeared like that. Similarly, if you look at the Church, between 1965 and 1975, suddenly Catholicity disappeared. Suddenly, priests left, nuns left. Suddenly, bizarre ceremonies took place. Suddenly, every practice, like devotion of the Sacred Heart, to the Immaculate Heart of Mary, confraternities, sodalities, sending to the [?] work, pilgrimages, benedictions of the Blessed Sacrament, the habit of visiting the Blessed Sacrament, children's first Holy Communion, marriage, abortion, contraception, homosexuality, everything was turned upside down, suddenly. The reservoir of Catholicism suddenly – shuu – was sucked out, disappeared. And the only theological way you can look at that – theology, not historical in the secular sense – is that God withdrew Grace. *God withdrew Grace*, sanctifying Grace, without which you can't be Catholic. That's the overall view of what happened. And that's why Pope John Paul II in Fulda in 1980, when confronted with very fervent German Catholics, they said, "Holy Father, why don't you renew the Church?" He said, "I can't. Renewal is impossible until Our Lady comes." He was quoting the echo of that letter. And then he put his hands in his pockets and pulled out his rosary and said, "That's your only weapon, the rosary. Pray! Pray! And do nothing as to pray!" So his mind from the very beginning was made up: I cannot renew my Church. It can't be renewed because renewal is only possible through Grace. You can't do it by organisation, you can't do it by any human means. That is his attitude, and that's the explanation of it. Now, on the other hand, if you descend into details, you will find that for instance the big, big surrender on the part of the Church – by the way, Bernard, when I say, "The Church", I'm always talking about *churchmen*, there are two things to be distinguished: the Church essentially is the Mystical Body of Jesus – what is that? what does it mean? – it means this: that there is a body, there is a group of people, on earth and in Heaven, who are in the state of Grace; and being in the state of Grace, that is the Church without spot or wrinkle; that belongs to Jesus, completely. There is a body of people in purgatory, who are being purged and cleansed, by Grace, and they also belong to the Mystical Body, that's the Church Suffering, the Church Militant, and the Church Triumphant. That's the Church, essentially. It has a visible organisation, an institutional organisation called Roman Catholicism, based in Rome; the first Bishop of Rome, the Pope; and then consisting of dioceses run by bishops, all of them are supposed to be subject to the Pope, to obey the Petrine authority of the keys, the keys of St. Peter.

Jansen: And we will be using the term 'Church' in line with the institution of Church.

Fr. Martin: That's right. Whenever we speak about 'the Church', we are talking about the institutional organisation, not that pure and holy body of people. Nowadays, of course, the numbers who really belong there, that's another question, nobody can say. But we can go back to that question at another moment in this talk. Now, the Church itself, if you examine its progress, say since 1930, you will find that the seed-bed of all the errors that have plagued the Church and do plague the Church today, began then, they began then. Now, the

biggest plague, the biggest triumph of Satan, is the destruction of the Mass. Because, without the Mass, without valid priests saying valid Masses, being ordained validly by validly ordained, consecrated bishops, we have no Mass, we have no Blessed Sacrament in the presence of Jesus; it's wiped out.

Jansen: Let's go back here now to the reign of Pius XII.

Fr. Martin: Yes.

Jansen: He put out an encyclical called *Mediator Dei*.

Fr. Martin: 1946. [To be precise: November 20, 1947.]

Jansen: Yeah. So, this liturgical movement must have been active long before the Novus Ordo Mass was introduced.

Fr. Martin: In the 1930s. It was. And in that *Mediator Dei*, as you've known, but let's here remind our listeners, he actually says, "And there are some people who want to take away the tabernacle from the altar." He lists all the –

Jansen: They want to take away black vestments.

Fr. Martin: That's right, they want to face the people. Now, why do you do that? Because in Belgium, and France, and Germany, of the thirties, there was a movement, a liturgical movement mainly started by Benedictans but also supported by the Jesuits which proposed all these things, proposed people Masses. And when it came to the Vatican Council itself, as you know, the last vote in the Council in 1965 concerned the Mass. And the bishops were [?] categorical. They said, "Do not wipe out the Latin! Keep the Latin Mass! But translate the *popular* part," meaning the Credo, the Gloria, the prayer before Mass, the intreval prayers, as we call them, and the communal prayers at the end, "put these in the proper language, but the Canon stands!" This was the Council. And I remember that a bishop who had visited Paul VI, just after the end of the Council in December 1965, came in to me here in New York and said, "Hear, Malachi, a most extraordinary thing happened to me. I was speaking with the Pope, His Holiness, two days ago. And I congratulated him on the vote in the Council. And he said, 'Don't speak to me about the vote. Don't congratulate me. There are already 18 new Canons invoked in France. They'd gone hayward, they'd already translated into vernacular, and the thing is not valid anymore. And I have no control over it.'" So, what happened? Well, there was a character called Bugnini, Annibale Bugnini, who was a Freemason, a member of the Lodge, who set as his goal to create a new ceremony in the Catholic Church – he has this in his articles published in Italian [?] – which could be accepted by anybody, Catholic or non-Catholic, or non-Christian.

Jansen: So, it's an ecumenical religion, and because Bugnini was a Freemason one wonders if he was doing this in the long run to lead towards the creation of a one-world-religion.

Fr. Martin: Of course he was. Of course he was. The difficulty is that he wasn't alone, he had powerful friends, and by the way just as a footnote, you know that the official Canon of the Mass now, the New Mass, the Novus Ordo, was composed by six Protestant clergymen and two Catholic clergymen. How bastardised can you become, no matter how pious and good these men were, they are not Catholics, they didn't know the Catholic tradition. But anyway, let's

go on. What we have to acknowledge too is that there was a very carefully laid out, integrated plan to make sure that no statement of the Vatican Council is possible that couldn't be ambivalent. And I remember Cardinal Bea coming to see me once in my room in Rome, and that was in 1962, sweating. And the Council had just begun with November 1962, and I asked him why he was disturbed, and he said, "Because I have just heard an awful remark by Hans Küng. He was talking to," and he named an American theologian, who is now a Bishop, who shall remain unnamed, and he said, "Küng, in answer to a question by this man, I didn't hear the question, he said, 'Oh no, no, no, no, no. This time, we are not going to leave, we are not going to have another Reformation, we are staying inside this time.'" Which gives an eye-opener on what the plan was, and the plan was simply to make sure that the traditional Romanist Catholic traits of the Church will be wiped out. The lot is that if you examine all the documents of the Vatican Council, there are fifteen main ones, you'll find that except for something like the Mass, what it says about the Mass, the old Mass, the Roman Mass that they'd always got, I refuse the name Tridentine even, because 'Tridentine' did not invent this Mass, it was the old Roman Mass celebrated by Pope Damasus in the fifth century [Pope Damasus I, 366-384], and the idea was to make sure that no statement of the Council would stand that could not be interpreted ambivalently. For instance: Nuns. Let's modernise their dresses. It's quite clear from the discussions in the Council at that time, they meant, well, get rid of things that are really a hindrance in the subway, or a hindrance simply out of place. They certainly didn't mean nuns to walk around with pearl necklaces and lipstick and powder and hot pants and hot dresses and to drink [?] cocktails in large hotels, having their annual conventions. They meant nuns to behave a garb, a religious garb, a sign of their devotion to the Spouse they had married by their vows.

Jansen: What seems to have happened is a complete revolution because for a nun to go from heavenly garb into lipstick and watching television and miniskirts, it's a total turn-around.

Fr. Martin: It's a destruction. It's a destruction. Not only that, but there are a whole, as you know in California, there are a whole set of schools where all the nuns simply left the order and left the Church. But that was carefully done in the Vatican Council. Everything was left ambivalently. And the main thing that was left ambivalent was religious liberty, and the idea of communism; as you know, five hundred Fathers asked Paul VI to allow them condemn communism, they were forbidden. That was one of the agreements that John XXIII made with Nikita Khrushchev, and that is one of the things that haunts us today.

Jansen: Let's talk about this Rome-Moscow Agreement. What is this Rome-Moscow Agreement?

Fr. Martin: Well, the Rome-Moscow Agreement is very simple. John XXIII did feel that if he could get two Russian observers in Rome for the Council, that it would be Pentecostal. Nikita Khrushchev knew well the power of propaganda and the voice of the Church, and already the satellite countries were in trouble, and Russia was in trouble too, so he said, provided there is no condemnation of Marxism by the Church, or of the USSR, and he had several other things besides, but that is the main thing, then I will grant permission for two observers. The negotiations were carried on by Cardinal Tisserant, a French Cardinal, in the house of the Bishop of Metz, in the city of Metz. And they were concluded satisfactorily, and the two observers arrived. The Rome-Moscow

Agreement therefore meant that there was an unofficial line between the Vatican and the Kremlin from then on. That had been established, by the way, during the War, by a man called Monsignore Giovanni Battista Montini, behind Pius XII's back. And Pius XII was utterly enraged when he found out, [?], he expelled Montini and made him Archbishop of Milano, and then, for later on, after his death, he became, as you know, Paul VI. And another man who was very active at that time in the Vatican State Department was Agostino Casaroli.

Jansen: We know a lot about him.

Fr. Martin: Yes. He is the Secretary of State. And he gathered around him an entire band of people who are very anti-American, very anti-Anglosaxon, and it's not that they want to become communists, they just believe that the pie can be carved up differently. And they never got very far until John Paul II came in, with his personal charisma, and made it possible for us to have this interview with Gorbachev, and that's a completely different question what is happening now under John Paul II. The trend in the Vatican was to allow the Marxist idea to pervade Christianity, which emerged, as you know, in liberation theology in Latin America. It was never suppressed, even though John Paul II has made more than three trips to Latin America to suppress it. And that is the Rome-Moscow Pact, and it still invokes, it still invokes. And Rome has not [?] it. Vatican diplomacy is such that once a mistake has been made it generally tries to live with it; it rarely tries to obliterate a mistake, very rarely. So it has lived with this altering reign of Paul VI, and there were contacts, all the bully-boys of the satellite nations went to see Paul VI in the seventies, and President Podgorny, Nikolai Podgorny, way back in 1967, I think, came to the Vatican to see him, and Paul VI used to receive this famous man, Metropolitan Nikodim, who was the go-between, he was the Metropolitan Bishop of Leningrad and Ladoga, second-highest-ranking bishop in the Soviet Union, it was he who negotiated with Tisserant this Moscow Pact, and it was he who died in the arms of John Paul I, as you know.

Jansen: Do you think that the Russian Orthodox Church led by Nikodim is very much a puppet church?

Fr. Martin: Absolutely a puppet church! It's, as one Russian said to me, "It is devilled," I can't translate the Russian word in any other way, and he said, "We have been servants of the devil for so long we have forgotten what we are." And if you want to measure, Bernard, the amount of devilment in the Russian Orthodox Church as an organisation, think of the following fact: that nobody can be of any prominence in the Russian Orthodox Church unless he is a member of the KGB. Nikodim has served as a Colonel in the KGB; he was tortured eleven times by the KGB, that thought he was turning tail on them, which he finally did.

A picture is worth a thousand words: Vladimir Putin and then Russian Patriarch Alexy II, who died in December 2008. Although Putin likes to say, “Russia is the Guardian of Christianity” (which is a cynical joke, given the fact it’s still the old communist Soviet Union), this chilling photograph shows the contrary: no respect or sympathy on the part of Putin towards religion whatsoever, but instead that typical communist sentiment of bestial hatred, maybe coupled with a deep-seated fear, towards that Divine order that was so ruthlessly and completely wiped out by the October Revolution. He seems to be telling Alexy, ‘You are under our feet, and nothing is going to change that.’ And Alexy very visible obeys.

Jansen: What do Catholics behind the Iron Curtain think about the Rome-Moscow Agreement?

Fr. Martin: First of all, let’s be [?] on the condition of Catholics behind the Iron Curtain. Contrary to what a lot of people would like to think, the condition of youth, and the condition of the Church behind the Iron Curtain is almost worse than the condition of the Church in the United States anywhere, almost worse. But there are solid bodies of believers who have [?], mainly in the Ukraine, by the way, where you have four to five million Ukrainians who literally have been having Mass in forest glades and behind rocks, much as the Irish have for four hundred years during the British occupation of Ireland. Now, they have regarded all contact with the Soviet Union as abhorrent because they lived with the commissars, they felt the whips, they were sent to the Gulag, they lost their priests and bishops and nuns and churches and company, they regarded it as blasphemy, they could not understand it, and they don’t understand it – because they had lived with the demon called Marxism, under Stalin and Nikita Khrushchev and under Mr. Gorbachev and under all the intermediary [?], they know the truth about everything, they have no illusions whatever. And if you talk with people like Cardinal Tomášek of Prague, who is now free to say Mass over the television, you’ll find that his eyes are filled over when you question him about ‘the goodness and the wisdom’ of the Rome-Moscow Pact. They regarded it as having been delivered – lock, stock, and barrel – to the hands of the Soviets, because they say if at any given moment Rome had flung its full weight, publicly, *publicly*, against the Soviet Union, as Pius XII had tried to – but at that stage he was almost 80 and physically too weak and psychologically broken down, and already the tentacles were spreading into the Vatican, the tentacles of what they call ‘the super-force’, which is now within the Vatican bureaucracy itself –, if the Church had done that, with the prestige it had coming out of the Second World War, that prestige was huge in America, and in Canada, and in Latin America, no doubt about it, it could have curbed what Stalin was doing, it could have curbed Nikita Khrushchev, it could have made a difference. We didn’t do it, we compromised. What’s one example, I’ll tell you. Paul VI assembled, got all the bishops of Vietnam assembled in Saigon, and sent over a special emissary, a Cardinal, whose name begins Pignedoli, to tell them to advocate surrender and peace with North Vietnam, total surrender. Why did he do that? He did that because he had been [?] Metropolitan Nikodim, who brought a

message from the North Vietnamese through Moscow that the North Vietnamese wanted peace, and they needed six months to prepare [?], this was in 1968. In 1968, the United States had levelled North Vietnam, they [the North-Vietnamese] had no hope of winning, so Lyndon Johnson was faced with the request from Paul VI that he not bomb any more, that he not do any more war destruction, he wait until spring. And what happened in spring, or February? The Tet offensive! They had re-armed, and they came back like a lion! And from then on it was downhill for the United States; but, in the meantime, Paul VI got his bishops to vote for peace, against any furtherance of war, any resistance. And that is called: compromise. And compromise was the message: 'Compromise, sacrifice, wait!' Which is not the action of a Militant Church, conscious of its own strength; it is compromise. And [?] was that Mindszenty, for instance, was [?] out of a delegation in Budapest, where he had been for fifteen years, promised that nobody would be made Cardinal in his lifetime, put in a seminary in Vienna, and [?] they appointed a new man, Lékai, who was a Marxist, he is dead now, the Cardinal, but he was an open Marxist. There was compromise all over the place; that was a result of the Moscow Pact. And the result was that when the Latin Americans in the late seventies started with their 'liberation theology', they would say, well, the Church has a specific approach to all of this, and obviously you can christianise Marxism. But what happened was they marxised Christianity, because liberation theology is nearly Marxism with a Christian face: Christ becomes a revolutionary. Mary is the mother of all the revolutionaries. The bread of life is no longer in the tabernacle, the bread of life is now what we manufacture in our factory, which no longer belongs to –

Jansen: It's a materialistic ideology then.

Fr. Martin: Yeah, but in Christian terminology! That's the point!

Jansen: Ahh, so it's Marxism with a Christian veneer then.

Fr. Martin: That's right. If you attend any of the meetings of the base communities, *Comunidades de Base*, in Latin America, of which there are 600,000 now: they trample on the Cross, they say this castrates the people, Jesus was a revolutionary. He was killed because he was against the rich. And [?] all the words about Jesus leading them "I am the Way, the Truth, and the Life". 'Take up the cross of war', this is Marxism.

Jansen: They have turned the Truth upside down because one of Christ's basic messages was that His message and His Kingdom was not of this world!

Fr. Martin: Of course. Of course. But they have made it now, and that's why Paul VI made the error too in his own way, misguidedly, declaring that "Now we will work with man for a better world." *But this is not the mission of the Church!!!* That's what John Paul II has never erred, he knows exactly what salvation means. Now, the – it is very clever, Marxism, because, as you know, what it did in Latin America, it penetrated Christian culture, and that is why, say, Nicaragua had support of the Jesuits, the Carmelites, the Dominicans, and Franciscans; and in Latin Central America it is rare to find a priest who is not marxised in his priesthood, in his so-called pastoral care; and why the Jesuits in Managua ran a school for Marxist tactics!

Jansen: Let's take a look though at the situation here in the United States and in my country, in Canada. There, the bishops put out these statements from

time to time on defence and economics. Are Marxists behind those statements, because there seems to be a lot of left-wing terminology in these?

Fr. Martin: Marxisation. They have been marxised. The essence of Marxism is this, Bernard, let's it be quite clear between us, the essence of Marxism is this: 'Don't look beyond the human horizon! You, man, are capable of infinite perfectibility, provided that you get the capitalist jackals off your back! The people, they are the source of power, they are the source of perfection and of happiness. Don't look to anything transcendent, everything is *immanent* to you, all your powers are there, but you've just been hindered by the rich and the oppressive capitalist lackeys.' That's the essence of Marxism. The rest of it, the workers' paradise, the proletarian revolution, those are all historical accretions which can be changed, as Gorbachev has, to other phraseology, to reasonableness, and tolerance, and lack of fanaticism, but the essence is: 'I want you to look at this world only! Don't expect salvation from on high, there is no message from beyond the stars! There is no salvation out there! Jesus is a man! We are men!' That's the essence of Marxism. Now, the bishops in this country, and in your country, and in Europe, concentrate exclusively on sociological and political and military questions like nuclear disarmament, and on the environment, and on AIDS, and condoms (let me use that awful word, of which nobody knows the origin), and everything else, are purely and simply acting as social engineers. There is no pastoral care, there is – for instance, I read with horror the pastoral letter of our Cardinal Mahony of Los Angeles on the Blessed Eucharist. I assure you it could be read by the Dalai Lama and accepted. It is totally and simply a sociological document. And, apart from other blotches of Cardinal Mahony's behaviour like absolving people from any obligation to go to Mass on Monday after Christmas Day "because they won't go anyway," he said. Sounds like [?] "Listen, we want to commit adultery tomorrow, would you please absolve us because we are going to do it anyway." This is not Catholicity! This is an inner, an immanent, this-world-[?] to make due with the social conditions that there are. Women want to be a priest: Why not; they have their rights. I want to be a homosexual: Why not; it's your right, it's another life-style. – *Because it's all immanent, you can make it happen!* This is the essence of Marxism; we have been penetrated.

Jansen: Could it be then that the common thread of what has happened since the Second Vatican Council is that the Church has been secularised, and that Humanism has replaced Catholicity?

Fr. Martin: It has, it has. But the key to that is just one person, one intelligence: Satan; Lucifer. He has successfully sold a bill of goods to the majority of Catholic bishops, mainly that their job now is to align the Catholic people with the movement of peoples towards human perfection in a very interdependent society of nations. *That* is what they have been sold, and they will not do anything that violates that. And that's why you can safely describe our Bench of Bishops in this country, there are about three hundred of them, as the religious arm of the left wing of the Democratic Party! It chose the line; right down the line.

Jansen: And it seems that they are spineless, like on the issue of abortion and various other liberalisations that have occurred since the 1960s, on divorce, or what have you. They have been totally spineless in opposing those movements.

Fr. Martin: Totally. And the compromise they made was totally embarrassing. Now, because for instance, when Governor Cuomo of this state New York came out in favour of abortion funding – and he procures abortions by financing them

–, there was no condemnation. He is a public figure. From the very beginning it should have been made clear: anybody who votes for pro-abortion funding, procures abortions in other words, just as sure as a surgeon procures the abortion, or the wife who submits to abortion, or the husband who pays for it, anybody who does is excommunicated, can't receive the sacraments, he can go to Mass, or he or she can go to Mass, but until they confess it and repent in public they can't receive the sacraments. That should have been applied, nolens volens, from the beginning. It wasn't. So, when Bishop Maher of San Diego excommunicated, or declared that the candidate for election, I forget the name, Killea or something like that, in California, [Lucy Killea, Dem.], on account of her abortion behaviour, or favouring of abortion, could not receive the sacraments, everybody howled at him: "How dare you interfere with the political rights!" From the very beginning they should have made it clear: this is not a question of political rights, this is RELIGION, this is [?]. They didn't. You know, one main failure there, this is the [?], Bernard, is this: When Jesus left us, visibly, he didn't give us armies, he didn't promise empires, he promised we'll be hated, by the way, he promised the whole world to be against us, but he said, 'You have one thing, you have a spiritual weapon: My Grace.' The one thing the bishops have not used is their spiritual weapon, the Grace at their disposal. Let me give you an example. Recently, in the last four weeks [on December 10, 1989], St. Patrick's Cathedral was desecrated by the homosexual organisations. They invaded it, they interrupted the Mass, they broke the Host into pieces and threw it on the ground, they were insulting, and they had blackouts which were blasphemous. Cardinal John O'Connor purified the church, canonically, but he never once, never once, decided to use the spiritual weapon of consecration to the Immaculate Heart of Mary. What he should have done, what many advised, was that he consecrate the homosexual community of New York to Our Lady's Immaculate Heart, asking for Grace they be converted, because the only power we have is that Grace! They haven't used that Grace! *They have not used that Grace!* They have not used their spiritual weapon. And therefore the spiritual weapon is lying dormant. And we are at sixes and sevens, we don't know what to think. We are just hurt. And we want to be Americans, and we want to be like everybody else, and we want to be at peace with everybody.

Jansen: Catholics have joined the world, in other words.

Fr. Martin: That's right, that's right. That's the bill of goods sold: You've got to be part of it. Otherwise: why be fanatic. You're not American, you're not Canadian, you're not good citizens. You've got to be part of it, that's the bill of goods that's been sold by one Archangelic intelligence. Now, when Lucia was speaking with Our Lady in one of her visions, there was a very poignant moment when Our Lady said to her, "Look, my child, don't be surprised, if at a certain moment a certain diabolical disorientation affects the best of mine, a disequilibrium so that they no longer judge according to the voice of My Son and of Peter." And, you know, when you regard the way the bishops have acted, and the way priests act, and the way theologians act, and the way the best sometimes make awful errors, talking out of two sides of their mouths, you realise that there is a disorientation, they no longer know what it is to be Catholic, they no longer know, they no longer have the Catholic instinct, and why it's safe to say that we no longer have a Catholic people; what we have is: we have one on one; groups who are still Catholic. And, amongst my associates in the United States and abroad, the first question we ask about anybody who looms up on our horizon for the first time, with an appointment or a book or whatever: We say, "Is he Catholic?" But we don't mean, "Has he been baptised?" We mean, "Is he still of

the faith? Does he believe? Does he practise what he believes? Does he live it out? Does he say the Rosary? Does he go to Mass? Does he go to Confession? Does he uphold the Petrine authority?" For that is the crux: Petrine authority. That is the aim of the entire revolt of the bishops: to get rid of the Petrine authority. And it's almost got rid of in practice, as you know.

Jansen: It looks like that there's really only pockets of Catholicism left throughout the world.

Fr. Martin: Just pockets. Just pockets. Just pockets. And anybody who doesn't realise that by now has his head stuck in the sand. Because, the Church has now been blanketed. You see, it's very easy in the Church: It's composed of an organisation of dioceses and parishes, and the pipeline into that comes from Rome, through the bishops. The bishops have occupied all the choke points of that pipeline, and they have piped into it a new structure, the Novus Ordo, the RCIA [Rite of Christian Initiation for Adults], if you people in Canada have experienced the RCIA –

Jansen: What is that?

Fr. Martin: That is the new way of 'Christian initiation'. And if you read the manuals, baptism in another form, you'll find out that it's full of the most amazing amalgam of naturalism, environmental love, a bishop-voodoo, some witchcraft, some Wicca, as we call it in this country (W-I-C-C-A), some Protestant traits; but absent is genuine Catholicism. And then we have, in addition to our RCIA, we have a thing called 'Renew', which is a form of "renewal", they call it, and it means chiefly that the idea of a priest offering the Mass is out, that the people now have the power, that they decide what prayers to say, and they decide what [?] sin is. This has been piped into schools and parishes so that it has blanketed the Catholic Church in the United States and abroad, has changed people without their being knowing they've been changed, they've been led by pipers out of the Church. You know, if you went around England in 1530, and said to anybody, "Are you Catholic?" "Of course I'm Catholic!" By 1630, several men had worked on them, and if you went around in 1630 and said, "Are you Catholic?", they'd say, "Of course I am," but at that time they no longer had Mass, they no longer had obedience of the Pope, they no longer assigned to the Credo that we always recited, they no longer had the virtues, they were into Protestantism, *but they did not know it*: They were 'Anglicans'. There were no longer valid priests, there were no longer valid sacraments, confession, baptism, Holy orders, anointing of the sick, that was all gone. And they didn't know it. Similar with the Mass of the Catholic people: They don't know. How could they know?

Jansen: The institution is still there.

Fr. Martin: That's right. It's a grand illusion, with cardinals, and bishops, and priests, and nuns, and convents, and monasteries, and printing presses, and Catholic libraries, and Catholic colleges, and Catholic books. But, it's an illusion!

Jansen: So, it's a fassade!

Fr. Martin: It's a fassade. Behind which there is nothing that would be even permitted by past Popes, or the past Church; it wouldn't be permitted, it wouldn't be simply allowed, they would kick them out of [?].

Jansen: Let's go back to Pope Pius XII on this point. Did he foresee that something like this was going to happen?

Fr. Martin: Yes, that's why he refused to have a General Council, he refused anything like that, and why he was insistent on two or three things: no truck with Marxism, no even talking with Marxism, utter separation, and waiting, and blocking them, and why he tried to set up an underground church in Russia itself, and he had five bishops and setten-up [?] administrators in Stalin's Russia until they were betrayed: a man came down once, said he was a Russian Orthodox, entered the Roman seminary, was trained, was ordained. And went back to Russia, he was a Russian spy, with all the names. And overnight everything disappeared. All taken and killed. That liquidated Pius XII's attempt to have an underground in the Soviet Union. But that one point he stressed: Marxism. Another point he stressed was Our Lady. He stressed this devotion [?], and finally it became sort of a joke amongst the bishops, who were already losing their faith, that you couldn't get near him unless you were saying the Rosary. By that time, the worst of the deal had started, and devotion was diminishing. Beside that then, it became very, very vogueish in Europe and the United States for the religious orders to send their men to secular universities. The plea was, if they go to secular universities, they will know what the other side is saying, as if you couldn't read it in their books and listen to it in their lectures. That's what then turned out a generation, my generation, of thinkers, theologians, bishops later, cardinals later, who had absorbed secularist ideas, and with all their friends and careers and honorableness linked with a world which is totally anti-Catholic. And that was part of the seeding for Vatican II. Now, that was the first thing that, there are two things that Pius XII hit. The third thing he hit very hard, but always just touching it because he hadn't read the Third Secret, was the coming destruction of the Church and of civilisation. [?], it was creeping into his public sermons and addresses and some of his letters because he had got communications from Lucia, Sister Lucia, the surviving child of Fátima, and from others about what Our Lady had said [?]. But by the time he got that, his main work was done. His main work was during the War, that was his main work, to resist Nazism, to resist Mussolini, and to tie the Church over that period. That is, I think, what providence called him for. After that, and then he did manage to keep Italy out of communism by organising the Democrazia Cristiana, the [Christian] Democratic Party in Italy. By that, by 1950, when he defined the Assumption of Our Lady, which is one of his big acts, he was already in bad health, and from then on he slipped down on a very slippery slope of very bad health, and finally succumbed in 1958, October, I think it was, 1958.

Jansen: Let's take a look at John XXIII. Was he a liberal, or was he simply naïve?

Fr. Martin: He was a liberal. He was a very – as you know, John was removed from teaching at the Lateran University because of modernism, way back in the beginning of his career. In fact, it could have ended there, he could have ended up as a parish priest in Bergamo, except he had friends in the public and, I think, the Sacra Congregatio de Propaganda Fide, the Congregation for the publication of the faith, dissemination of the Evangelical message, and they gave him a job, and from there to another job, and then he found his way as a diplomat, because John, very calm, roly-poly, and obviously meant well, and as the French said about him, he is a "bon poché", he is a good folk, he is a good, hugging pastor, he was great with children's communion, and he was very kind,

he did save innumerable thousands of Jews in Hungary during the war by issuing about 27,000 false baptism certificates [?] and saved them, and in Bulgaria the same thing: as you know, the Jews in Bulgaria, there were more Jews in Bulgaria at the end of the War than there were at the beginning, because of the activity of both the King of Bulgaria at that time and the Archbishop, and Roncalli. And then he was very useful in Paris after the War with de Gaulle because de Gaulle couldn't dislike this man, and the Vatican's big problem in France after the War was that many bishops had supported the Vichy, the pro-German faction in France, and they should have been condemned to death in principle. So John manoeuvred the Church out of that difficulty. Then he was made Patriarch of Venice as a reward. And nobody expected him to become Pope. But in 1958 he was the only man they [?] because the cardinals were in disarray about what to do about the Church at that time. Yes, he was a liberal. And in addition to that, he was theologically ignorant, extremely ignorant, he had the garden-of-the-soul variety of devotionalism, he read in Diary of the Souls, very simple, simplistic almost, and he was wily, as a peasant is, he came from peasants who had been fighting with the elements, and land, and animals, for hundreds of years. He was monoglot, he at least spoke French, but he was Italian and monoglot, spoke one language. And above all he had an illusion: that [if] he managed to get as many different people as possible, Catholics, Protestants, Jews, Muslims, Communists, Hindus, Buddhists, into his Vatican Council, there would be a new Pentecost, the Holy Ghost actually enlighten everybody with a new flaming [?] of tongues, and the world would be one again in love and faith in Christ.

Jansen: So, he was chasing an illusion.

Fr. Martin: Absolutely chasing an illusion. Then he was also, say, he had another view completely of Europe and Marxism. He [?] came from the poor, and therefore he did think the imbalance between poor and rich should be corrected. That of course was taken by his Marxist collaborators as a way of pushing him towards a compromise with Nikita Khrushchev. No, John was a liberal, and unfortunately his piety was not sufficient to give him perception. He did go to Fátima, as a Cardinal, and he did want to be known as the Pope of Fátima, he did introduce a feast day upon the year of Fátima, but when it came to the Fátima revelation and the mandate of Our Lady, because it directly head-to-head on [?] his policy of reconciliation with the Soviet Union, he would have [?] it, and therefore he said this is not for our time, and the question one would *love* to have asked him is: Why didn't Our Lady tell us that if she says that in 1960 the Pope must open this and publicise it to all the nations of the world? Nobody wouldn't dare ask him that.

Jansen: Before John XXIII died, did he realise that something was starting to move wrong?

Fr. Martin: Yes, he did. Insofar as his carcinoma allowed him, because from March on John was in a very bad condition, March 1963. He died on June 3, and in a horrible agony, [?] in horrible pain. But he used to say at the end, It's no longer – "Non è mio Concilio," this is no longer my Council. After the first session he knew that the anti-force had taken over. Because, as you know, in his preparation for the Council he had a preparatory commission, and they prepared what they called schemata, that is documents, which would be discussed by the bishops in Council, they modified, changed, adapted to the needs of the Church Universal, and then stamped with their signature.

Jansen: Archbishop Lefebvre was on this Council, wasn't he?

Fr. Martin: He was. He was. Archbishop Lefebvre was. What happened was in the first session they simply said, "We don't want these documents. We've got to have new documents." And the new documents were exactly tailored to that 'blessed ambivalence' they wanted. And from then on he knew the Council was going down. Physically then, you see, the carcinoma was eating away his vitals, and he was already over eighty, and he simply physically hadn't the strength, and apparently he hadn't got the Grace, or Christ didn't want him to do anything because, over all this, Bernard, over all this mess, this disintegration of the Catholic Church in its institutional organisation, and the infidelity of priests and nuns and cardinals and bishops, and the [?], say, amongst European cardinals against John Paul II, and amongst American cardinals against John Paul II at the present moment, overall you must say to yourself: this has been permitted by Christ, He is after all all-powerful, He could change all hearts. *He hasn't!* He has allowed it go like that. So, this is permitted by Christ, not willed. It's something you must reflect on, we must all reflect on, that He has allowed it. He has allowed this victory of Satan, because it is a victory, a marvellous victory. It's a terrible victory for us, but for him it's a superb victory. He has successfully infiltrated the Church in its highest levels right after the Throne of Peter. So we must say that Pope John XXIII wasn't given the Grace to see the errors he made, and Paul VI wasn't given the errors to correct his weakness, he was a great Pope in other ways, but he could not correct them. Why? He didn't get the Grace. That's the most charitable thing we can say. May God judge him. As you know, poor Paul VI went around Castel Gandolfo in his last days, shuffling, because he had terribly swollen legs with [?], besides his lungs were giving out, and all he could [?] little stretches from the Credo, "Credo in Unum Deum. Credo in Ecclesiam Catholicam. Credo in Unum Deum. Credo in Christum Dominum," as if to assure himself on the verge of eternity and that it all held still intact.

Jansen: He seemed to be somewhat helpless as a Pope.

Fr. Martin: Totally. Totally helpless. Totally helpless. He was already coddled and swaddled in the souls of the super-force installed in the Vatican. And he could do nothing about it, just as John Paul II perhaps, the only thing is that John Paul II, coming from a distant land, being a fighter, having his own geopolitical point of view, had decided on an end game. He is going to [?] right around it, he said, and [?]. He is not Paul VI, he is not an Italian, he is not John XXIII, he has no illusions, this man has no illusions at all.

Jansen: What is his game plan? Or what was his game plan when he came to office in 1978?

Fr. Martin: Geopolitical. That is, he accepted there is no possibility of renewal, no way he could scar out the Church, no way he could reform the cardinals, no way he could clean out the Vatican bureaucracy, no way he could change the mass of the clergy in Latin America, no way he could save the Jesuits, he tried to suppress them, that was his intention removing the General of the Jesuits, and finally even he stopped, there is no point in any further attempt, but he did believe and does believe and holds firmly that he is the watchman on the wall waiting for Our Lady to come, in the skies, it sounds fantastic, that is his belief, that will happen in his life time, and soon; and soon, not late [well, things have taken longer ...]; and that we are now in the banner years of that. You know, a lot of

people didn't understand and didn't even take time to understand: In 1987 he established the Marian Year, no, in 1988, he established the Marian Year. He began in the middle of June and ended in August. And nobody has asked, why should a Marian Year, which is as long as 13 months and which apparently went nowhere – He was preparing for Gorbachev and the present shake-up of the entire structure of the world, the society of nations. But that's another question ...

XIX. BARACK OBAMA: THE SOVIET UNION'S CHOSEN ONE

Political Analyst Jeff Nyquist (author of ‘Origins of the Fourth World War: And the Coming Wars of Mass Destruction’; self-published in 1998) interviews computer expert Tom Fife, who had been witness to a more than ominous slip of the tongue, or outburst, on the part of a committed Russian communist at a private dinner party in Moscow in early 1992 (!!!), where Mr. Fife had been engaged in an American-British-Russian joint venture project. – Transcript done by this author from the original Jeff Nyquist audio. The conversation was released as an mp3-podcast on February 8, 2010, but the actual broadcast on Jeff Nyquist’s radio programme “Outside the Box” seems to have been earlier, presumably somewhere in 2009. Though this live radio talk was fairly casual in tone, it was nevertheless both completely serious and very substantial. It is highly recommended to listen to this amazing historical time document *directly*, as can be found as an mp3 file on: <http://www.jrnyquist.com/rss/jrnpodcast.xml> under “Tome Fife and Anne Leary Interviews”: As one listens to the interview, one can’t help liking Mr. Fife and sensing him as an absolutely genuine and trustworthy person speaking with great humbleness as well as clarity! There have been other interviews with Mr. Fife on this same topic, e.g. on Jeff Rense Radio, but the one given to Jeff Nyquist is slightly more in-depth and more thoughtful. American Free Press published on March 23, 2009 an article written

by Tom Fife himself:

http://www.americanfreepress.net/html/global_elite_picked_obama_171.html.

Also, Tom Fife has a brief report on his own website under the title “The First Time I Heard of Barack”: <http://www.americantownmeeting.com/Essays.php> (click there on ‘Original Essays: On Barack Obama’).

(Quite significantly, Tom Fife’s shocking revelations, that add such an important piece to the puzzle of what and who Obama *really* is, went viral on the alternative media but were completely ignored by the “official” mainstream.)

The second conversation within that radio programme was then with conservative blogger Anne Leary, who told her eye-opening story of a brief encounter with former Weather Underground terrorist and Obama buddy, Bill Ayers, at Ronald Reagan Airport at Washington D.C., during which Bill Ayers three times repeated, despite or maybe because Anne Leary had identified herself as a conservative blogger, that it was actually *him* who had written Barack Obama’s myth-maker book, “Dreams from My Father”!!! This transcript is included here as well.

Words not picked up from the audio, at times, are given as question-marks within square brackets.

JEFF NYQUIST’S INTRODUCTORY WORDS: Welcome to another edition of ‘Outside the Box’. I am Jeff Nyquist, your host. And tonight I have two special guests: Tom Fife, an American businessman and physicist, and Anne Leary, a conservative blogger from ‘backyardconservative.blogspot.com’. The thing that’s interesting about these two stories is the way that they dovetail and work together, and perhaps even make us afraid. Perhaps some of you remember Whittaker Chambers, who was a communist back in the 1930s who turned around and ended up coming before American authorities to expose Alger Hiss, former Assistant Secretary of State, as a communist agent. We now know also, because of other Soviet spies that turned against their network, that Harry Dexter White, the Secretary of the Treasury appointed by Harry Truman, was also involved in a

spy network, two spy networks actually, that were in Washington at the time. More than a half a century ago, they called it 'The Red Scare'. You may remember the name Joseph McCarthy, and McCarthyism. Joseph McCarthy was a United States Senator who said that communists were infiltrating the government. He held hearings, but in those hearings, appearing on television, Senator McCarthy looked like a bully, and so it got a bad name looking for communists. But the communists, they *were* infiltrating the United States, they were subverting it, because the business of communists is revolution. And what we have is a book named "The Web of Subversion [: Underground Networks]" by James Burnham [orig. John Day Co., New York 1954; reprint i.a.: The Americanist Library, 1965], which describes how this process works. James Burnham himself: a former communist. We now know in more recent times that the head of the CIA for watching the former Soviet Union, Aldrich Ames, was actually a Soviet agent himself. We know that Robert Hanssen of the FBI, who was responsible for watching Russia for the FBI, was also a Soviet and then a Russian agent himself. The ability of the Russians to penetrate the most sensitive positions in enemy intelligence services *and* enemy governments is well-documented in the history of the Cold War. And so I make this my introduction to show people that these things are not fantasy. These spy stories are not just make-belief, they're real. I will be back with my first guest, Tom Fife, and he's going to tell you a story about possible communist infiltration of the American political system. I will be back after these messages. [- commercial break -]

JEFF NYQUIST: Well, here we are on 'Outside the Box', and I've got a very special guest, a man, a businessman, a physicist, an American, who has experience working in Moscow, overseas, he had Russian business associates, and he has a very interesting, illuminating story to tell, and I want to welcome Tom Fife to the show. Tom, are you there?

TOM FIFE: Yes, I am.

NYQUIST: Tom, tell us a little bit about your business background. Now, you are trained as a physicist, and you've worked with developing some of the technology in handheld devices, I understand.

FIFE: Particularly programming for the early versions of the pen computers.
NYQUIST: And you have one time got involved in a sort of a joint venture project with Russians back in the early 1990s. Maybe you can tell us a little bit about that.

FIFE: Yes. Well, it grew out of an episode where I met an Englishman who was doing relief work for the Russians back when it looked like the society was about really to collapse back in about '91, and he talked to me whether I could go over with him to help them, and in the process of doing all that work I got to know some of the people who were involved in the Russian Academy of Science, and these guys were all physics types too, and so we had an affinity for, you know, for each other, we had common interests and everything. And they were a lot of programmers themselves, and they told us that they were very keen on trying to get a connection with some Western companies and maybe doing some joint ventures with them. And that indeed was what we ended up doing.

NYQUIST: Hmhmm. And in early '92 or so –

FIFE: Well, the British guy had a consultancy doing accounting, and he built up an umbrella corporation that was British, that the Russians and our American group would be under.

NYQUIST: So, you set the stage kind of what you were doing in Moscow in '92. Maybe you can describe a very interesting experience you had. You were at a dinner party in Moscow?

FIFE: Yes. We had been in Moscow, and we had been working with these people, getting everything organised. And, it turns out that the Russians already had constructed this little company of their own, that was within the Russian Academy of Sciences. And, so we just had a hook into that, so to speak. And the head of that little company was a physicist, and his wife, they were the heads of the company, the people we actually worked with directly.

NYQUIST: Hmhmm.

FIFE: And we were on our way back home, and – as is pretty common tradition, you know – before you go back you always have a little kind of good-bye party. And that's what this was. We were called gathered together, some of the Russians and the Americans that were there, the British guy was there, and we had this little party in the physicist's and his wife's apartment, the flat there.

NYQUIST: And so you guys were eating and drinking and making toasts, I assume.

FIFE: Yes, it's a Russian tradition to do these toasts, and the way they usually do it is they work around the table, and everyone will have their turn, and they pour out a little bit of Vodka, you know, they give their toast, everyone tosses it back, and then after a little bit more discussion then the next guy down the line will go ahead and propose a toast, and they'll go along. And we were doing that, and we were eating our meal at the same time. And just have, you know, just have a general discussion, it was just a light-hearted thing.

NYQUIST: And so, eventually somebody gives a toast that provokes an interesting, *more* interesting kind of discussion; or a monologue, perhaps.

FIFE: It turned into a monologue, yes. My American friend, who was there with me, he for whatever reason didn't want to propose a toast, he just wanted to go ahead and say what he thought about things; about observations he had made, about being in Russia. And for some reason he was caught by the different racial types that he saw in Russia, I think he thought that they would be more homogeneous or something. But there is a little bit of variety in the Russian people.

NYQUIST: Hmhmm.

FIFE: And one of the things that he was noting was high cheek-bones in some of them. And so he was remarking about the influence of the Mongols and stuff like that, and I think it was that point that the wife took a little bit of offence at. And, I know that they're a little bit sensitive about the whole Mongol thing, you know, they were subjugated for 400 years or something like that; it's not something they look at very fondly. But the whole thing they were talking about here really ended up being her response to that remark, that she wanted to correct him on

what a true Russian is, racially. And she described what she called a round Russian face, and she was talking about what villages you can go to to actually see, you know, to see the perfect Russian. And one of the funny things was somewhat she was like describing herself.

NYQUIST: Now, this is the wife of the head of the Russian company from the Academy of Science that you were working with.

FIFE: Correct.

NYQUIST: So, she is responding sort of sensitively about this remark about Russians having Mongol features?

FIFE: Yes. And – you know, she didn't get out of control like: 'wow!' But you could tell that she was miffed, and she started to say things like, "You Americans should talk about race or something. Look at your race relationships back home!" And she was particularly talking about, you know, the black problems we have, you know, the riots, and then she said, "Well, you're going to be quite surprised because you're going to have a black president very soon." And, of course, when she said something like that, it was kind of a surprise, because, you know: How would *she* know!

NYQUIST: Yeah, how would she know, and, you know, it's interesting, just, I'm remembering, you told me before off-air that this conversation occurred in February of '92, and I'm remembering that the Los Angeles riots, in relation to the Rodney King affair, happened, I think, in January of '92, if I'm remembering right, or maybe that was earlier in February '92, but it was about that same time.

FIFE: I think you're right. It was very close to that.

[The Rodney King incident happened in fact on March 3, '92. The Los Angeles riots lasted from April 29 till May 4, '92, following the acquittals of 3 police officers who had been filmed whilst using excessive force against African American traffic law offender Rodney King, which document brought the case nationwide attention.]

NYQUIST: So she's going on about "You are going to have a black president ...

FIFE: Hmhmm.

NYQUIST: ... one day." Now we do have one. Now, this is very curious. So, what did she go on to say? And did any of the Russians there try to stop her from going on in this direction?

FIFE: Well, the other Russians in the room were, I would say, subaltern to her, and they just sat there and were riding it out.

NYQUIST: Now, when you say they were subaltern to her, that there was some kind of power that she had, she was some kind of special person?

FIFE: Well, what they'd told me was that she was an apparatchik of some sort, within the Communist Party ...

NYQUIST: Aha.

FIFE: ... and that she was doing what they call climbing two ladders.

NYQUIST: I see.

FIFE: I got the impression she was one of these people who would be in a group and she would be the Party contact for them.

NYQUIST: Now, that's interesting because in February of '92 the Communist Party Soviet Union had been disbanded! [!!!!]

FIFE: Yeah.

NYQUIST: So, that is *very* interesting.

[The CPSU had been formally “dissolved”, i.e. went into hiding, shortly after the staged “August Coup”, as early as August 29, 1991. The remaining “non-Communist” USSR was then formally “abandoned”, i.e. relabelled as the CIS, during December 1991. – Thus, this “little” detail alone CONFIRMS the seamless Soviet-Communist continuity after 1991 to this very day!!! – There has remained, though, a Communist Party of the Russian Federation under Gennady Syuganov, which constitutes one faction in the fake party pluralism of “post-Soviet Russia”. In fact, they all represent branches of one and the same old CPSU! “Russian” democracy is a mere play with labels, nothing else. It’s the same old Soviet Union in a new guise.]

NYQUIST: So they were kind of afraid of her, or they kept their distance from her?

FIFE: Yeah. In general, my observation was that they didn’t trust communists in general. But they really didn’t trust anybody who had been up the ladder at all.

NYQUIST: Hmhmm. Sure.

FIFE: They didn’t like it at all.

NYQUIST: Sure. It’s a power system, it was a dictatorship, and of course those people make you afraid because where there is power there is also people being killed and being pushed around, and power is a terrifying thing.

FIFE: Yeah, I heard all kinds of stories about different things that the Party people would do and get away with, you know.

NYQUIST: Hmhmm.

FIFE: And, so they just sat there with their heads down and, just like I said, were kind of waiting it out. They didn’t participate at all. And from that point on – you know, they had been talking a little bit before – when *she* was talking and doing her thing here, they were quiet.

NYQUIST: Now, what about her husband? Did he try to stop her?

FIFE: Ah, yeah. About the time that she was saying this thing, ‘Give us a little revelation’, the way she did, he did step up and say, Well – not exactly how he put it – but he was trying to say: How about dropping this, and we do something else or something, and she brushed him off and said, no, no, she wasn’t done yet, she had something else to say.

NYQUIST: Hmm.

FIFE: And so, he just kind of moved to the side, and actually he was the one also who seemed to be just waiting it out, just let her finish with what she was going to say and forget about it.

NYQUIST: Hmhmm. So, what was her explanation in her predicting that there was going to be a black President in the United States?

FIFE: Well, the next shill that she dropped after that was: not only was he going to be black, but that he was going to be a communist, "a Soviet", she said.

NYQUIST: She called him a Soviet?

FIFE: Yes, she called him a Soviet, yeah.

NYQUIST: That's quite remarkable. That means not just that he's a communist with a small 'c', it means he's a Communist with a big 'C'! [!!!]

FIFE: That's what it would imply, I think. Yeah. And then she said, you know, she made a comment about: We had a chance to vote for a woman for Vice President, she said, but we didn't take it. And she was saying that that was one of the reasons that she knew that we were still backwards and not being enlightened and everything.

NYQUIST: Yeah. And of course she is referring to Geraldine Ferraro, who was a Vice Presidential candidate with Walter Mondale in 1984.

FIFE: That's immediately what I was taking it to be. Yeah.

NYQUIST: Yeah. Until this last election where the last Governor Sarah Palin was on, I think that was the only other female on a Presidential ticket.

FIFE: Yeah, at least a major ticket, yeah, yeah. And then I think I said something like, "Well, you don't vote for Vice President, you vote for the President." And she just walked right over that, and she started talking about this guy that was going to be President. And, first, you know, it was just this 'fact' that We're gonna have this black president'. But then she started talking about *him* and about the fact that "Oh, this isn't idle talk," she says. So, he exists, he has been groomed to be President. And, she said, he has been groomed to be irresistible. *And he will be President.*

NYQUIST: Hmm.

FIFE: And she said that he had a white mother and he had a black African father.

NYQUIST: Hmm. And so she specifically identified the mother as a white American and the father as a black African.

FIFE: Yes. And she seemed to think that there was something magic in having a black *African* and not a black American as a father, that she thought that this was great because then he wouldn't have anything slave baggage to go along with it.

NYQUIST: I see. So, in her Russian mind, not really understanding American politics, she thought having ancestors who'd been in slavery would have been a handicap for someone who were running for the Presidency.

FIFE: Correct.

NYQUIST: Interesting.

FIFE: And I thought it was funny all said and done. That was one of the places when he got a lot of study from, I think, American blacks. They felt like he had [?] accepted the whole slave issue somehow, and they didn't, you know, like he wasn't quite black enough, or something. I remember there were jokes about that going around at the time.

NYQUIST: So, did she give a name for this black politician they were grooming to be President, that she called "a Soviet" person?

FIFE: Yes. And, she named him as being "Barack".

NYQUIST: Hmm!

FIFE: And, I thought it was a strange name for, you know, to be coming up with an American President, that he had that name. But then, I said, from what I remember it's an Arabic word, it means 'blessing' or something. And it's [?] Hebrew, similar Hebrew word, I think like 'baruch', they are all related words.

NYQUIST: Right. Right. Yes.

FIFE: And I said that I think it meant something like 'blessing', or something, had something to do with 'blessing', or something. And she said, "Yes!" She said that "He IS a blessing!" And she said, I remember she [?] dramatically, this is one of the things when she went a little bit dramatic when she said that, and he'll be a blessing for our world efforts, or "a blessing for world communism," I think that's what she said.

NYQUIST: Hmm. So, did you find it strange that it was an Arab word that was the name of a supposed black President?

FIFE: Yeah, at first, you know, later on, you know, you can see the connection: well, okay, a lot of blacks in Africa are Muslim. But when I said "Arab", she corrected me. She insisted it was "African".

NYQUIST: Hmhmm.

FIFE: Then I thought, well, okay, I let her go on, you know, she is convinced it's an African word. But I knew that was Arabic origin.

NYQUIST: So, she has gone so far as to -, did she provide a last name for this future black President?

FIFE: Yeah, she was a bit, a little bit muddled on that. I think she knew it, but then couldn't remember it quite correctly because she said maybe she was getting that country and his last name confused, that's what she said, but she said that she thought that it was "Uganda". And I said, Uganda, yeah, I was

thinking: ‘Uganda’, you know, could be named after a country, but she didn’t say “Kenya”, but she said “Uganda”. So, I’m thinking that she got that confused with “Obama”.

NYQUIST: Hmhmm.

FIFE: I think that she just couldn’t remember the name quite correctly, and maybe in her mind, when she heard “Obama”, she thought “Uganda”; and that’s what stuck in her head, maybe.

NYQUIST: Hmm.

FIFE: But, she did say definitely “Barack”. And it was this thing that sounded like “Obama”.

NYQUIST: Interesting, interesting. I am Jeff Nyquist, and with me is Tom Fife, he’s an American businessman and physicist who has worked in the computer field, and he’s been telling us about a dinner party in Moscow in February of 1992, where a Russian woman came up with this extraordinary statement that “You are going to have a black President some day soon.” And we will be back with more after these messages. Stay tuned. [- commercial break -]

NYQUIST: Alright, we’re back. I’m Jeff Nyquist, and with me is my guest, Tom Fife, an American businessman and physicist who has worked in Russia, and we are going to continue with his story, a very unusual story, about a dinner party in Moscow in February of 1992, where a Russian woman, who’s part of the Communist structures in the former Soviet Union, that apparently survived the collapse of the Soviet Union [!!!!], got sort of miffed during a dinner party in description of a Mongol racial influence in the Russian population and came back with this, “Well, you Americans, you have your racial problems”, and then came up with this extraordinary statement that “You are going to have a black President some day soon,” and of course actually describing a man who has a white mother, an African father, whose name is Barack, who is a Communist, she said, and described him as “Soviet,” which implies that he has some kind of relationship with Moscow.

FIFE: Yes.

NYQUIST: And, Tom, when you said that ‘Barack’ means something like ‘blessing’ in Hebrew or Arabic, she came back with, yes, he *will* be a blessing to the communist global struggle, whatever.

FIFE: That’s exactly her synonym.

NYQUIST: Yeah. And it’s extraordinary because in 1992 Barack Obama was not even in politics yet. He wasn’t introduced as the chosen successor for a State Senate seat until 1995, when Alice Palmer, who was by the way an admirer of the Soviet Union and very close to a lot of communists and attended the 27th Communist Party Congress in the Soviet Union [of February/March 1986, where the Fourth Party Programme of the CPSU was adopted, that reflected the beginning of the new phase of the communist long-term deception strategy known as ‘perestroika’ and directed by Gorbachev], announced Barack Obama as her successor. Interesting fact! And that announcement, by the way, was made in Bill Ayers’ living room, Bill Ayers being a former Weather Underground terrorist who –, one of his statements about his terrorism is, “I am

a communist!" So, this is very interesting and kind of scary that this communist lady in Moscow in '92 is aware of this guy that is not even going to be chosen yet for three years to stand for a State Senate seat. What else did she say about this future American President? Anything more specific?

FIFE: Yeah, she seemed to me very intense on trying to drive home the idea that this was a real person, and she knew about him. And she didn't just go with the name and, you know, Mum and Dad. First she came to the home [?] and was about trying to remember, first she thought Northwest, and then she said, no, no, no, "He is from Hawaii," and then she said that he had been schooled in the schools of the Presidents, she said he's "Ivy League", that's how she referred to it.

NYQUIST: Ivy League. Hmm.

FIFE: And she said that he was in New York and Chicago and had gone to school in California, and she said that he was currently in Chicago, that's where he was.

NYQUIST: Interesting. Because Barack Obama attended Occidental College in California, then Columbia in New York, and worked in New York, I believe, three years after graduating, and then moved to Chicago after that.

FIFE: She also said that he was –, soon he was to be entering politics, and it sounded like, it *actually* sounded like she was saying: everything was under control, you know, like he's gonna check all his boxes and he'll climb the ladder and be President.

NYQUIST: Wow! Did she say anything about his ever visiting the Soviet Union? Did you get the impression that he'd been to the Soviet Union?

FIFE: You know, she didn't, no. She didn't say about him being –, if she had, I wouldn't have been surprised by how much she knew. But she did not say that.

NYQUIST: This is very interesting. I think I mentioned it to you before when we were talking off-air, but Barack Obama's parents, you know, they met in a Russian class! That's how they met. In 1960, I believe, was the year that they met, and in that class. They were both taking Russian in Hawaii! It is kind of funny: You hear this from a Russian, and Barack Obama *exists* because his parents were studying Russian. So, Tom, how did it end, how did she end this monologue she gave about this future black President, how did she kind of conclude, how did it end?

FIFE: Let me say, she –, it was a series of, like I said, a series of details that she was giving that would show that she knew this fellow, and –, oh, the other thing that she said was that, the way she put it was: America was at the same time the big stumbling block for communism *plus* its biggest hope and that America *had* to be brought over for everything to work worldwide. [!!!!]

NYQUIST: Hmm.

FIFE: And so, that, she said, that had to take place. And it was going to take place. And, I think, that was one of the most frightening things about it, was because there wasn't just a woman mounting off. She had this chilling certainty

about it, a self-assuredness about everything she said. *That* had almost more power than, in some respects, than the words she said. She was just so certain! And it was like foregone conclusion.

NYQUIST: And how did you and the British man and the other American, that were there, how did you receive this information?

FIFE: I think the other two guys were seeing it a little bit more encouragedly than I did. I think I was the one who was probably taken the most abacked by it, for some reason. I think I felt *chilled* about it.

NYQUIST: Hmhmm.

FIFE: The British guy, particularly, is the one that I had a little bit of conversation with, and he remarked that, you know, that all your life you're growing up you hear everyone talking about communists and taking over the world and everything, and he said, you should all be [?] if I just sat here and heard a communist say that they were about to take over the world. And that was his biggest remark about it; the fact that she felt, how I should say, she kind of felt [?]. But my American friend, he didn't, I don't remember hearing him remarking anything about it. The only conversation I remember afterwards was only between me and the Brit.

NYQUIST: Hmm. And, it would be really fascinating if he could be gotten to talk about this now. Have you tried to talk to your British contact? Have you ever tried to get hold of him?

FIFE: I've been, you know, it's been near almost twenty years that this took place, and it's kind of a cold search, but I have been getting some help there, and I was able to at least a little bit have contact there with the British guy, and he said he absolutely didn't want to have anything to do with this. He said he didn't want to talk about it and he didn't want to be involved.

NYQUIST: And, so, he didn't feel any responsibility to talk about it at all that this had happened and that it was -, I mean, when you talked to him, did he remember the incident?

FIFE: He, well, actually I didn't think we had a chance to really get very much in that direction. I was trying to get him to maybe talk about it somehow, but he didn't want to talk about it really. And he just said he didn't want to have anything to do, you know, because I was saying, "Hey, could you just maybe give a little bit of colour of veracity to what I'm saying because, so far, it was like, you know: This is one guy talking." And -

NYQUIST: So you called him up, and you said, "Hey, I've been on the radio, I've been talking about what this Russian woman said at this party."

FIFE: Yeah. Repeatedly, people will always ask and said, "Well, you know, if we can get something else to be lined up here, you know, that says the same thing, it'll give it a little bit more strong story and everything. But, he definitely left me knowing that he didn't want to be involved.

NYQUIST: So he was very quick to brush it off and do not want to -

FIFE: Yeah.

NYQUIST: I see. And what about the other American that was there that kind of inspired the whole thing by talking about Mongols.

FIFE: Well, you know, I'm not sure [laughs]. We had this company together, and the whole thing collapsed right afterwards. It was because of the Russians that the whole thing collapsed.

NYQUIST: Now, that's interesting to me because I've interviewed other businessmen who've had dealings in Russia, and the one theme that comes out is that the Americans or the British or the Swedes or whoever it is, they have this big investment in Russia, they have Russian partners, and what then invariably happens is that the Americans or the Swedes or the British lose their money, and the Russian partners end up with everything. Is that kind of what happened to you?

FIFE: Yeah, there was a group of Russians that we were with, and then this other group, to me they came out of the blue, I just was not involved in the whole process of the organisational side of things, I was much more on the technical side. And I was involved with doing the technical things, and the other people were involved with the business side. Somehow they brought in this other guy, who was a Russian, he was with the University of Moscow, and it was through him, or it was actually to him and around him that everything started to aggregate, and he ended up in control. And I'm not sure of all what went on, but that's what in the end happened.

NYQUIST: Hmm. Interesting. And, so, the party wrapped up, she'd made these statements, and what interested me and what I think our listeners are wondering is: Okay, you heard this very strange story, it kind of spooked you at the time. How long was it before you realised that this Barack person you heard about, this black American politician, was a real person and that you could see him on TV or read about him or notice he was actually there?

FIFE: Yeah, of course when I went home, at the time I had an act of security clearance.

NYQUIST: Oh! Because you were defence contractor of some kind?

FIFE: Yes, I was involved in another company that had an act of security clearance going. And so whenever I went to Russia, when I got back, I had to be debriefed by the Defence Intelligence Agency, the DIA.

NYQUIST: Right.

FIFE: And an agent would come in scheduled time, and we would chat, and basically before I would go over, he had said, that he wanted to make sure that I would make notes of anybody that I might meet, particularly wanted to be friendly with me, things like that, and so I did that. And so I kept a little diary of what went on when I was over there.

NYQUIST: Hmhmm.

FIFE: And, I did make notes of this conversation because it did strike me so strongly.

NYQUIST: Hmhmm.

FIFE: And I did go –, I was debriefed with the guy when I got back and ended up giving him the little notes I made on an evening when I got home. But, you know, this was a very vivid thing. It was in my head. As a matter of fact, it was actually so vivid that when I got home, one thing I did do is that I told my son, who was, you know, 12, 15, 14 something at the time, I mentioned to him that, I said, you know, if I'm not around in the future at some time and you hear about a guy, this guy who wants to be President, he's half white and half black, I said, you got to fight this guy! Because, I just told him enough, I said, he is gonna be no good. And one interesting thing of course is that my son remembers that conversation we had. That's one point of reality that's very vivid with him, and he says that's one thing that he remembers very well because I guess it kind of affected him that I pulled him aside and I felt something strong enough to tell him that. And that stuck with him. Now, of course, with me in the meantime it was just a story, for years and years and years. And I didn't see this guy, you know, sticking his head up anywhere. And so, it just kind of, you know, stuck in the back of my mind, and every once in a while I think about it, I remember it, you know, something would remind me of it, and an interesting thing that did cause it to pop up in my head every a couple of times since then, when she was describing him, back at the dinner, and she said he was half-white and half-black, she stopped and said, "That's right, he's a chocolate baby!" And I thought that was such a queer thing to say, you know, I just didn't think of –, you know, it's not in my vocabulary, like [?] people refer to a lot of this stuff [?] every once in a while, but it was an eye-turner phrase for me, and I've heard it yet a couple of times since, and when I did hear that, I nearly remember this woman saying it, you know.

NYQUIST: Yeah, it's a kind of unusual thing to say.

FIFE: Yes, so it stuck in my head, and it has been a trigger a couple of times for me to start thinking about it again. But, what really did it was of course when I saw him at the Democratic National Convention when he gave that famous speech of his.

NYQUIST: In 2004.

FIFE: Yeah, I think, it's that Purple-speech that people keep talking about, We aren't blue any more, or purple, or something, I don't know.

NYQUIST: Yeah. I think so, yeah. Because in 2000 he didn't have any, or any previous Democratic Convention, he didn't have any platform at all.

FIFE: Yeah. But even there it didn't register exactly with me because the only thing I knew then was, okay, here is a black guy, his name is Barack, and that, that DID get my attention, and it was afterwards that I started hearing people talk about all the –, you know, they were praising him, actually it was kind of surprising how overflowing with lauding they were doing, that they just couldn't stop to praise him enough, and then they were talking about how he was a Presidential hopeful, perhaps, you know, all that type of stuff, and then it was later, not long after that, I started seeing little bio kind of clips on him, and the one that did of course, the very second they talked about him having a white mother and a father from Kenya, that just like: *Oh oh!* It was like, as if

something snapping, you know, hit you in the head, that's what it felt like. It was like: Oh my God! You know, it was a story! *All of a sudden it didn't seem like a story any more.* I felt like: God, I'm right in the middle of something real! And, it *really* struck me, and, you know, after that I started googling things about him, and *everything matches*, I mean everything she said connects with the reality of this guy!

NYQUIST: Well, you must have had quite a shock then to realise this person was real and that they were considered to be Presidential timber.

FIFE: Yeah. And, at first it was still kind of like, I was kind of simmering on the back-burner about this thing, and I have to admit I had an anxious feeling about it, and I felt like: How can I say to anybody what's going on. So I started saying, you know, I would be with some friends, and I'd go and say "Hey, I got to tell you this story ..." They half believe me, and they half wonder whether I was making this stuff up, or something.

NYQUIST: Hmhmm.

FIFE: I think the problem is it was enough *after* the fact that it wasn't like I was predicting that much, at that point in time, so –

NYQUIST: No. Now you're talking about when he started to announce for Presidency and run in the primaries?

FIFE: That's when I said, I just dropped everything and said I *got* to get something, get this word out. When I could see that he *really was* moving towards the nomination. That's when I really started.

NYQUIST: So that was what: April; or March or April of 2008?

FIFE: It was, yeah, spring of '08. Yeah.

NYQUIST: And, what did you do? Did you write to newspapers? Did you call radio shows? Did you notify TV stations? How did you approach it?

FIFE: I wrote e-mails to everybody you can think of. All the big names, like all the mogul names, I wrote e-mails to them, wrote paper letters to them.

NYQUIST: Hmhmm. And, did you get any responses?

FIFE: Ah --- No. [laughs]

NYQUIST: Wow!

FIFE: No –

NYQUIST: No interest at all??? And, well, in these letters or e-mails you'd write to them: Was it a teaser? Did you tell the whole story? What did you do in these letters?

FIFE: Well, when I started off, you see, I don't know why, but I didn't want to just start broadcasting it out total clock, I don't know why I did or didn't, maybe that's good or bad, one or the other, but I didn't. And I, the –, the first batch of

letters were saying, "I got something that I want to tell you, and it's very important about Barack Obama," and I'm not sure [?] I said, maybe that was about it, his background, or something. And no one seemed to care, you know. Maybe they were just flooded with letters like that. Maybe there is enough people out there who have their own little versions or something, I don't know, but I got no response at all. What actually got something going, finally, was a friend of mine has this rather large e-mail list, a political oriented one, conservative political oriented, and I wrote up a little paragraph, and it's a paragraph I have out on a website right now, not a paragraph, but a -, it's the little stories I have, kind of what I just related, and I have it out there on internet, and it was that text then that I was able to get on to her mailing list. And I did get a little bit of response from that, and eventually it got down to Wiley Drake. And he asked me to come on his show, but I couldn't get on until actually election day; mid election day, when that little thing took place. And then from him there was an interview with a lady at 'WorldNetDaily', Janet Folger [now Janet Porter]. She quoted my figurehead I have on the internet, and after that there was a lot of e-mail to me, and people were asking questions and actually a lot of people were starting to reinforce, they said, "Oh, you know, that I was involved in this and that and the other," and here's an example, one of the letters I got, I mentioned it in the write-up I had that one of the things that she said was that the three important cities in America for them was New York, Chicago, and San Francisco. She was talking like San Francisco was of some particular importance, and I didn't understand what she was saying. Whatever she was saying just didn't make a lot of sense to me. And I mentioned just that much in the write-up, and I got an e-mail then from someone who said, "I know what she's talking about, it was the Gorbachev Institute that was started at the Presidio." And I got an e-mail then from a lady who said that she was hired by them to write some programming for them. And that's what she thought it was, this Gorbachev thing.

NYQUIST: So, Tom, tell me about your -, you say you have a website. Let's give out the web address so that people, listeners can go visit it and maybe read what you have on there.

FIFE: Yeah, it's a website that my son put together for me, and it's www.americantownmeeting.com, and it's just all run together as one word, "americantownmeeting".

NYQUIST: And, well, I want to thank you, Tom. You are very brave for coming forward with this story. And I know those who disbelieve you will say you're very evil for coming forward with this story, but you're certainly brave. And, you know, when I first heard this story, heard about this story, I thought it would have to be a hoax, and then I heard your interview tonight, thought twice, and I have a Ukrainian friend who listened with me, and he, to his mind your details were so authentic to him, being someone who lived the first half of his life in the Soviet Union, that he said this has to be true. And that's his view on it. So I thought I had to have you on the show, and I had to interview you, and I thought it's important to add this to the public record so that people can think about it, because it's a testimony of a witness. The listeners can determine the credibility of the witness, that's their responsibility, but I think that the witness has come forward, and we need to listen to the witness. So I want to thank you for coming on the show.

FIFE: I want to thank you very much for having me. It's something I think it -, you know, you put yourself in my shoes: I *have* to come forward. I can't imagine waking up in some future time not having come forward, or at least tried to get it across and to see what maybe have happened to the country and everything, and I have been quiet, you know, silent, and the whole thing. I *have* to come forward. That's the way, I just have to.

NYQUIST: Yeah. It makes perfect sense. Well, thank you, Tom, Tom Fife, for being with us on the show today, and I've got another guest after the break with more on Barack Obama's background. [- commercial break -]

JEFF NYQUIST: I'm Jeff Nyquist. We're back. It's 'Outside the Box', and with me in this segment is a conservative blogger of "backyardconservative.com".

ANNE LEARY: ".[blogspot.com](#)".

NYQUIST: Ah. Okay. "backyardconservative", okay. It's Anne Leary, and say it again, it's "backyardconservative ?"

LEARY: ".[blogspot.com](#)".

NYQUIST: ".[blogspot.com](#)"! Okay.

LEARY: But you can just search it, and you'll find it. If you just search for "backyardconservative", it'll come up.

NYQUIST: And it's a very interesting blog, and it's -, Anne is very politically active at the local level, I take it, and -

LEARY: Not so much now, but I used to be quite a bit more. Now I just BLOG!

NYQUIST: Now you just blog. And, so, anyway, Anne, you've made some little bit of news lately among the conservative bloggers, and I was forwarded a piece, an interview done with you by AmericanThinker about an encounter that you had with the infamous Bill Ayers in the Ronald Reagan Airport in Washington some time ago. Could you maybe tell our listeners about that?

LEARY: Sure. Yeah, it was about a week ago, on Monday, and it was in the morning, and I was headed back from Chicago, I'd been there for a meeting, and then I look up while I was having a coffee at Starbucks before I went through the security, and I look up and I see this kind of scruffy-faced guy who, you know, he looks a little older, and he had a backpack, and I thought: Wow! This is not your normal, you know, 60+ year-old. And I looked at him, and he got closer, and then I saw yet that earring in his ear, and I thought: THAT'S BILL AYERS!!! So, I mean, I've been tracking him for, I mean, you know, his videos, and things that he said, because he's from Chicago and he's a good friend of Barack Obama even though the President denies it essentially. So I thought I'm gonna get a picture of him and find out where he is speaking. So I grabbed my BlackBerry, and I had to delete a picture because I had, you know, tourist pictures on there. So, I thought, okay, and I had one shot, and I followed him, and I thought, okay, I'm gonna go passed him, and I did. I turned around, planted myself, took the picture, and then I said, "What are you doing in D.C., Mr. Ayers?" And, just as I took the picture, he turned. So I was really lucky, I got his face, a pretty good shot so everybody could see it was Bill Ayers, you know, seeing the picture.

NYQUIST: Hmhmm.

LEARY: And he, you know, he gave me kind of an uneasy smile then when he realised that I was taking his picture. But after that he didn't smile at all, and I just asked him, and he told me he was speaking at an education conference, and so I asked him where, so I was kind of fishing a little bit, okay, I thought, okay, all this kind of play along a little bit, and then I think he was trying to decide if I was a fan or not, something. So he said, "That's what I do: education," and speaking at this Renaissance lecture. And then he said, "You shouldn't believe everything you hear about me! You know nothing about me!" Wow! That got me kind of mad because he is an unrepentant domestic terrorist. So I just said, "Well, I know plenty. I'm from Chicago, I'm a conservative blogger, and I'm going to post this!" Well, then I thought for sure he would just go off, you know –

NYQUIST: laughing

LEARY: and would be aggravated and go. – Well, he didn't! He stood there, and I could see kind of a wheel turning in his head, and then he looked to me straight in the eye – and, you know, *no snark, no sarcasm, no jokie stuff* –, he just looked at me and he said, "I wrote 'Dreams from My Father'!" And I said, "Ha???" I said, "So you admit it?" I mean, just like "What???"

NYQUIST: Now, just to explain to the listeners, 'Dreams from My Father' is Barack Obama's first autobiographical book!

LEARY: Right. Right. This is like his *myth-maker* book, that –, you know, people voted for him, some, just on the strength of the miracle, you know, poetry of this autobiography about, you know, his father, and his upbringing. And, so, this is like a core to Barack Obama's, his mystique as, you know, being this wonderful American-dream-kind-of person.

NYQUIST: Right.

LEARY: So, I was pretty incredulous. I mean, anyway, I said, "Oh, so you admit it because obviously there have been rumours about this for some time." But, anyway, then he said to me, "Michelle asked me to." Then, I just, I'm thinkin', Wow! That is really a stunner because he is bringing Michelle into this. He's up in the [?]! And, but then I thought, well, this is Bill Ayers, you know, he dances on the Flag, he dances around the truth, so, you know, I just kind of looked at him, and then he went on to say, "Oh, and if you can prove it, we can split the royalties." So, I said, "Oh, well, fine," I said, "Oh, stop pulling my leg!" So I thought *then* he would leave. He had had his little fun. But no! He came again! And this time he's looking really serious, it's like almost like he's pleading with me. And he says, "I really wrote it! The wording was similar!" And so then I said, "What! I believe you probably heavily edited it." And then he said for the third time, "I WROTE IT!" And then I got mad because I thought, well, he can prove if he wrote it or not, I mean this was written years ago, and he hasn't said it up until now, and he's gone along with this whole charade that, you know, Obama, you know, it's his 'work of his life' to write this book. So I said, "Why would I believe you, you're a liar!"

NYQUIST: [laughing] And he is a revolutionary communist to boot!

LEARY: Wow! Yes, falsie communist! I mean, he's a bomber, he is a domestic terrorist! Yeah, but you can't say, you know, come out and say a lot of this stuff even in the book said he claims he has written because there is no statute of limitations on murder, I mean there are still some cases that are open.

NYQUIST: Yeah.

LEARY: So after I'd called him a liar, then he finally realised that he couldn't say much more to me. So then he walked off, but he just kind of talked over his shoulder, "Well, if you can prove it, we'll split the royalties." So, you know, the way I figure it, I think he wanted to get this out there, but he wants plausible deniability, I mean, it's my word against his, but –

NYQUIST: Right.

LEARY: – you know: He said it. I reported it, just as he said it.

NYQUIST: He wanted to get it off his chest to somebody, but he wanted it to be deniable.

LEARY: Right. Right. But then it's kind of interesting because, you know, initially people are like questioning the –, you know, my veracity, that I, so that supposedly that I wouldn't make this whole thing up. Well, that's kind of ridiculous. Why would I do that? I mean, I'm not putting my credibility on the line for Bill Ayers! But, but then, you know, I think that National Review found something, or the National Journal, which is the Charlie Cook inside the Buckley [Bradley?] Publication, head to head, they've been at some kind of, one of these lectures, and they actually asked Bill Ayers if he wrote the book, a week or two ago. And he kind of jokily said, "Oh yeah, you can quote me. I wrote it. I met with the President three or four times, and then I wrote the book. Ha ha ha." And they kind of took it, "Ha ha ha." Well, that never went anywhere. Nobody ever heard that he said that. I mean, they put it on one of their little blogs, and it was kind of a –, you had to pay to read it, so it just never went anywhere. And, of course, everybody thought it's all "jokie-jokie". So, I think what he is doing, you know, obviously there was no buzz there, he must want this out. He must want this out. I think he saw this opportunity, and he took it. And even if, you know, not many people have heard of my blog, and, you know, of course, he didn't know me from Adam, I'm still sure that he thought, you know, the way the internet would go and given his notoriety, that it would make a buzz. And I think further, the reason, when I think he decided to tell me, because I was a conservative blogger, and he figured it would get around, and, you know, actually it didn't just go around the conservative blogosphere, I think this was in his calculation, the only way the mainstream media would pay attention to it is if it did go around the conservative blogosphere. Because, you know, he would have plausible deniability, and they would want to debunk it. But it would still get out there! It would still get buzz. And –

NYQUIST: So people would be left to wonder whether he wrote it or not.

LEARY: Right. And, you know, I mean it wasn't just a question of yanking the conservative blogger's chain. He is yanking President Obama's chain! You know.

NYQUIST: laughing

LEARY: He is like up in the [?], and he brings Michelle in there! And, you know, in fact, I got like 30,000 some hits on this thing. And it went up on to the top of the memorandum, which is the kind of the buzz, it's more liberal biased buzz, to the point where the New York Times Caucus Blog called me a "stalker". They felt like they had to attack me. You know, Bill Ayers is the victim here, of course! You know.

NYQUIST: [Laughing] Oh man! "Anne Leary: Stalker-Blogger!"

LEARY: Yeah, so, anyway, I think people pretty much believe that I went down the way I said because there's no way I'm a stalker, I only met the guy the first time. And it was clear when I posted that I was very skeptical. And I said I was. So, people can make up their own minds, but it's clear to me that he wants this out there. And in fact, after all, said and done, I actually do think he wrote it, but I don't think he'll admit it any time soon.

NYQUIST: Hmhmm. Interesting. Anne Leary of "backyardconservative.blogspot.com," right? Am I saying that right?

LEARY: That's right. Very good. Thank you!

NYQUIST: Alright. Well, thank you for being with us! – I will be back after these messages. [- commercial break -]

JEFF NYQUIST'S CLOSING WORDS: Well, ladies and gentlemen, you heard a couple of interesting stories from witnesses, and I would like to conclude by quoting Bill Ayers himself, Bill Ayers, the self-declared communist and communist revolutionary, I should say, and former member of the Weather Underground organisation, a terrorist organisation from the 1960s and '70s. This is what Bill Ayers said at an education conference in Venezuela recently. He said,

"This is my fourth visit to Venezuela, each time at the invitation of my comrade and friend Luis Bonilla, a brilliant educator and inspiring fighter for justice. Luis has taught me a great deal about the Bolivarian Revolution and about the profound educational reforms underway here in Venezuela under the leadership of President Chavez. We share the belief that education is the motor-force of revolution, and I've come to appreciate Luis as a major asset in both the Venezuelan *and the international struggle* – I look forward to seeing how he and all of you continue to overcome the failings of capitalist education as you seek to create *something truly new and deeply humane*."

Again, that's Bill Ayers, who in 1969 declared, "We are revolutionary communists!" Bill Ayers, the friend of our President, Barack Obama. Bill Ayers. Well, Bill Ayers.

Well, ladies and gentlemen, thank you for joining us. I hope you'll visit my website at "jrnnyquist.com", or you can go to "strategiccrisis.com", all one word "strategiccrisis.com". There you'll find videos and other information, and I hope you will join me, Jeff Nyquist, your host, on another 'Outside the Box' next week at the same time. Until then, God bless!

The Monstrous Ramifications of Tom Fife's Authentic Report: Some Thoughts by The Author of This Compilation

Though the report speaks for itself, some reflection may be appropriate to comprehend its full meaning. First, in its many details, it proves Anatoliy Golitsyn correct, who had tirelessly warned since the 1960s of a soon-to-come *false* communist liberalisation offensive, and who then kept informing the West about the deceptiveness of Gorbachev's and Yeltsin's alleged reforms and bloc dissolutions as they took place. The communist "apparatchika" who was revealing all this on that evening in early 1992 could no longer have been a communist apparatchika, had the 'break with the past' two months earlier been genuine. Also, the way she put it all in the context of the World Revolution shows that the old USSR's objective of complete communist world domination had *not* been abandoned at all! In fact, the so-called "New Russia", along with its other 'former' Soviet Republics, continues to be the same old USSR, just as 'formerly communist' Eastern Europe, despite having joined NATO and the EU along Sun Tzu's lines of 'peacefully' entering the enemy's camp, remains under the control of Moscow, that is now ever more reaching out its tentacles into Western Europe by using the 'European integration project' as the vehicle for merging the EU with an unchanged USSR, of course on Soviet-communist terms! Marxist-Leninist ideology has not disappeared whatsoever, just as the legendary proletarian primitiveness, cruelty, and cynicism have remained perfectly intact! This fact alone, a Western world disenabled to see the unchanged Red Threat coming closer and closer, is in itself already a gigantic disaster and marks a tragedy of millennial proportions. No wonder that this Moscow woman could speak, as they all do, with such mind-boggling self-assuredness so that Tom Fife felt it was all "foregone conclusion". Because it was!

But that the Soviets had indeed managed to groom and put into office an "irresistable" Manchurian Candidate as President of the United States, is even more puzzling *and frightening*, as it opens up the gruesome possibility of a Soviet "AMERIKA" subjected to an all-communist one-world-federation, with not a single place left on this planet to defect to, as Soviet defector Yuri Bezmenov had so drastically warned in 1984. From Tom Fife's report, as well as from everything else that has become known about Barack Obama's outright Marxist-communist pedigree, not to mention his very visible radicalism both in his 2008 election campaign and as President, it is absolutely clear that this *Bolshevik*, should he be re-elected and given the opportunity, will not hesitate, whenever suitable to the communists, to deliver the United States, for which he holds only the greatest contempt, to merciless communist tyranny and lights out forever under the Soviet-/Red-Chinese military boot. As one reviews the "seismic shift" that took place back in 2008, one could even say the U.S. are already in a *post-revolutionary* state of affairs! The final crushing of the country (and of the whole world) would then be, like with post-WW-II Czechoslovakia, merely a matter of time, i.e. a question not of "if", but "when" ...

XX. THE EUROPEAN UNION: ACCORDING TO MIKHAIL GORBACHEV, “THE NEW EUROPEAN SOVIET” (a statement made by Gorbachev on March 23, 2000 in London), AS WELL AS MEANWHILE THE NO. 1 LOCOMOTIVE FOR ‘GLOBAL GOVERNANCE’



Plenary Hall of the European Parliament at Strasbourg, France: Sterile and freezing cold like the modern-day Soviet-style political hybrid it represents.

“We set ourselves the ultimate aim of destroying the state.” (*V. I. Lenin: State and Revolution; 1917; International Publishers, New York 1961 Ed., page 68; source: Christopher Story: The European Union Collective; page 10*)

“The Soviet United States of Europe is the only correct slogan pointing the way out from European disunity.” (*Leon Trotsky, in ‘The Bulletin of the Opposition’, Nr. 17-18, November-December 1930; page 53; source: Christopher Story: The European Union Collective; page XXXII*)

“Divide the world into regional groups as a transitional stage of world government. Populations will more readily abandon their national loyalties to a vague regional loyalty than they will for a world authority. **Later, the regions can be brought together all the way into a single world dictatorship.**” (*Yossif Stalin: ‘Marxism and the National Question’; 1942; source: Christopher Story: The European Union Collective; page 23*)

“The challenge for us Europeans is to draw the Soviet Union into our *common* endeavour, to dispel any temptations to isolate it... From the viewpoint of security policy, our reference system reaches **from the shores of the Pacific to Vladivostok.**” (*Former Secretary General of NATO, Manfred Wörner, Germany, addressing the Conference on the Future of European Security organised by the Czechoslovak Ministry of Foreign Affairs and held on April 25/26, 1991 in Prague. Source: Christopher Story: The European Union Collective, page 12. – Unless this*

is a citation mistake by Christopher Story, ‘from the Pacific to Vladivostok’, which itself is situated on the Pacific, can only mean: the whole Northern hemisphere! Otherwise it would be ‘From the Atlantic to Vladivostok’, enclosing the present-day EU and the perfectly intact USSR, that is already overlapping with EU territory through the 3 Baltic Soviet Republics; source: Christopher Story: The European Union Collective; page 12)

“I think that the idea of a Common European Home, the building of a united Europe, and I would like to underline today, of Great Europe, the building of Great Europe, great, united Europe, from the Atlantic to the Urals, **from the Atlantic to Vladivostok, including all our territory, most probably a European-American space**, a united humanitarian space: this project is inevitable. I am sure that we will come to building a united military space, as well. To say more precisely: we will build a united Europe, whose security will be based on the principles of collective security. **Precisely, collective security.**” (*Eduard Shevardnadze, Soviet foreign secretary of the day and from 1995 to 2003 President of Georgia, in which function he gained the horrible reputation of being “Stalin II”, on November 19, 1991, interviewed on a Moscow television programme along with NATO Secretary General of the day, Lord Robertson; source: Christopher Story: The European Union Collective; page XXXII*)

“Our vision of the European space from the Atlantic to the Urals is not that of a closed system. Since it includes the **Soviet Union**, which reaches to the shores of the Pacific, **it goes beyond nominal geographical boundaries.**” (*Mikhail Gorbachev in his prepared Nobel Peace Prize speech in Oslo in June 1992, when the Soviet Union had already been ‘abandoned’ by him half a year earlier!!! Source: Christopher Story: The European Union Collective; page XXXIII*)

“I look forward to the day when Russia is **a fully-fledged member of the European Community.**” (*Believe it or not: British Prime Minister of the day, John Major!!! So uttered on New Year’s Day 1992 in the Prime Minister’s New Year’s Day broadcast on BBC Radio 4; source: Christopher Story: The European Union Collective; page 13*)

“If the UN is not **rapidly** transformed into an effective world political union and administration, I recommend that **the more audacious, better structured and better financed European Union** be taken as the basis for a **World Union**. How to do it? First, by including as fast as possible the Nordic countries and the new Eastern European countries. Next, since Russia reaches into the North of Asia, the old dream of Eurasia can be implemented. The plan of Robert Schuman who dreamt of integrating the African countries into Eurafrica can also be implemented: these countries were mostly former European colonies and have maintained close links with neighboring Europe. In the meantime, the US can organize the Americas from Alaska to the Tierra del Fuego **and the two unions can be integrated into a World Union.**” (*Robert Muller (1923–2010), longtime assistant Secretary General of the communistic United Nations, disciple of infamous Theosophist Alice Bailey and advocate of a ‘world core curriculum’ and a New-Age-inspired unified ‘world spirituality’; source: Robert Muller: The first 4,000 Ideas & Dreams for a Better World: Idea no. 126, November 13, 1994: www.robertmuller.org/ideas*)

“Capitalism should be more regulated.” [...] The objective is **“a common economic space that would unite Russia and Europe.”** [...] **“What Europe is telling Russia is that we want links with Russia, that we want to build a**

shared future with Russia, we want to be Russia's partner.” (Nikolas Sarkozy in his September 23, 2008 speech to the UN General Assembly; source: <http://www.euobserver.com/19/26796>)

The current threats and challenges to the world economy should be seen as “**the difficult birth pangs of a new global order** [...] Our task now is nothing less than making **the transition to a new internationalism** with the benefits of an expanding global economy, not muddling through as pessimists, but making the necessary adjustments to a better future and setting new rules for **this new global order.**” (British socialist and Prime Minister of the day, Gordon Brown, in a statement made on January 26, 2009; video source: http://www.liveleak.com/view?i=bc7_1232993771)

“We must switch to a new global currency system, which will be based on a **single global monetary unit.**” (Kazakh President, Nursultan Nazarbayev, demanding on March 10, 2009 very clearly a global cashless society!!! Source: www.cacianalyst.org/?q=node/5073)

“In the face of the unrelenting growth of global interdependence, there is a strongly felt need, even in the midst of a global recession, **for a reform of the United Nations Organization, and likewise of economic institutions and international finance**, so that the **concept** of the family of nations **can acquire real teeth.** One also senses the urgent need to find **innovative ways of implementing the principle of the responsibility to protect and of giving poorer nations an effective voice in shared decision-making. This seems necessary in order to arrive at a political, juridical and economic order which can increase and give direction to international cooperation for the development of all peoples in solidarity.** To manage the global economy; to revive economies hit by the crisis; to avoid any deterioration of the present crisis and the greater imbalances that would result; **to bring about integral and timely disarmament, food security and peace; to guarantee the protection of the environment and to regulate migration: for all this, there is urgent need of a true world political authority,** as my predecessor Blessed John XXIII indicated some years ago. Such an authority **would need to be regulated by law**, to observe consistently the principles of subsidiarity and solidarity, to seek to establish the common good, and **to make a commitment to securing authentic integral human development inspired by the values of charity in truth.** **Furthermore, such an authority would need to be universally recognized and to be vested with the effective power to ensure security for all, regard for justice, and respect for rights.** Obviously it would have to have the authority to ensure compliance with its decisions from all parties, and also with the coordinated measures adopted in various international forums. Without this, despite the great progress accomplished in various sectors, international law would risk being conditioned by the balance of power among the strongest nations. The integral development of peoples and international cooperation require the establishment of a greater degree of international ordering, marked by subsidiarity, for the management of globalization. They also require the construction of a social order that at last conforms to the moral order, to the interconnection between moral and social spheres, and to the link between politics and the economic and civil spheres, as envisaged by the Charter of the United Nations.” (Post-Conciliar “Pope” Joseph Ratzinger in his New World Order Encyclical “Caritas in Veritate” of June 29, 2009, Par. 67; source: <http://www.vatican.va>)

[...] For over six decades the United Nationhas helped to shape the international response to global dangers. **The challenge is to continue** to show this clear and convening leadership while not losing sight of your ongoing work to secure the security, prosperity and dignity of **our fellow human beings**. When people in fifty-three years from now look back on us, they will doubtless view many of our practices as old-fashioned. But it is my hope that, when judged by future generations, **our sincerity, our willingness to take a lead, and our determination to do the right thing, will stand the test of time**. In my lifetime, the United Nationhas moved from being a high-minded aspiration to being **a real force for common good**. That of itself has been a signal achievement. **But we are not gathered here to reminisce. In tomorrow's world, we must all work together as hard as ever if we are truly to be United Nations.**" (*Queen Elizabeth II in her 6-minute address to the UN General Assembly on July 6, 2010; source: audio: Youtube channel "FWWS1", video entitled "06.07.2010 UK Queen Elisabeth in UN...Speech..CNN.wmv"; official print version: <http://www.royal.gov.uk/LatestNewsandDiary/Speechesandarticles/2010/AddressstotheUnitedNationsGeneralAssembly6July2010.aspx>*)

These quite extraordinary quotes show beyond any doubt what indeed now is the function of the European Union, that by its self-perpetuating imperatives of 'integration', 'harmonisation', and 'unification' proves to be a revolutionary endeavour in the true sense of the word: Its function obviously is the same as that of the United Nations, with which body it has increasingly become interchangeable, namely of gradually moulding all nations and peoples into one and establishing an unprecedented state of affairs in which, right from the Marxist-Leninist textbook, the individual nation state will be dead, abolished, and declared a thing of the past.

Key to the understanding of the EU's role is certainly its ongoing gradual merger with 'formerly' communist Eastern Europe, and ultimately with the whole of the supposedly dissolved Soviet Union, as the above-listed quotes clearly indicate. Given however the virtually unchanged communist reality in the Eastern European countries, in the so-called 'New Russia', and in all other 'former' Soviet republics (the late British political analyst Christopher Story used to call it 'covert communism' as opposed to pre-1989/91 'overt communism'), this development towards a unified all-Eurasian bloc couldn't be more lethal for Western Europe (and subsequently the whole Western world) simply because this bloc will turn out to be full-fledged communist and inexorably subjected to the merciless iron fist of a Soviet hell on earth.

Yet, the fact that Western Europe has so whole-heartedly embraced this suicidal policy of 'convergence' cannot solely be explained by naïveté or one-dimensional German hubris. Both national structures and even more so EU institutions appear to be not only dominated by Masons (and/or, as for the EU, by Pan-Germans) resp. controlled by globalists of the Club-of-Rome variety, but indeed massively infiltrated by communists, who work in the interest of the World Revolution and thus for the utter destruction of the individual European nation state and of 'bourgeois' Western Europe as a whole. That is why the left's formerly confrontational stance against the 'capitalist' EEC during the 1960s and maybe early '70s all of a sudden gave way, towards the 1980s, to a sense of 'sympathy': the 'European project', initially a Franco-German geopolitical endeavour, as well as the European wing of NATO had been effectively hi-jacked

by Soviet-controlled communism. It's no more a Western European 'peace project' and not even a well-concealed revived Pan-German undertaking to create a German-dominated space from the Atlantic to the Urals and from the Norwegian Sea to the Mediterranean, rather it has become the vehicle for Moscow to 'peacefully' conquer the Western European nations held captive by this superimposed and unaccountable structure that more and more appears and behaves like an all-European Politbureau.

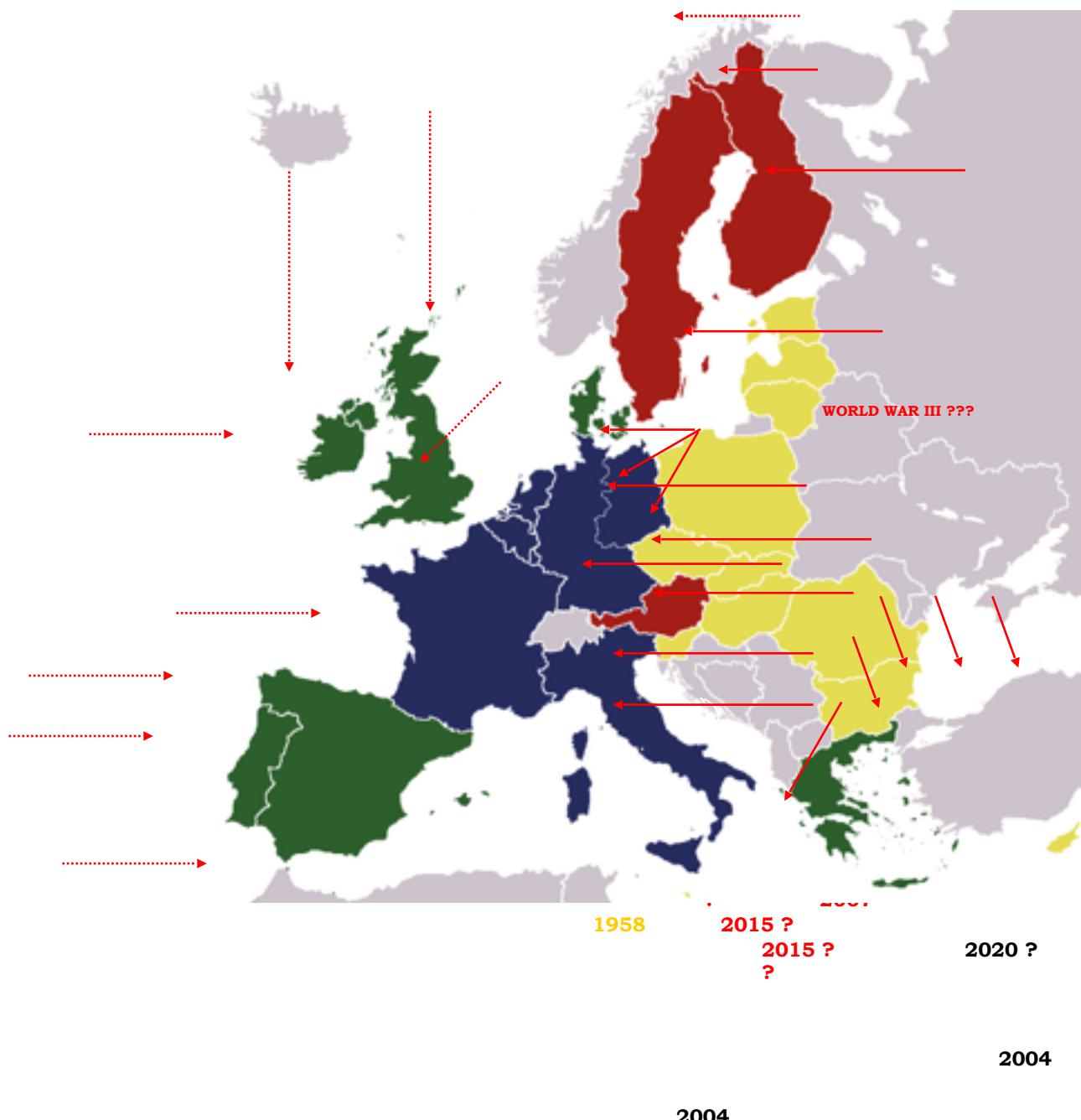
As one becomes aware of this pan-communist dimension of the much-advertised 'European Integration Process' (for which the reading of the late Christopher Story's unique reference work 'The European Union Collective: Enemy of Its Member States' may serve as an eye-opener), one also begins to understand why the chief organs of this continental dictatorship in the making are densely populated by more or less notorious communists (not to mention the national level of European politics where one can see quite a number of highly dubious figures as well).

The first decisive breakthrough towards an all-communist Europe certainly was the supposed 'collapse of communism' in Eastern Europe in 1989, which the West most readily and in complete naïveté accepted as genuine. In totally misplaced euphoria, a new chapter of cross-border relations was proclaimed straight away, without so much of giving it a second thought. Western banks, firms, and concerns already saw in front of them great new vistas; the cultural sphere and the journalistic trade, mostly left-leaning anyway, too were out of themselves; and peace and friendship of the nations till the end of time seemed suddenly to have become a truly realistic prospect.

Within less than a year, the first of the satellites, the German Democratic Republic a.k.a. communist East Germany, entered the enemy's camp via the reunification of the two German states. Blinded by its desire to overcome 40 years of German division, West Germany had fallen for the deception and took into its own sphere hundreds of thousands, millions even, of staunch communists, many of them spies, agents of influence, or moles, and from then on not only had to pay vast sums so to economically restore and modernise the run-down East, but moreover to henceforth live with the communist enemy in its midst. Sure enough, since the reunification Germany has drifted at breakneck-speed ever further towards the left, with a wild Red-Green experiment starting in 1998, that included a former anarchist street fighter of the 1970s who now was the Green Party leader, Vice Chancellor, and Foreign Minister of Germany (which would almost equate to, say, Bill Ayers as U.S. Secretary of State; also, the head of the European Greens, Daniel Cohn-Bendit, was still known back in May 1968 as "Daniel le Rouge", i.e. Red Daniel, he was the leader in the infamous communist student riots in Paris), as well as a 'Social-Democratic' Chancellor who made no secret of being a Marxist. After seven years of aggressive changes in the societal climate of Germany, that in retrospect seems almost as a transition phase towards outright communism, a supposedly conservative government took over, led by the first woman chancellor of Germany, Angela Merkel, who is from the communist East. Yet, those who were hoping for a 'return' again to more moderate times were already disappointed on election night: outgoing Chancellor Schröder charmed the incoming woman chancellor with a pittoresque flower bouquet and very friendly words, which was followed on the part of Merkel, instead of at least some criticism of 7 years of Red-Green, by the most wonderful praises of Schröder's 'accomplishments'. It was the smoothest change of leadership one can ever think of. How come?

Because Merkel once ‘was’ an utterly committed East German communist, an Agit-Prop secretary in East Germany’s communist youth organisation ‘Freie Deutsche Jugend,’ and finally the speaker of East Germany’s last Prime Minister, Lothar de Maizière. In other words, a West German socialist Marxist was followed by an East German plain Marxist! Again, one can see the diabolical genius and boldness of communism: Merkel had been placed in the conservative Christian Democratic Union under then Chancellor Helmut Kohl and was much promoted by him, which gave her the reputation of being “Kohls Mädchen”, i.e. Kohl’s maiden. She was soon catapulted to the party’s vice-chairmanship and made Federal Minister for the Environment. However, once arrived at the post of party chairman herself, she showed little gratitude towards her former mentor, but instead turned away from him, almost dropping him like a hot potato, during the much-publicised ‘CDU donation affair’ of 1999, that may well have been a communist-inspired smear campaign so to character-assassinate Helmut Kohl once and for all. In any case, all he got back for his well-known Rhineland joviality was coldly calculating Leninist falseness and betrayal. That’s what communists do with their hated and despised ‘bourgeois’ counterparts as soon as they’ve gained enough strength (Golitsyn terms it cuckoo-egg policy, where the foreign chick finally dominates the nest). Also, Merkel has visibly changed her behaviour since she became Chancellor in 2005 from seeming chummy populism to acting harsh, cold, and arrogant. This is yet another alarm signal as it shows that the communists are about to drop the friendly mask they put on some 20 years ago and again openly show their ever-same old true nature: the second Bolshevik revolution might well be just around the corner.

The big watershed in this development was May 1st of 2004; and that date, being socialism’s Labour Day, must have been chosen very carefully so to underline, at least for the ‘interested’, what really took place. On that day (rather than on a January 1st), the formerly Western European EU ‘club’ was massively extended deep into the ‘formerly’ communist sphere, taking in as new members, apart from Malta and Cyprus, 8 ‘formerly’ socialist/communist states, among them one from (officially bloc-free) former Yugoslavia (Slovenia), four ‘former’ satellite states (Poland; the two parts of former Czechoslovakia, Czechia and Slovakia; as well as Hungary), and even three ‘former’ Soviet republics (the three Baltic states, Estonia, Latvia, and Lithuania). The ratio today (after the joining also of Romania and Bulgaria in 2007) is 14 classically Western European countries (among which had already been since 1990 the communist Trojan horse of ‘former’ communist East Germany) facing 3 more or less finlandised, socialist-leaning countries (Finland, Sweden, and Austria, which joined in 1995), and now 10 full-fledged communist states. There remain 6 more socialist states on the Balkans yet to join (Croatia, Serbia, since 2006 independent Montenegro, Bosnia-Herzegovina, Former Yugoslav Macedonia, and Albania); other than that the scene is set for the merger with the USSR proper by taking in, first, Ukraine and Moldova, and then merging with Belarus and the Russian Federation. In parallel, along with the entry of Turkey some future day, Georgia, Armenia and Azerbaijan would follow. However, should the Pan-Germans and the unchanged Soviets *not* find common ground, for which there are now ever stronger indications (after all, their strategies are totally incompatible in the long run), we can expect the USSR’s “Plan B” to be launched: a surprise military attack, for which they have already prepared over many years, i.e. overall World War III.



Steps of EEC/EC/EU enlargements: 1. dark blue: Founding members of 1957/58 (Treaties of Rome): Germany, France, Italy, Belgium, Netherlands, Luxembourg. – 2. green: 1973: United Kingdom, Ireland, Denmark (the Norwegians voted *against* entry in a referendum); 1981: Greece; 1985: Greenland, which is part of Denmark, *left* the then EEC; 1986: Portugal, Spain; 1990: the 'former' GDR via German reunification. – 3. red: 1995: Finland, Sweden, Austria (a second Norwegian referendum in 1994 decided once more *against* joining the EU). – 4. yellow: 2004: Malta, Cyprus, Slovenia, Poland, Czechia, Slovakia, Hungary, 'former' Estonian, Latvian, and Lithuanian SSRs; 2007: Romania, Bulgaria. – Norway, Iceland, and Liechtenstein are indirectly associated with the EU, however, via the 'European Economic Area', into which also Switzerland, despite fierce resistance by its population, is being manipulated step by step. As for longterm new candidates to join, *that* might just as well never happen as the Soviet Union proper might decide not to allow parts of its mainland (Ukraine, Belarus, Moldova, and Russia itself) to enter the sphere of German influence. Rather it seems as if the stage is now perfectly set for military action, i.e. WW III.

In case the 'peaceful' way of convergence on communist terms should nevertheless come about without a war, as soon as it will have materialised,

everybody will realise that this so-called EU eastward enlargement was really a Soviet westward enlargement all the way to the shores of the Atlantic Ocean (apart from the foreseeable even official restoration of the old Soviet Union in the not-too-distant future, which is already going on in slow-motion, as has been shown throughout this compilation).

As a consequence, the United States (and probably Canada) will then be deprived of all their former allies, whether in Europe, Asia, Oceania, the Middle East, Africa, or Latin America, and by this miserable outcome of complete isolation will have to accept, *nolens volens*, final defeat and, whether by invasion or consent, joining as the last stumbling block a world federation of communist states, to which, when it will be installed, only little opposition can be expected (despite the United States' tradition of being the 'Land of the Free') simply because the older generation, everywhere in the world, who still had a solid understanding of history and of the nature of communism will already have passed away ...

THE EVER SAME PUZZLING PARADOX: IS COMMUNISM THE CHIEF EVIL, OR IS IT MONOPOLY CAPITALISM? – A RESUMÉ

After so much said and quoted about the diabolical evil of world communism, there remains of course a reality seemingly separate from or even opposed to the Marxist-Leninist programme: namely, the large international banks, corporations, and tax-exempt foundations, with their insatiable desire for ever stronger monopolisation and for shaping the world anew into a rigorously regulated money-machine entirely controlled by them, as is happening right now and in parallel to the communists' preparations for global takeover.

This other reality, that nowadays receives almost more attention than supposedly collapsed communism, could well be not so much communism's enemy or rival, but rather, right from the beginning, its very creator and protector. Authors such as Garry Allen, Anthony Sutton, G. Edward Griffin, or John Coleman have dedicated the greater part of their lives to finding out about the secret connections between big money and the creation of totalitarian systems around the world. According to their findings, both German National Socialism and Russian Bolshevism, to give two major examples, had been financed from scratch by these powerful circles, who today are said to be centred around the Council on Foreign Relations in the United States and the Royal Institute of International Affairs in Britain; John Coleman even speaks of a secretive 'Committee of 300' also calling itself 'the Olympians', who decide indeed like gods over the destiny of nations and continents. It was these 'elites' who commissioned in the 1770s German philosophy professor Adam Weishaupt with the formation of the ultra-radical secret society known as the Illuminati Brotherhood, that was then certainly the driving force behind the French Revolution; who commissioned in 1848 Marx and Engels with laying down the Weishaupt/Babeuf-inspired Communist Manifesto; who thus created the whole communist movement and later the utterly Luciferian stream of 'Theosophy', the direct successor of which is the New Age movement; who manufactured both World Wars and brought into being, first, the League of Nations, and after WW II the United Nations as the structure for a future one-world government (to be reached via the intermediary step of having for a while a handful of 'regional blocs', the most advanced of which clearly is the European Union, that in due time will be merged with the unchanged communist USSR). It is these circles who, beside Marxism, forced Darwinism, Freudianism, and all those other -isms upon mankind so to destroy faith and tradition. And it is these circles who infiltrated and took over the Roman Catholic Church 50 years ago and turned it into a vehicle for establishing a syncretistic, hybrid one-world religion as the 'spiritual fundament' of their intended New World Order.

If the 'crème de la crème' of European and American high finance is indeed the promoter of totalitarian collectivism, then there is no difference between their

monopoly capitalism and Soviet-style state capitalism. Rather, the rulers of communist states (meanwhile of *all* states) appear then as agents of an even larger scheme, and the true centres of gravity for the coming one-world tyranny won't be Moscow or Beijing, but, as ever during the passed centuries, London and New York.

Yet, is it all just about greed and lust for power? Or is there something more sinistre to it, more beastly, and devilish? As a matter of public record, these circles aren't just well-organised movers and shakers, they are also, in one way or the other: Freemasons. Freemasons are 'builders', 'Humanists'. They seek to replace God's Will by the stubborn will of man and to establish a false 'paradise on earth' rather than seeking God's Paradise in Heaven. Their denial of and rebellion against the God-given order is non-different from Satan's age-old denial and rebellion. All their '(r)evolutionary', 'progressivist' philosophy is simply the expression of Satan's envy and jealousy, as it implies that this world has yet to be perfected, and so by man, as in their twisted mindset God either does not exist or needs to be kicked out of Heaven. They may be well-meaning do-gooders in their lower echelons, in any case materialists, but they certainly are conscious servants of the prince of the world at the top of their pyramidal hierarchy, convinced that his promise "You shall be as Gods" will come true.

The sects, cults, and covens that paved the way are well-known. Yet, how they indeed managed to seduce and bring down formerly exquisitely pious Medieval Europe to a 'Renaissance' of pride and Paganism, may well always remain a mystery.

So here we stand, confronted with a firmly 'institutionalised' evil that wants to make us believe that this is just the way things are: Let's make things better, let's create a better world for all, let's become one human family and finally establish everlasting peace! All inequality, injustice, and conflict will be overcome; all starvation brought to an end; all misery and disease cured; all superstition, intolerance, and fanaticism rooted out once and for all! The UN says it, the Pope says it, the Queen of England says it, all the state 'leaders' (i.e. state Führers) and big tycoons say it, the environmentalists say it, the New Agers say it. There's virtually nobody who doesn't say it! It's communism! It's precisely Aldous Huxley's Brave New World! And the ever same old well-trained assassins in Moscow and Beijing are in fact most comfortably awaiting their moment in history when they will have their way to ultimately crush what is left in the once free world of traditional sentiment and original faith. It's obvious that the ever-deepening economic crisis is by design, just as anarchy, revolution and world war are just around the corner; all intended and planned as yet another horrifying 'shock treatment' as well as depopulation exercise so to 'accomplish the transition', as they often say, over into this new 'paradigm', that will be all-inclusive, all-embracing, and 'all-powerful'. The greatest 'sins' in this upcoming Utopia will of course be stubborn individualism, thoughtfulness and reflection, refusal of co-operation, 'skepticism' instead of joining the all-pervading 'happiness' of everybody else, insisting on distinction, and first of all holding on to the Shining Truth of revealed Scripture and to the Grace and Mercy of the One True God. This New World will not accept a trace of all that once gave humankind value and dignity and a firm basis and orientation for leading lives that were pleasing to God. And it will not leave the individual the tiniest bit of self-determination, self-reliance, or even privacy. It will claim the right to own and manage it all; which is why everybody will be microchipped and surveyed 24/7. Natural birth will be declared obsolete and give way to industrial cloning

of ‘perfect men’; disability, weakness, or old age will be viewed – and are already viewed today – as disturbing stains on the unblemished body of this new society, and will not be allowed. Like in ‘Brave New World’, people who have outlived their economic and societal usefulness will be forced into some kind of farewell party and killed. The family unit will of course be abolished and exclusive emotional ties or even marriage replaced by a mandatory regime of ‘politically correct’ promiscuity! In short: it’ll be a hell on earth, a Satanic kingdom properly so called!

Scripture tells us that all this will indeed manifest, but also gives us the hope and comfort that this final “Thousand Year Reich”, more murderous and more merciless than all its predecessors, will be short-lived. Satan and his Antichrist emissary, even in their hour of greatest triumph, will not be granted victory. This is where we should then focus our attention on: the genuine spiritual renewal of the world that will then be ordained by God after all those infinite sufferings that will have been but His Divine Wrath and Chastisement for a mankind fallen into complete apostasy. The prophets of darkness, having deluded mankind in the guise of apostles of ‘light’, will have lost their power, and goodness and piety will again rule the world. As St. John foresaw it in the Book of Revelation:

(Rev. 21:1-4, KJV) “And I saw a new heaven and a new earth: for the first heaven and the first earth were passed away; and there was no more sea. And I John saw the holy city, new Jerusalem, coming down from God out of heaven, prepared as a bride adorned for her husband. And I heard a great voice out of heaven saying, Behold, the tabernacle of God [is] with men, and he will dwell with them, and they shall be his people, and God himself shall be with them, [and be] their God. **And God shall wipe away all tears from their eyes; and there shall be no more death, neither sorrow, nor crying, neither shall there be any more pain: for the former things are passed away.**”

ΑΩ

REFERENCE LITERATURE (given in chronological order; key titles marked red)
Order via www.amazon.com (*) or from www.worldreports.org (**)

Nesta Helen Webster: World Revolution Or the Plot Against Civilization [orig. 1921]; Kessinger Publications, 2003 *

Sergey Petrovich Melgounov: The Red Terror in Russia [orig. 1924]; Edward Harle Ltd., London, New York 2008 */**

Friedrich August von Hayek: The Road to Serfdom [orig. 1944]; University of Chicago Press, 2007 *

René Guénon: The Reign of Quantity and the Signs of the Times [orig. 1945]; Sophia Perennis, Hillsdale NY 2001 *

Louis F. Budenz: The Techniques of Communism; Henry Regnery Co., Chicago 1954 *

Louis F. Budenz: The Bolshevik Invasion of the West: Account of the Great Political War for a Soviet America; Bookmailer, 1966 *

Gary Allen: Communist Revolution in the Streets; Western Islands, 1967 *

Jan Šejna: We Will Bury You: The Soviet Plan For the Subversion of the West by the Highest-Ranking Communist Ever to Defect; Sidgwick & Jackson, 1982 *

Anatoliy Golitsyn: New Lies for Old: The Communist Strategy of Deception and Disinformation [completed in 1980]; Dodd, Mead & Co., New York 1984 *

Richard Wurmbrand: Marx and Satan: Was Karl Marx a Satanist? – Living Sacrifice Book Co., 1986 *

Joseph D. Douglass: Red Cocaine: The Drugging of America and the West [orig. 1990]; Edward Harle Ltd., London, New York 1999 */**

Friedrich August von Hayek: The Fatal Conceit: The Errors of Socialism [orig. 1988]; University of Chicago Press, 1991 *

Anatoliy Golitsyn: The Perestroika Deception: The World's Slide Towards the Second October Revolution; Edward Harle Ltd., London, New York 1995 */**

Christopher Story: The European Union Collective: Enemy of Its Member States – A Study in Russian and German Strategy to Complete Lenin's World Revolution; Edward Harle Ltd., London, New York 2002 */**

Vladimir Bukovsky, Pavel Stroilov: EUSSR: The Soviet Roots of European Integration; Sovereignty Publications, Worcester Park, Surrey, U.K. 2004 *

Lee Penn: False Dawn: The United Religions Initiative, Globalism, and the Quest for a One-World-Religion; Sophia Perennis, 2005

For a full-length bibliography on this and related topics, please go to:
www.thecontemplativeobserver.wordpress.com/bibliography

INTERVIEWS/TALKS

Christopher Story: The Perestroika Deception; interview; host: William McIlhany; recorded in 1995; 56 minutes; presented in two parts on the Youtube channel “GoodFightUploads” as “[1 of 4] The Perestroika Deception – [1995]” and “[2 of 4] The Perestroika Deception – [1995]”

Christopher Story: The Perestroika Deception; follow-up interview; host: William McIlhany; recorded in 2003; 56 minutes; presented in one piece on the Youtube channel “laiiv” as “Christopher Story – ThePerestroika Deception” as well as in two parts on the Youtube channel “GoodFight Uploads” as “[3 of 4] The Perestroika Deception – [2003]” and “[4 of 4] The Perestroika Deception – [2003]”

Yuri Bezmenov: Deception Was My Job – On Soviet Disinformation and Overall Soviet Strategy towards winning their World Revolution; interview; host: G. Edward Griffin; recorded in 1984; 82 minutes; presented on this author’s Youtube channel “Contemplatix” (The Contemplative Observer) as “Yuri Bezmenov: Unlike Myself, You’ll Have Nowhere to Defect To! (rec. 1984)”

Yuri Bezmenov: The Soviet Strategy of Subversion and Demoralisation; public lecture given at Los Angeles in 1983; 63 minutes; presented on the Youtube channel “napouser” as “Tomas Schuman (Yuri Bezmenov) L.A. 1983”

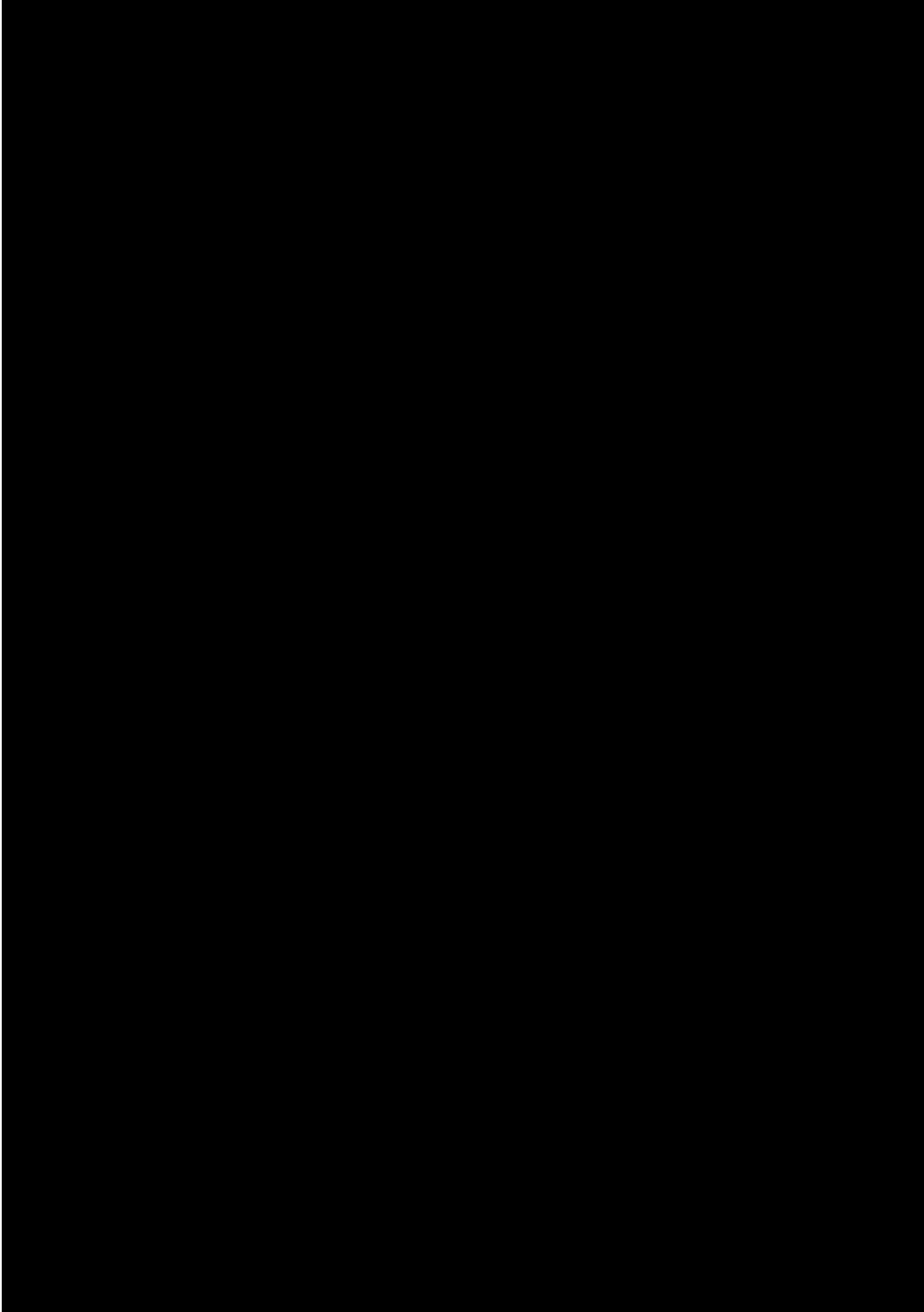
Richard Wurmbrand: The Reverend talks of his time in solitary confinement in communist Romania; recorded in the late 1960s; 9 minutes; presented on the Youtube Channel “VoiceOfTheMartyrsUSA” as “Solitary Confinement”.

ABOUT THE AUTHOR

Gottfrid Johansson has been a seeker for truth for all of his life. So much so that his deep frustration at university led him to change fields several times and to finally quit after realising that universities as the bastions of exquisite knowledge, sadly, are a thing of the past. However, after a lengthy journey in 1987/88 to India, Australia, and Papua New Guinea, he for some reason again tried to force himself into the educational system and embarked on a 3-year-course for primary school teaching, the foreseeable outcome of which was that he was silently manoeuvred out just half a year before the final exams: the modern-day world of socialistic teaching had obviously spotted him as the most dangerous there can ever be in the collectivist universe: a thinker, a skeptic, romanticist, and sincere admirer and friend of children's curiosity and willingness to learn.

His spiritual journey, in retrospect, appears almost as a roller coaster along which he encountered scientific Classical Astrology, the Japanese school of Rinzai Zen, the Indian tradition of Bhakti mysticism, as well as a branch of Sufism that at this place better remain unnamed. In recent years, however, the author has been ever more attracted to good old traditional Catholicism (no irony intended), the very faith he had as an infant been baptised into. This latter journey of, say, rediscovering what had been with him and around him since the beginning, still continues.

Gottfrid Johansson is now in his late fourties and lives in his country of origin.



Communist construction, and to worthily continue Lenin's victorious revolutionary cause, the cause of the October Revolution!" – And also his 1987 bestseller book, "Perestroika: New Thinking for Our Country and the World" (the German edition, however, being entitled: "Perestroika: The Second Russian Revolution – New Thinking for Europe and the World"), that was translated into dozens of languages and sold in some 5 million copies worldwide, made no secret at all of the Soviet Union's true intentions: "Those who hope that we shall move away from the socialist path will be greatly disappointed."

Obviously, something has gone severely wrong. The "New Russia" is an illusion, it is still the same Soviet Union, but now a hundred times stronger than before 1985, and along with its communist allies around the world eager and ready to bring about its long-desired objective of irreversible and full-fledged communist world domination.